



Virtual World: Unparalleled under the Sky

Novel Status: Completed

Published Date: 2010.12.29

Author: Shi Luo Ye

Total Chapters: 1599

Genre: Fantasy, Action, VRMMORPG, Male Lead

Description:

Virtual World: Unparalleled under the Sky (网游之天下无双) is a Chinese web novel written by Shi Luo Ye (失落叶), author of Zhan Long and other popular novels. It has over 330 million views on 17k.com, even more than Zhan Long (160 million) and The Legendary Thief (24 million). It has a total of 8 web volumes and 1599 chapters.

Edit: This novel is also a part of the Virtual World Trilogy by Shi Luo Yue. The first part is Virtual World: The Legendary Thief, second Virtual World: Beyond the World, and third Virtual World: Unparalleled Under the Sky. The three series are not prequels/sequels, they are only weakly related to each other. Some minor characters and names may appear repeatedly in

the story, for example, <Soul Trial> is the VRMMORPG name in Virtual World: Beyond the World, and it was briefly mentioned in Virtual World: Unparalleled Under the Sky first chapter. Beyond that, all novels have different MCs and storyline.

Synopsis:

Lu Chen was one of the ranked players on "CGL – Hall of Fame" for the VRMMORPG <Soul Trial>, and his in-game name "Fallen Dust" was resounded throughout China. When <Heavens End>, a new VRMMORPG released by the same game producer as <Soul Trial>, was released, he, along with thousands of other players, decided to have a brand new start on the highly anticipated game. When creating his new character in <Heaven's End>, he accidentally unlocked the hidden profession: Undead Swordsman. Thinking it would be a great profession, Lu Chen accepted it without hesitation. To his horror, his character turned out to be a small skeleton with 0 points for most of his starting stats!

Synopsis by: Shiroyukineko

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/virtual-world-unparalleled-under-the-sky/>

Light Novel Raws

<http://www.17k.com/list/88532.html>

Chinese Baidu Wiki Link

<http://baike.baidu.com/view/4997218.htm>

Translator:

<http://shiroyukitranslations.com/virtual-world-unparalleled-in-the-world/>



Table of chapters :

VW:UUTS Chapter 61 – Fruit of Pregnancy May 17, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 60 – Demon Trapping Stone April 24, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 59 – Wind Slaying April 10, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 58 – Marquis Zi Yi April 4, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 57 – Genius Protoss March 28, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 56 – Little Rabbit March 7, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 55 – Small Capital, Huge Profit March 7, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 54 – Mysterious Wasp's sharp attack February 28, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 53 – Let's just die together! February 22, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 52 – I'll heal, you'll grind February 20, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 51 – BN69 February 7, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 50 – Extravagance February 1, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 49 – Chanel January 29, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 48 – Unparalleled January 24, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 47 – Wind Wolf Leg Guard January 18, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 46 – Super Mysterious Wasp January 11, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 45 – Mysterious Wasp January 9, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 44 – Queen Wasp's Nest January 3, 2016

VW:UUTS Chapter 43 – Poisonous Wasp Forest December 26, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 42 – Wasp December 23, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 41 – Mu Rong Ming Yue's invitation December 20,

2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 40 – Clearwater December 13, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 39 – Spirit Wind Cloud Armor December 11, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 38 – Red Iron Tablet December 8, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 37 – Crimson Mercenaries December 7, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 36 – Broken Spear November 28, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 35 – Little Liar November 21, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 34 – Moon Blade November 16, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 33 – Golden-scaled Python King November 9, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 32 – Forest Python October 24, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 31 – Promise October 18, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 30 – Blockhead October 11, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 29 – Lin Yi Xin October 4, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 28 – Let's Meet Up! October 1, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 27 – Army Pouch September 29, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 26 – Corrupt Wolf Card September 26, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 25 – Fruit Forest September 25, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 24 – Apple Jam September 19, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 23 – Wild Bear Hearts September 13, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 22 – Guarding Corpses September 9, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 21 – Wind Fantasy September 7, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 20 – Weeping Fireblade September 3, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 19 – Lady Xin Ran August 24, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 18 – Briar Skeletons August 21, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 17 – Painful Wound August 15, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 16 – He Yi's Visit August 14, 2015

VW:UUTS Chapter 15 – Ghost Valley’s Rematch August 6, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 14 – Arrogant Mad Dragon August 1, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 13 – Asura July 24, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 12 – Iron Bear July 22, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 11 – Ghost Valley July 22, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 10 – Let Me Live With You July 21, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 9 – Black Wrist Guard July 18, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 8 – Undead Powers July 12, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 7 – Justice on Heaven’s Behalf July 5, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 6 – Mad Dragon June 28, 2015
VWUUTS Chapter 5 – Glimmering Breastplate June 14, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 4 – Big-Eared Rabbits June 10, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 3 – Undead Swordsman June 9, 2015
VW:UUTS Chapter 2 – Sudden Change
VW:UUTS Chapter 1 – The Beautiful Guildmaster

VW:UUTS Chapter 1 – The Beautiful Guildmaster

[Prologue]

Looking through the Door of Dreams

Listening to the far away chatterings

Sword trickling with blood

Please guide me to the path to move forward

The clear spring water washed away the dust on my body

I start my journey with this battered body

Blood and tears filled my view as the massacre continues

My loved ones, please don't cry over me

I wish you well, may you escape from the evil forever

I'll protect you, even if I have to slave through my life

.....

[Main Story]

At night, the warm breeze of spring blew the sweet smell of flowers and grass through the forest, and the tree branches swayed with the wind.

Suddenly, two shadows flew past, entering the depths of the forest in an instant.

"Swoosh..."

Threading on the soft grass, I looked at the night sky as I buried my sadness in my heart.

My team was annihilated yet again.

Beside me, my fellow comrade, a beautiful elf archer, looked heart-rending under the moonlight that shone on her body. Her exquisite, innocent oval face shone with a magnificent splendour under the moonlight.

"Sigh..."

She leaned on a nearby old pine tree behind her, her elegant face expressed tiredness and indignation. Her chest heaved up and down as she held a light sword in her hands. After that intense battle, her chest armour became so tattered that it almost revealed the perfect mounds underneath. Her wrist and leg guards also suffered the same fate, as her perfectly-shaped, snow white legs became exposed to the wind. Her white cloak was covered in blood, almost torn to shreds.

"Stop running, Lu Chen." Her oval face was flushed pink as she turned to me.

"Why are we stopping?" I asked, astonished.

She shook her hands, "We are going ahead with our plans two days early. Let's give them one last fire attack, and then we'll delete our accounts!"

"Yes, all up to you, boss."

I nodded, slowly raising my blood drenched hands.

"Shua!"

Suddenly, a missile tore across the skies and exploded in the air. Thousands bits of flaming pieces rain down from the skies, turning the whole forest into a sea of fire.

"AHHHH..."

Blood-curdling screeches can be heard all around as the countless players chasing after us were burnt down to the ground. Each and everyone of the pursuers fell to the ground, charred black in the sea of fire.

I heaved a sigh of relief, "It should be alright now."

"Yes." The girl nodded her head. "Let's go and start our new journey!"

I raised my palms as flashes of data turned into a shining light that started spiralling out of my palm. In the next moment, my body slowly disappeared. The beautiful archer sitting in front of me smiled and nodded at me as she also took out her delicate palms. Flashes of data appeared, and we disappeared from the virtual forest.

.....

"Phew..."

I released a heavy sigh and took off my virtual gaming helmet.

Finally, it's over.

After playing *<Soul's Trial>* for two years, campaigning north and south, we had experienced both glory and sorrow, met great comrades and enemies. But in the end, we are finally leaving this land of virtual reality.

Not far from me, another helmet laid on the my table, glimmering with light. A bold, beautiful and flamboyant calligraphy was written on the helmet: *<Heaven's End>*!

That's right. The most established game producers in the world, Yue Heng Corporation, who had released *<Soul's Spirit>* previously, had finally released their next VRMMORPG, *<Heaven's End>*. They had the unshakable reputation as the king of VRMMORPGs. In terms of their game play and number of users, they top the charts and had the monopoly over the industry. They have sold more than 800 million helmets in just a month, netting 95% of the whole sales market.

<Heaven's End> would officially start at 12 midnight in two days without an alpha or beta test. This was also one of the reasons why I left *<Soul's Trial>*. After hearing this news, a lot of guilds had started to prepare leaving *<Soul's Trial>* and continue their guild expansion in the new VRMMORPG. We were not an exception.

<Heaven's End> helmets were separated to low, middle, high and VIP standard, each having different prices. Well, my helmet was the VIP helmet. On the side of the helmet, a small line of words – "CGL Hall of Fame – Fallen Dust" was written in blue ink.

That's right, I am Lu Chen.

(TL: Lu Chen's in game name is pronounced Luo Chen in Chinese)

My legend was known throughout this country.

"Ah..."

I smiled at myself and turned on my laptop. An MSN icon was shaking on my screen, and a nickname "boss" was displayed beside it. It was my beautiful Guildmaster.

I clicked on the icon and saw the message she left, "Can we meet tomorrow afternoon? Tell me the meeting place."

"Tomorrow 9 am, at the gym on Sanxiang Road."

She quickly replied to my message, "Alright, I have sold all of our equipments. In addition to your salary, it would be a total of RMB 200,000. I have created a new card for you. I'll pass it to you tomorrow."

"Okay."

With that done, I lied down on my bed and thought about all the things that happened in the last two years. Everyone's lives had its ups and downs. Sometimes, it really made people feel so helpless.

I had been following boss for a little more than a year, yet I had never seen her in person. She said that her in-game avatar had been altered,

her real self was actually a dinosaur, not a beauty.

With regards to this, I wouldn't think about it that much.

.....

Early morning the next day, I woke up, wore casual clothes and strolled down the streets. The distance between the gym and the place I lived was not that far, a simple 10 minutes walk was enough.

I was feeling a little nervous. I called boss' phone number and asked, "Boss, what do you look like? How am I going to recognize you?"

On the other side of the phone, a chuckling voice could be heard, "Foolish guy. Look for the most brilliant person in front of the gym, she should be your boss."

"Alright..."

I turned off my phone and walked to the bus station in front of the gym. I looked around in all directions for her as I waited.

There were around 7,8 people on the bus station. Suddenly, I saw a brand new, black racing car stopping nearby. The car's movement was extremely smooth. Although I didn't recognize the car's brand, its price should be exorbitant.

It was 9am, but boss had not appeared yet.

I was getting a little impatient. Taking out my phone, I started calling again.

At this time, everyone's eyes pointed towards the magnificently beautiful woman stepping out from that branded car. Her face was extraordinarily perfect, the kind that you would see on national pageants competition. With a smile decorating her face, her long hair flowed with the wind. Her smile sends shivers down the others present here; almost everyone was staring at her like a fool. Nobody would ever thought that such a beauty would own that branded racing car.

.....

This was my first meeting with He Yi. Being the unrestrained, outstanding beauty that she was, she was like a light guiding me out of my chaotic ways. At that instant, my mind turned blank. It seemed like all the things around me started to disappear, all except for that matchless beauty. Like a holy light shining down from the heavens, I couldn't help but be attracted to her. Unconsciously, I walked towards her.

The beauty didn't care about the people staring at her and instead, she took out her phone and called a number, her rosy lips slowly revealed a displeased expression.

"Beep beep beep..."

My phone rung, and I heard boss' voice, "Lu Chen, you brat, why aren't you here yet?"

Startled, I almost couldn't believe what was happening. The boss I had followed for two years was actually this beautiful lady? Then she had evidently lied, because she was definitely a gorgeous woman. She was so stunning that her beauty would shake heavens and earth.

"Boss, I'm already here..."

It was a little awkward as I was holding my phone while standing right in front of her.

The beauty turned towards me and a smile blossomed on her face. She opened the car door and said, "So it was you? Come and get on the car, I'll bring you to some place today."

Under the stares of everyone present, I got into the matchless beauty's car. I felt the stinging looks full of envy and jealousy behind me, sharp like swords, piercing against my back.

"Boss, I didn't think that you could actually be..."

"I could be what?" She looked at me and smiled, her beautiful eyes full of mischief.

I gulped and stopped my sentence. This lady's attire had a low neckline, revealing a snow white cleavage underneath that caused a thrill down my spine. Her deep cleavage made me even more lost in my daze. Such an attractive sight, it really made others feel hot by just looking at her.

An exquisite looking employee pass was pinned near the boss' collar. She had clearly ran here during her office hours. Three big letters "GGS" – the company's name – were printed on the employee pass, and below it, was boss' name, He Yi! The more shocking thing was the position written underneath boss name: Vice President (Asia Region)!

"Boss, are you called He Yi?" I asked.

"Yeah, my name sounds nice, right?" she laughed. At the same time, she started the car, "Lu Chen, what do you plan to do in the future? Do you, perhaps, have a dream or something?"

"Dream?"

I gave it a thought and then chuckled, "My dream is to live in seclusion in the forest starting tomorrow. I shall become a happy person feeding horses, chopping firewoods, and travel around the world. Starting tomorrow, I will eat healthily and build a big house facing the ocean, as spring flowers bloomed nearby..."

"Go then!"

He Yi snorted, "You really have no future. Why don't you let this boss be your guiding light! Come, let's go to a place."

"What place?"

I sat on the seat beside her, a little nervous.

He Yi grinned mysteriously, her eyebrows slowly raised, "A place to make your dreams come true. We, the [Ancient Sword Dream] guild will be establishing a studio. The members of this studio must be permanent employees, and you are the first person that I thought of."

"Studio?"

I was a little at lost. I had been alone for so long, and now I would actually join a game studio?

"Boss, I think if it's only me..." Staying silent for a moment, I then continued my words, "Actually, [Ancient Sword Dream] would be fine with or without me..."

He Yi squinted her eyes at me. In an imposing manner, she replied, annoyed, "Stop talking rubbish, if I told you to join, you should join!"

I could only stay silent. Having followed He Yi for two years, her bold and straight-forward personality was something that everybody knows of. Whatever He Yi had decided, we, her followers, could only obey.

I didn't say any more as He Yi focused driving the car. I caught her stealing glances at me from time to time as she smiled happily.

He Yi passed me a card that contained my share of income for half a year. The car then quickly drove out of the district, where there were fewer cars on the road.

Never did I know that on that calm afternoon, my life would take a 180 degrees turn. Before this, I had never thought that I would embark on this path of my life.

VW:UUTS Chapter 2 – Sudden Change

"Ga..."

A sharp breaking sound screeched nearby. Fresh blood flowed out endlessly from a woman who was lying on the road, drenched in blood. There was an accident!

"Eh?"

He Yi frowned, and she abruptly slowed down her car.

"Help, help my wife, she was hit by a car, please..." a 50 year old middle aged man bent over his wife's body, crying, "Please take her to the hospital..."

"Oh?"

He Yi stopped her car instantly and said, "Lu Chen, let's save her first!"

"Okay."

As I was getting off the car, I saw a jet black car suddenly raced along the small road towards us, driving through the fence in high speed!

Not good, this...This seemed like a murder plot!

In just a moment before the car collided with us, as I couldn't react fast enough, I could only use my body to shield He Yi. He Yi's beautiful oval face was shocked with alarm, "No..."

"Peng!"

A thundering slam sounded in the next moment. He Yi's black car was pushed out of the road. My brain was completely blank. With such a tremendous collision, He Yi laid limp on the driver side, drops of blood trickled down her snow-white forehead.

I shook my dizziness out with all my might. In the midst of smoke, two fierce looking guys suddenly dashed in, swearing and cursing, "See if the female one is already dead!"

It was indeed a premeditated murder!

I hurriedly tried to move. My arms and legs did not suffer much injuries, but I felt a little pain on my back.

I tried to support the unconscious He Yi out of the car.

"Dammit, there is still another brat, let's go quickly!"

The two men dashed towards us, both of them carrying metal rods in their hands. They didn't even offer us an explanation before they started to attack.

"Pu!"

A metal rod swung against my back heavily and an unbearable amount of pain bolted through my body.

I couldn't care about anything much. This place was not a residential place and very little cars actually passed by. He Yi and I had fallen into someone's perfectly planned murderous plot.

My legs flew across one of the burly guys' stomach. He immediately bent over with his hands on his stomach, screaming in pain.

I hurriedly carried He Yi in my arms and ran towards the main road. I could only hope that someone would pass by.

Another sharp pain jolted across my shoulders. Drops of fresh blood appeared in the chest area on my white shirt. He Yi was still unconscious, her eyes closed shut, her long eyelashes looked sad but beautiful.

"This time I had to protect her properly. I shouldn't let any harm get to her, even if I have to throw away my life!" In this moment, I could only urge myself over and over again.

Stumbling towards the main road, luckily heaven still had eyes; a private car was speeding along towards us.

I hurriedly stood in the middle of the road and blocked the car. Behind me, the two guys swung their metal rods angrily and ran towards us.

"Open the car door!"

I shouted out loud, but the middle aged man driving the car had looked like he didn't want to be involved, as he refused to open the door.

"You better motherf**king open the door now!" I banged my fist hard at the car window, causing the window to suddenly split open. He was thus forced to open the door out of shock.

Quickly pushing He Yi inside the car, I shouted, "Quickly send her to a hospital!"

The middle aged man could only nod, but his eyes shone with shock and fear as the two burly guys had caught up with us.

It was too late for me to run away. I turned my body and protected the car as it drove away.

"Dammit, this brat dared to spoil our mission, kill him!"

The burly guy's face was full of scars. He laughed maliciously as he charged towards me.

I didn't struggle so much, as I had suffered heavy injuries from the previous plight. My whole body loses strength as I slowly fell to the ground.

"Peng!"

I suffered a hit on the back of my brain and felt a burning pain. The earth felt like it had turned upside down as my whole body fell heavily on the cold, hard asphalt.

.....

It was pitch black, and everything was blurry.

Am I dead?

I asked, but nobody replied.

I kneeled in the darkness, suddenly feeling despaired. My mother's last words replayed in my ears, "Lu Chen, you have to take good care of yourself..."

"Mom, I'm sorry that I didn't fulfil your last wish..."

"Mom, I'm so scared..."

I cried unceasingly yet I couldn't open my mouth or make any sort of noise. My whole body was trapped in an endless fear and despair.

Suddenly, I heard a voice beside me-

"We don't know anything about this brat, what do we do?"

.....

Late at night, in a tranquil abandoned village near the mountains, a freshly dug earth burst out from the ground.

"Puchi!"

Suddenly, a voice sounded, and a piece of arm burst out from the ground.

Looking at my mud covered arms, I almost couldn't believe it. I was actually still alive after being buried alive for so long, how could that be?

Turning my body in shock, I looked at the hole I was buried in. I was probably buried 20 cm deep and the ground was very soft. With those conditions, there was probably enough air for me to breathe, which explained why I didn't die.

"Eh..."

Letting out a string of curses, a sharp pain burst from the back of my head. The blunt injury that made me unconscious and had almost sent me to the path of the dead was quite heavy. But I could still escape death, it was really good luck in the midst of misfortune.

I looked around for a while. The whole sky was filled with stars. It was

already late at night.

My phone was missing, and the back of my shoulders were drenched with blood. Just moving it a little brought about a sharp bout of pain.

Happy that I was alive, I was nevertheless worried about He Yi's conditions. Was she safely brought to the hospital? Why would those people want to kill her, and, and... there were still so many questions unanswered.

I couldn't think of so much things any more. I simply had to go home first. My stomach growled hungrily. I didn't know how long I had starved.

Walking unsteadily towards the main road, I was a little bewildered. When He Yi was in danger, I had actually used my own body to shield her from harm without thinking. What did I do that for?

Shaking my head, only god knows.

Although there were not many public transport around, after waiting around an hour, finally a bus came. That driver looked at me as if he had seen a ghost, "Bro, did you fell into the sewer?"

I nodded and laughed, "More or less, I was really unlucky."

The road home was bumpy. With my phone gone, luckily I still had He Yi's card with me. This way, my life in the future could still be secured. Tomorrow night was the opening night of <Heavens End>. With my skills in gaming, although I wouldn't be able to bring forth storms and rain, I

would at least be able to feed myself.

Touching the back of my head, I still feel little bouts of pain. Doubts started to appear in my mind. After suffering such a heavy blunt attack, my skull was perhaps almost cracked open. And then I was buried underground for God knows how long. How do I even survive this whole thing?

Looking back at the village I was buried in, it was a district still in development. It looked like a mass grave, short, low gravestones were laid in great numbers.

Thinking for a long time, I suddenly laughed at myself, "Forget it, let's just be grateful that I'm still alive. There's no need to think so much."

.....

When I returned to my district, the whole sky had turned completely dark. The one-roomed flat I was living in had a rental of RMB2200 per month. Yeah, it was just last month that I almost had to move out due to a lack of credit for my rental. It was only thanks to one of my brother's generous contribution that I managed to pass through that trial. Of course, the price of borrowing money from that brat was to give him a godly double wielding sword weapon to enjoy. However it was only a few days before <Soul Trial> was going to close, so those equipments were not worth that much in real life.

Walking through the dark stairs, I took out my keys as usual, but then I saw a figure came out from my door.

"Damn! Why are you only back at this time? What have you been doing for these two days that you didn't even pick up your phone?"

I could recognize that person straight away with his voice.

Du Shi San, my closest brother on a so-called good terms. We gave each other our best stuffs. I had been friends with Du Shi San since primary school all the way through college, our relationship was extremely close. Other than girlfriend, we almost shared everything. Between us, we almost have no secrets. Of course, with regards to not sharing girlfriends, that was because I had absolutely, entirely zero girlfriend, while Du Shi San changed his girlfriend more often than a girl change her clothes.

In the flickers of the dark, Du Shi San looked at me and asked surprisedly, "Lu Chen, why do you look so pitiful? Aih, I heard that your account was eliminated by [Chaos Illumination]...Forget it, [Chaos Illumination] became very popular now, in China they had hidden the truth from the public eyes. Your [Ancient Spirit Dreams] really had no chance against them..."

I laughed softly and patted Du Shi San shoulders, "It's okay, think more positively. [Chaos Illumination]'s success will only last for a limited time, what comes up must come down. Anyway it was only a deleted account, it's a small matter. Young one, be more optimistic."

"Optimist your head..." Di Shi San face was filled with helplessness, "I am here to comfort you, not to becomforted by you..."

"Shi San, why are you at my place?" I stared at him. "Tomorrow night is

the first day of <Heavens End>, why are you here in my place instead of preparing to stock cash?"

Du Shi San bit a mouthful of melon and showed a shocked expression, "Have you become senile? <Heavens End> will start tonight at 12 midnight, when did it become tomorrow?"

"It starts on the 10th, right?"

"It's the 10th..."

I was frozen for a moment. I met He Yi on the 8th, and today was already the 10th. Could it be that I was unconscious, buried underground for a full day and night? How could that be?!

"Hey, are you alright, bro?"

Du Shi San patted my shoulders and asked, "Why do you look like a ghost? Today is the 10th, is there something wrong?"

I took a deep breath then chuckled, "I'm okay. Then today should be the grand opening of <Heavens End>, how could you still have time to look for me here?"

"Dammit, you heartless brat!" Du Shi San's saliva flew in all directions. "I couldn't contact you for so many days, and I was worried that you are already dead, that's why I came here to see you for myself. Since you are back, I am going to go home. I'd probably reach home before 12, so let's meet in game! Tell me, what do you plan to call your ID, would it still be

Fallen Dust?"

"I'm not sure, i guess not. How about you?

"I'm also not sure, there are a lot of people who wanted to rush into the game. I actually wanted to name myself Elegant Gentleman, Handsome Knight or something like that, but I think with that name, the chances to rush into the game is slim."

"Yeah, then you should go back first, we can contact each other again after coming out from the newbie village."

"Alright, I'll go first then. I bought you some sliced beef. I had actually wanted to drink a few glasses of beer with you, but you came back too late. Next time, then?"

I stretched my neck and looked, there was indeed a plate of sliced beef on my table inside. There were also two bottles of liquor. I couldn't help but feel warm inside. I was lucky enough to have such a good brother after being a misfit for so many years.

As Shi San went back, the lamp posts shone on his body and created long shadows. He wasn't an expert in terms of games, his skills could even be on the level of newbie. While others may leave a legend, he could only leave a shadow.

VW:UUTS Chapter 3 – Undead Swordsman

After finishing a half kilograms of sliced beef and drank a few glasses of beer, my body felt weird instead of warm.

I looked at the time, it was 10.30 at night. There was still 1.5 hours before <Heaven's End> opening. At this time, there would definitely be hundred millions of game crazy people who would be wearing the game helmet, keeping watch for the opening of . Those people who wish to rush into the <Heaven's End> world and became a legendary player, were probably twiddling their thumbs together waiting to enter the virtual world.

Turning on my laptop, an MSN icon was shaking non-stop. It was all from He Yi, there were a total of 47 messages-

"Lu Chen, you there? I'm at the hospital, where are you..."

"Lu Chen, I kept trying to call your phone but it couldn't connect..."

"Lu Chen, I went to the accident scene but I couldn't find you, where the heck are you?"

"Wuwu... Lu Chen, stop scaring me will you?"

.....

"Lu Chen, what actually happened to you? Where on earth are you,

please don't...I..."

"Wuwu...Lu Chen..."

Looking through the endless stream of messages, I was a little restless. My fingers froze on top of my keyboard, not sure which keys to press. After a long while, I made a hard decision: Forget it, I'm going to cut my contact with He Yi. I'm not that much help in [Ancient Sword Dream] anyway. I would only be a burden to her if I returned. It would be better for her if she were to forget me.

Thus, I deleted my half-typed messages in the MSN chat, and opened <Heaven's End> official website instead.

There were more than 700 million people online on the website. With so many people online on the night before it officially opened, this game could be the most anticipated game ever!

Furthermore, there was a surprising announcement in official website: The super-player Fallen Dust has suffered a crushing defeat, his account has been deleted in the end.

Immediately after that, there were more than 30,000 comments. Countless number of people were distressed by the news.

I drank a sip of beer and laughed. To live this wretched life, you should be more optimistic. "Hey ! This hero is coming for you!"

After waiting for a while, it was finally a little more than 11. I wore my

game helmet.

The green light blinked as my irises were scanned, my identity was checked!

A new scene started to appear as I entered the game's registration interface –

In a blood drenched land suffering from countless wars and endless battles, forests had withered and human civilisation had fallen into ruins. Plagues and diseases were rampant, creating mountains of dead bodies everywhere. There were human, elves, demons, barbarians and other types of races. Unpleasant, rotten smell of corpses floated to my nose as dead bodies spread throughout the whole place. Under the flat horizon, a single gigantic tree stood tall in the middle.

This was the World Tree, the guardian of heaven and earth. Every lifeforms started from here.

However in the present moment, the World Tree had started to wither. Various Gods started to fall one by one, and the whole of the continent was enveloped in blood. A ferocious race had come forth to devour all living beings.

The scenery moved as my viewpoint fall on a grand canyon. At the same time, I was dumbfounded with the scene in front of me-

In the grand canyon, a closely packed army walked onward, spears erected like forest trees, flags and banners high up in the sky. The

Barbarian King who wore heavy armours over his body brandished his battle-axe and let out an earth-shattering roar. The mighty barbarian warriors spared no effort in hacking their enemies with their axes, but those scary enemies attacked back, fast as lightning. The barbarian warriors' bodies were penetrated with hundreds of blades gleaming with murder intent that it was difficult to differentiate their flesh and blood. Cries of anguish endlessly filled the air.

Under a flag bearing a lion's head, the beautiful human race Queen drew out her sword and shouted, "Onwards!"

Countless human soldiers charged ahead, swinging their swords. Mages hid in the dark and cast complicated spells, unleashing balls of flames towards the enemies.

The battlefield only became more ferocious with time as war cries shook the canyon. The air was filled with a thick smell of pungent blood.

The human race Queen then transformed into a beautiful butterfly and flew across the battlefield, her sword dancing in the wind as she slashed the skull of an undead skeleton soldier through the air.

But just at this moment, a thick smoke suddenly descended. A body of an undead slowly formed as the smoke concentrated together. Then, a light flashed past suddenly and the human race Queen slowly fell to the ground, her beautiful head severed, grabbed by the hair in the undead's hands. The Smoke Undead lifted the Queen's head as it let out an angry roar, as if it was demanding the acknowledgement of other races.

Fresh blood dyed the ground as the warriors turned into cold corpses

one by one.

Finally, only the last human warrior in the canyon was left. He lifted his sword as he stood on a small mountain of corpses, hacking his enemies into two.

As fresh blood burst out from the monsters, he raised his sword and growled angrily at the Smoke Undead Commander. In that moment, both the human warrior and the Smoke Undead charged towards each other, their unleashed ultimate attacks collided together and produced an explosion that shook the heaven and earth!

"Keng!"

The sound of swords clashing reverberate in my ears, and the scene slowly turned blurry as two big words appeared in the sky – <Heaven's End>!

.....

I sucked in a deep breath. What a mind-blowing opening scene! <Heaven's End> was indeed worthy to claim the name of the best VRMMORPG, taking over the title from <Soul Trial>. Just a mere opening scene had excited us to such extent!

As I floated in the air, I arrived at the welcoming shrine, where a small elf was flying around. A female system voice sounded in my ears –

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Dear honoured user, the system check has confirmed that you are a member of CGL Hall of Fame of the Chinese Server. Would you like to continue using your previous ID: Fallen Dust?

.....

An option appeared in front of me. I thought for a while and chose "No". Then, I entered a new ID: Lost Hero!

(TLN: His ID literally meant broken spear buried under the sand (折戟沉沙). It's a chinese idiom that meant "miserable defeat/thoroughly defeated/crushing defeat". I don't feel like naming the MC "Miserable Defeat", so I named him Lost Hero instead. Open to better name suggestions...)

Such a beautiful ID, it was not only cool, it could also be used to attract ladies later on. This ID was both solemn yet heroic, I am really gifted!

In the previous game, I managed to be chosen as one out of 27 of the influential players in the Chinese Server. Thus, I could skip the queues and received this extremely treasured game helmet.

2 years ago I entered <Soul Trial>. After playing for a year, I became a figure that nobody dared to approach. But there were always unexpected situations in life. A car accident had caused an obstruction in my brain nerves, delaying my nerve transmissions by 3 seconds. This meant that every move I made would only be executed 3 seconds after my brain ordered it.

How scary was the result of this delay?

The most anticipated star of the Chinese Server was crushed just like that. In just a moment, the talented player had become a useless person. I became the Chinese Servers CGL Hall of Fame biggest joke, and I was all alone. With just one accident, I fell into the darkest days of my life.

In this moment, there was only one girl who reached out her hands to me. She was my Boss, the beautiful, strong and brave woman. It was a pity that I had disappointed her. Our guild had slowly crumbled, and finally, we were defeated under the hands of [Chaos Illumination]. We completely lost and were reduced from a 3000 people guild to a 5 people guild.

Our opponent was extremely scary –

[Chaos Illumination], the guild that possessed a talented player called "God of War", who was also the number one player in the Chinese Servers.

.....

I chuckled softly. In the previous game I was really a Lost Hero. I had the success of entering CGL Hall of Fame but had became a loser later on. He Yi even gave me a new name – a cesslure (success + failure)!

(TLN: Bad naming sense strikes again)

Now, I would be using the ID "Lost Hero" as a warning to myself, to never stop training and learning new things!

Next, it was time to determine my race and profession. This was also the part I was anticipating the most. Yeah, choosing a heroic looking knight with high defense and powerful attacks would complement my 3 seconds delay physical disability.

<Heaven's End> was a VRMMORPG that allowed players to choose 10 different types of professions: warrior, magic knight, mage, archer, ranger, tactician, beast tamer, priest, bard and assassin. Each profession had their own specialities. I chose a profession in the melee category. If you are a man, you should be riding on a horse, wield a blade and fight on the battlefield!

A series of different professions appeared in front of me. A warrior wearing a battle armor, a magic knight riding a war horse, a mage waving his staff, an archer wielding his bow, tactician, priest and so on.

The system continued to do a system check on the my body, numbing my brain. Like a mosquito bite, my blood had been analysed by the system –

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Based on system check, your heartbeat is 30% lower than a normal person's standard!

System Announcement: Based on system check, your body temperature is 70% lower than a normal person's standard!

System Announcement: Based on system check, your blood concentration level is 40% lower than normal!

System Announcement: Based on system check, your brain activity is 120% above a normal person's standard!

System Announcement: Based on system check, your sexual activity is 50% lower than a normal person's standard!

.....

Hearing these series of notifications, I was extremely surprised. What is all this? Could it be that my VIP game helmet is a counterfeit?

But at this time, another notification sound rang out –

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: The body system check had confirmed that you fulfilled the requirement of a hidden profession. You can choose a hidden profession – Undead Swordsman. Would you like to accept it?

.....

I was dumbstruck for a full 2 minutes. Then I looked up to the sky and laughed out loud!

"Hahaha, good things do happen after all. Since I've acquired the hidden profession – Undead Swordsman the moment I enter this game, I'd be a fool if I don't accept it! It's even a a special race and a melee type

profession!"

Thus, I accepted it without hesitation.

After a "ding", my game avatar was created. A Undead Swordsman wearing a black armour and a scarlet robe, looking grave and stern, appeared in front of me!

I was relatively satisfied. I couldn't help but chuckle, "Not bad, let's get ready to enter the game!"

It was 11.57 pm at night, only 3 minutes left before the opening of <Heaven's End>. My heart was beating excitedly and my blood boils with delight. Briefly, I thought about my past. Hmph, I swore that I would get back all the things I had lost!

Tick-tock... Time passed by. I was still in the welcoming shrine waiting to enter the game. At this time, there were probably countless players waiting to enter the game in the whole world.

Finally, the clock strikes 12, it was the official start of the game!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Lost Hero, would you like to enter the game?

Yes!

A flash of light filled my view as I entered the virtual lands of <Heaven's End>. "Ding", as the first player to enter the game, you received an award: Godly Weapon – Overlord Sword!

Of course, that was only in my dreams.

.....

A dense fog filled my view as a low voice sounded from afar: "Wake up, you undead who had been abandoned!"

"Shasha..."

I dug with all my might in the midst of the fresh earth. Finally, "hua" I burst out from the ground. A rotten smell immediately greeted me, and I was shocked to see the person in front of me!

He was wearing a black robe, but he couldn't be counted as a person. His face was rotting and half of his skin had already dropped off. Only two eyeballs, wriggling back and forth in their sockets, were left of his face. It was beyond terrifying. His hands that were holding a staff was also completely corroded, only white bones were left.

A necromancer!

VW:UUTS Chapter 4 – Big-Eared Rabbits

My first thought was: Yeah, gotta kill him now. Maybe he could drop that staff, it looked not bad.

I did just as I said!

I fumbled a little, flexing my fist, preparing to launch an attack on the necromancer. But at this moment, I realised that the fist I was flexing was actually bones!

"Damn!"

I stopped abruptly and looked down to my lower body. Goose bumps appeared in my arms as I saw an eerie skeleton body hidden beneath my tattered clothes!

I'm so dead. I quickly reached out my hands and flipped open my trousers. Seeing the view in front of me, my head suddenly felt heavy. It's over! My little...my little brother was gone, there was only a piece of eerie white bones left, gorgeously displayed in front of my eyes.

"Hey you rotten worm, you are finally awake!"

The necromancer looked at me as he chuckled, "Since you are awake, take your sword and go on a journey, win your battles and bring glory to the Undead Legion!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: [Scattered Corpse Newbie Village]'s Village Head had given you a new set of newbie equipments. They include – Rusty Sword and Garment filled with Holes!

.....

"Ding dong", the equipments entered my inventory. Opening my inventory window, there were indeed a Rusty Sword and a Garment filled with Holes in my inventory. The Rusty Sword was a traditional newbie sword with an attack power 0-1. As for the Garment filled with Holes, it had a defense of 1 point.

Equipping the two equipments, I opened my character status. Oh was there an end to my grievances! I had thought that an Undead Swordsman was a cool profession, but that thought had completely perished now!

ID: Lost Hero

Job: Undead Swordsman (On Probation)

Level: 0

Health: 100

Attack: 1-2

Defense: 1

Magic: 0

Fame: 0

Luck: 0

(TLN: LOL all the 0s xD)

.....

Perfect! My starting attack was 1-1 and my defense was a big, beautiful zero! Luckily there was this Garment filled with Holes that added 1 point to my defense. Otherwise I could even die an honourable death, pecked by a passing chicken!

The server had only opened for 5 minutes at the most, and there were a lot of players logging in. It was the time to seize every moment, yet I could only stand here, helpless, as flies flew around into and out of my skull. The village [Scattered Corpse] I belong to was also a newbie village, but it was different from normal villages. It was because I was assigned to play the "Villain" role!

Undead, as the name implies, were spirits that roamed at night. There were skeletons like me, ghosts, demons, witches and other evil spirits in the village. Anyway, it was all the jokers that caused trouble to the human, barbarians and devil villages day and night, lusting after their lives.

As a gorgeous small skeleton soldier, I strode forward like a lion, my steps mighty as a dragon as I walked around the Scattered Corpse Necropolis. In the village corner, I found a half rotting barbarian under a short, withered tree. He should belong to the Undead Faction. He looked worried and forlorn as he scratched his head, peeling his rotten flesh and hair.

Four letters floated on top of his head: "Scattered Corpse Village

Guard".

I took a step forward, and used a low, dignified tone to speak, "Bro, is there anything I can help you with!"

The barbarian looked up at me and said, "Small Skeleton, a human scout has already discovered us, Scattered Corpse Village is not our heaven any more. We have to dispatch a huge army of our abandoned souls undead to attack the human villages. But before that, you'll have to go outside the village. There are a lot of annoying Big-Eared rabbit causing disturbance to our kins."

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You received the quest [Kill the Larged-Eared Rabbit]! (Quest Level: F-)

Quest Description: Kill 20 Big-Eared rabbit, collect 5 rabbit furs, and give it to the Scattered Corpse Village Guard. You will then receive a reward!

.....

Abandoned Souls Undead? I was a little ** listening to it. With that said, then I, this undead swordsman, had not belong to any faction yet. I do not belong to the Silver Moon Alliance nor the Undead Legion, then would I belong to the Neutral faction? Maybe I do. It was better this way, I could invite less trouble and train more!

(TLN: ** is in the raws)

OK, let's go out now!

Quests in <Heaven's End> were as little as hairs on a bald head. Surveying this newbie village, there was only this quest available.

Carrying the Rusty Sword and exiting the village, there was a wide open forest area. Indeed, there were a few black Big-Eared Rabbits walking outside the village. The Big-Eared Rabbit's level ranged between 1-3, which were rather difficult for a level 0 like me to deal with.

In a further distance, there were a few Iron Mice scampering about the lush, green grasses. These mice did not attack players and were of level 1, they were the main targets for newbies. They were easy targets even for a newbie who just started the game. Logically speaking, with my 3 seconds delay, I should practice with these mice first.

However, I frowned, "F**k, Big-Eared Rabbit it is, I'm not going to lose to you!"

Towing the Rusty Sword in my hand, I quietly approached a Big-Eared rabbit, closely observing its exceptionally agile movements. Its attacking speed should be very fast, probably around 1.4 seconds per attack. I could probably withstand a level 1 Big-Eared Rabbit attack power, but a level 3 Big-Eared Rabbit would probably make me despair.

However, there was a level 1 Big-Eared Rabbit in front of me. Very good, let it be the target of my Treasured Sword! Ugh, forget it, this Rusty

Sword...

Following my usual habit, I charged towards the Big-Eared Rabbit. Within a distance of around 10 yards, I started swinging my sword!

Advanced Judgement!

That's right, an expert player would need to be equipped with power, but I knew my own limitations. Since every order I made with my brain would only be transmitted 3 seconds later, I maintained a good habit of thinking of the next move in advance. With that, even under a "brain-dead" situation, I could still squeeze myself into <Soul Trial> top 100 expert player rankings!

"Hua!"

A shocking thing happened and made me pale. My Rusty Sword had hacked through an empty air and a big MISS floated out. This attack had unexpectedly missed.

It was not because my aim was bad, but it was because I slashed my sword when I was a full 7 metres away from the Big-Eared Rabbit. How could I possibly hit it?

Alas, this attack of mine attracted the Big-Eared Rabbit's attention. It let out a loud "Ji ji" sound and charged towards me. Its powerful hind legs suddenly leapt, splashing cows manure into my face!

"12!"

Damage numbers flew out. Indeed, with my 100 health, I could still counter it.

"Sha sha!"

Quickly retreating back, I swung my sword to counter!

"Cha!"

"9 ! "

My 1-2 attack could only cause that much damage, but the Big-Eared Rabbit had only 30 health, so it should die within 3 slashes of my sword, no problem.

"Shua shua shua!"

My sword slashed in the air three times, the Rusty Sword moving as fast as lightning as it continuously attacked the Big-Eared rabbit 3 times. My legs didn't stop moving as I continuously retreated backwards. My well-thought positions evaded the Big-Eared Rabbit's attacks, and finally I slashed the last time.

"Ji ji..."

Squeaking miserably, the Big-Eared Rabbit's legs were broken as it fell to the ground. It said its last words, "Damn you Undead! My legs....my

beautiful legs that could run 100 metres in 3.7 seconds!"

The monster didn't drop any kind of equipments or loots, but I looked up to the sky and laughed out, "Oh heavens, did you see? I... Fallen Dust is back!"

In the surroundings, a few Big-Eared rabbits eating grasses looked at me, like they were looking at a crazy person.

But I only crazily rejoiced on my own, that attack just now had let me find my old self back. Why did I say so? This was because my 3 seconds delay had unexpectedly been cut short by a lot. Based on my last test, my reaction time right now is 1 second. This was a limitation that I could definitely live with. If it was only a 1 second delay, although I would not be able to face the top players, I could at least rise in the ranks of expert players!

My extreme joy suddenly turned into sorrow as my laughter attracted the three Big-Eared Rabbits's aggro. One of them is level 3. This one had inflicted 41 points of damage to me with a single bite!

"27 ! "

"41 ! "

"14 ! "

"39 ! "

In just a wink, I was annihilated. Let's all clap in commemoration of my first death on <Heaven's End>!

My whole body was in pain as I resurrected in the graveyard. Then, I realised I was naked as a baby. My +1 defense Garment filled with Holes had dropped; I felt a loss as if I had lost my own flesh. Rushing out of the newbie village, I was relieved to see that it had not disappeared yet. I quickly put it back on, and then walked around the edge of the forest to look for more lone Big-Eared rabbits.

Due to my low level, for the time being I had not learned any skills, and could only attack manually.

Luckily, having years of experience in playing games, I had built up an impressive resume with regards to finding the best positions in handling monsters. Although these positions may not completely evade the monsters' attack, it could lower the damage output of the monsters to the lowest.

"Sha sha..."

Retreating back quickly, I swung my Rusty Sword twice. Another Big-Eared Rabbit gorgeously met its end.

"Pa da!"

A sound rung clearly. It dropped loots! It turned out to be a rabbit fur, the required quest item.

Quickly putting it into my inventory, I continued to look for my next target. At the same time, I was quietly hoping that these monsters would drop a weapon that I could use. This Rusty Sword could still deal with

level 1 monsters, but I would not even dare to challenge those level 3 Big-Eared Rabbits. If I stayed this way, my leveling efficiency would not be able to keep up.

After killing for quite a while, the quest of killing 20 Big-Eared Rabbit was done, but I still lacked 1 rabbit fur.

Night has fallen. Drops of water seeped into my clothes, making my bones damp and uncomfortable. I carried my sword and walked around the forest. Unknowingly, I had entered the depths of the forest.

"Shua!"

Killing the 24th Big-Eared Rabbit, I leveled up and acquired 5 ability points. I added them all to strength. With that, my attack reached a significant 4-7, I could finally start challenging the level 3 Big-Eared Rabbits!

Happily, I approached a lone level 3 Big-Eared Rabbit quietly from its back, and launched a surprise attack!

"Peng peng!"

The Rusty Sword slashed the Big-Eared Rabbit's neck twice. It was its weak spot, hence a 50% increase in damage was applied!

"31 ! "

"37 ! "

Indeed, my attack power had sharply increased after gaining some points!

The level 3 Big-Eared Rabbit's health was 120. With that attack, I had drained half of its health. I slid 3 yards back quickly and swung my Rusty Sword at the same time!

"40 ! "

Very good, it had accurately slashed the Big-Eared Rabbit weak spot.

With a kick from it, the Big-Eared Rabbit took out 41 points from my health. But it only had one chance to attack. Before waiting for the Big-Eared Rabbit's second attack, my Rusty Sword had already cut across the Big-Eared Rabbit's neck, giving it a death blow!

"Pa da!"

It was yet another rabbit fur. Perfect, my quest was done! Furthermore, it also dropped a HP potion which will recover 80 Health, a high grade item!

Happily picking up the rabbit fur, I turned around and started to go back to the newbie village. However, I suddenly felt a cold chill behind my back. Turning around sharply, my heartbeat increased dramatically as I saw the monster behind me. Half of it was due to excitement, but half of it was nervousness.

Under a big tree, a large Big-Eared Rabbit covered with a green fur was giving me a death glare. Evidently, this Big-Eared Rabbit was different from the rest!

Chief Big-Eared Rabbit (F-BOSS)

LV-5

My whole body froze. I had unexpectedly met a BOSS monster!

In <Heaven's End>, the lowest BOSS level is F and the highest is SSS. Every level of BOSS was sub-divided into low, medium and high. The Chief Big-Eared Rabbit belong to the F-level. Yeah, it was the lowest ranking BOSS. However, with my Rusty Sword, Garment Filled with Holes and level, any logical person would turn around and ran for their lives. Boss monsters were not something that newbies could handle.

VWUUTS Chapter 5 – Glimmering Breastplate

"Is that an F-BOSS?"

My mouth slowly curled upwards. I was level 2, and it was level 5. The difference in levels did not exceed 5, so the chance of MISS attacks would not be too large. Then, there could be a chance to defeat it.

My heart resolute, I started my attack!

"Sha sha..."

Stepping on the soft grasses, I was only starting to plan my moves, but that Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS had already noticed me. It immediately attacked me, quick as lightning. But I was not slow either. I inclined my body slightly forward, my legs drew a beautiful arch as the Rusty Sword quickly slashed through the Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS's stomach!

"21 ! "

Good brat, what a high defense!

At the same time, I quickly made a calculation. The health of the big-eared rabbit is around 2500, so I would need to hit it at least 100 times to defeat it!

The Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS squeaked "ji ji" loudly, as it turned its body and revealed its tail. That short tail felt as hard as steel as it heavily

smashed onto my back!

"61 ! "

Intense pain scour through me, wasn't its attack too high?

My current total health was only at 110 points right now, I would be dead if I received another attack. There was no way I could defeat it, and I started to regret. The game mechanics in this game was too different from the previous games I had played before. I miscalculated!

Since I could not defeat it, then I should just run for my life. Otherwise I might just die until I am back to level 0, wasting all my day's effort killing the Big-Eared Rabbits.

With a glance, I decided the best outcome, quick as a lightning, and chose the road on the right side. There were less Big-Eared Rabbits there. Just one BOSS was already difficult to bear, if I attracted other monsters, I could be dead.

I ran as fast as I can and tried to change my running path at the same time. I ran across trees, shrubs, grasses and other obstacles, making the Big-Eared Rabbit hop all over the place. As I ran through all these obstacles, I tried to take the shortest path possible. With that, I could make up for the gap in the BOSS' and my own movement speed.

As I ran through the forest, I glanced around the surroundings. Suddenly, my eyes lighted up!

Not far from there, a bunch of thorny plants appeared in our paths. Those were the Blood Serpent Thorns, it was one of the plants on the <Destiny's> database. It was highly poisonous. Once you were poisoned, you would lose health every few seconds. Players who trained their manufacturing skills could harvest these Blood Serpent Thorns as a drug ingredient and create poisons for Assassin players. It was an essential assassination weapon!

Of course, the current level of the players were too low, there were nobody who had the ability to harvest these thorns.

But at this moment, it was my life saver. Seeing the Blood Serpent Thorns was the same as seeing my saving grace!

"Shua!"

I turned my whole body and entered the shrubs of Blood Serpent Thorns. These thorns were around 1 metre tall, not that difficult for me to jump over them. With one leap, I jumped into the middle of the thorns. I was very careful not to touch any of the thorns, and thus, I stood, surrounded by these poisonous thorns.

"Ji ji!"

The Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS was clearly still furious and similarly jumped, following me. It was a pity that its body wasn't large enough, it was only the size of a washbowl. As it flew in the air, my Rusty Sword flew towards it, and with great power and momentum, it slammed onto the BOSS's head!

"Go down, you rabbit!"

I hacked down with all my might, like I was batting a ball, smacking the BOSS right into the middle of the Blood Serpent Thorns shrubs. Just as I had predicted, the Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS was immediately pricked throughout its body as it squealed out painfully. Its health fell even faster as it was poisoned.

Relying on my arms and sword advantage, I jabbed repeatedly at the Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS' butt. But it was already powerless, as its small body was trapped in the middle of a thorny shrubs and could never escape. It anxiously cried out and jumped about, but it only caused it to be pricked with even more thorns. Gaping wounds could be seen throughout its body.

Not even two minutes passed before the Big-Eared Rabbit's health became critically low. This was my first BOSS kill, adrenaline shot through my blood as I shouted out, "Drop it, drop a mighty weapon for me, please, rabbit bro!"

"Wa!"

The Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS cried out miserably and died, dropping two items.

"Shua!"

It gave me a generous amount of experience, raising my levels by 2. I added all my points to strength, increasing my attack sharply to 7-12!

But the joy in leveling did not match up to the joy of getting the equipment drop. My eyes bulged open as I saw the Big-Eared Rabbit dropped a breastplate that glowed with a green light. Furthermore, it had also dropped a diamond-looking, huge stone on the ground.

Carefully reaching out my sword, I picked up the breastplate. "Pa" as the breastplate fell onto my hands, the equipment stats appeared in front of me immediately—

Big-Eared Rabbit Glimmering Battle Armor (Black-tier Armor)

Defense: 9

Stamina : +2

Required Level:2

.....

I was overjoyed, it turned out to be a Black-tier equipment, and it was an equipment with added properties at that! <Destiny's> equipments are separated into white-tier, black-tier, bronze-tier, elite-tier, rune-tier, silver-tier, gold-tier, dark gold-tier, amethyst-tier, soul-tier, heaven-tier and god tier. Although this black-tier equipments was almost at the bottom, currently, it was no different than a godly armor!

Quickly equipping the black-tier breast plate, my status immediately increased by a lot-

ID: Lost Hero

Job: Undead Swordsman (on probation)

Level: 4

Health: 140

Attack: 7-12

Defense: 10

.....

My defense became 10. With such high attributes, I could kill level 3 Big-Eared Rabbits without pressure anymore. Furthermore, my health also increased by 20 points due to the +2 addition to my stamina, totalling 140 points!

My heart couldn't help but be filled with joy. With such a high defense, in the current stage, could I be counted as the upper elites?

Wait a minute, the Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS also dropped a big stone!

I bent my body down and picked up that stone. Yeah, it was indeed the rumoured Magic Stone – Large Magic Stone (Quality: 77)

In <Destiny>, monsters dropped magic stones instead of gold. Any monsters that possess a magical ability would possibly drop a magic stone, and these magic stones could be exchanged for gold with any NPC Stores. Magic Stones were divided into 5 types – Small Magic Stone, Large Magic Stone, Dream Magic Stone, Amethyst Stone and Crystal Stone. The higher the quality, the more expensive it would be.

The Large Magic Stone's quality that I gained was 77, so I should be

able to receive a lot of copper coins!

As I jumped out of the Blood Serpent Thorns bushes, I wore my newly acquired black-tier breastplate, looking majestic and powerful. In any case, my ribs were finally covered. Now I would only need a leg guard, a wrist guard and a helmet to shield my whole body, and I can proudly flaunt it in front of other people.

Not far from there, a level 3 Big-Eared Rabbit suddenly bit into me. But I didn't try to dodge at all. Come at me!

"2!"

The damage points floated out from my head, making me laugh with glee. 10 points in defense was indeed powerful. The Big-Eared Rabbit who was almost the same level as me couldn't even break my defense.

After slashing my sword twice in order and killed the Big-Eared Rabbit who didn't realize its own imminent death, I quickly ran back to the newbie village. I looked for the Scattered Corpse Village Guard and passed him my quest items, 5 rabbit furs!

"Very good, little young skeleton, I'm seeing you in a different light!"

The Undead Barbarian patted my shoulders and cackled, "Come, this is your reward. Let's work hard for the Undead Legion, riches and beauties!"

I bulged my eyes, what an honest NPC, I liked his attitude! However, this Undead Barbarian's attitude, had it recognized me as a member of the

Undead Legion already?

.....

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have finished the quest [Kill the Big-Eared Rabbits]. You received 150 exp points, 10 copper coins, and fame +1!

I swallowed my saliva. Wasn't the reward too generous? Alright then, I would just receive my blessing. Anyway, I had received 150 exp points, just a few more Big-Eared Rabbits to go and I would level up to level 5.

The Scattered Corpse Village Guard continued, "Looks like you have killed the Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS. Very good, then the Big-Eared Rabbits won't be anything to worry about. I have a more urgent quest for you, would you be willing to finish it?"

Exactly what I was looking for. I quickly nodded, "Sure, anything you say."

"Okay!" the village guard clenched his battle axe and said, "Outside this small village, there is an extremely large Breaking Dawn Forest. One of our skeleton brother had reported that there are green Praying Mantises lurking in that Breaking Dawn Forest. They are extremely large and had a pair of deathly blades. You'll have to go to the Breaking Dawn Forest, kill 100 Green Praying Mantis, and bring me 10 Green Praying Mantis Blades. I would then give you plenty rewards!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have accepted the quest [Green Praying Mantis]! (Quest Level: F)

Quest Description: Go to Breaking Dawn Forest, kill 100 Green Praying Mantises and collect 10 Green Praying Mantis blades. Pass the quest items to the Village Guard.

.....

Yeah, not bad, a level F quest. I could probably get a lot of experience.

I was not in urgent to complete the quest. As I exited the graveyard, a crooked skeleton NPC goods seller appeared. I walked up to the skeleton and took out the Large Magic Stone that the Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS dropped. I handed it over to it and said, "Bro, could you take a look and check how much is this worth?"

The skeleton looked at me with a complicated expression and replied bitterly, "Do I look like a man to you?"

I froze. This skeleton had only bones left and I couldn't judge the size of its chest. "Cough cough, beautiful lady, could you please take a look at this and check how much it is worth?"

Only then did the beautiful skeleton lady took the Large Magic stone. She observed it closely and said, "1540 copper coins!"

I was pleasantly surprised. What good luck! That quest reward just now was only 10 copper coins, I never thought that just a piece of Large Magic Stone would be worth 1540 copper coins. I'm so happy!

I received 1540 copper coins that was converted into 15 silvers and 40 copper. I could even be considered a conglomerate!

Checking out the beautiful skeleton lady's goods, there was health potions, but it was expensive beyond measure. Just one beginner's health potion that healed 80 HP cost 50 copper coins. It was obviously daylight robbery!

However, after thinking a while, I still bought 20 bottles in the end. I could hunt higher level monsters with health potions, which would allow me to get more magic stones to change for gold. You should always think ahead!

.....

After buying the health potions, it was time for me to continue my adventure!

Outside the newbie village, I killed a few Big-Eared Rabbits and leveled up to 5. I continued to put my 5 points on strength, and increased my attack to 10-17. Looks like an Undead Swordsman strength growth is not that bad. 5 points to strength would become 3-5 addition to attack. I remembered reading from the forums that the profession with the highest strength growth was warrior. 5 points addition to strength will increase their attack by 2-5, while a Magic Knight would be increased by 2-4 and Ranger, 3-4. So looking from this perspective, Undead

Swordsman strength growth belonged to the upper tier professions.

Opening the table of rankings, there were a total of three newbie villages around this area, of which two belonged to the Radiance Alliance. Amongst the three newbie villages, the highest leveled player was already level 7, which was so much higher than me. Indeed, in every game, there would be people who would level like crazy. I should start working harder.

.....

Under the moonlight, a creepy small skeleton wielded his Rusty Sword as he walked swiftly through the wilderness, slowly humming, "The little monk went down the mountains to beg for food, but the old monk warned him, don't pluck the wildflowers below the mountains, don't pluck them~~"

(TLN: I think it's this song..., MC sort of changed the lyrics a bit)

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=u7OplgXtS_c

VW:UUTS Chapter 6 – Mad Dragon

The Breaking Dawn Forest was a territory fought over by the various tribes. When the World Tree withered, all of the tribes across the continent were plunged into a terrible situation. In the midst of ruin, the humans, beasts, elves and demons had united together as a single empire to fight against the Undead Legion. However, these few newbie villages were located near the large graveyard, intertwined with the Undead Legion's territory.

The Breaking Dawn Forest was a training ground for higher leveled players outside the newbie villages. Not only it was a place where the undead spawned, it was also a place for higher leveled players to grow.

From the public information provided in the website, the Breaking Dawn Forest was a place for level 5 – 12 monsters to spawn. If a player had not reached level 5, then it was best if he did not enter the Breaking Dawn Forest. Even level 5 players would at least need to come in a party, otherwise it would be very hard for them to survive.

Before leveling to level 10, players would not have any abilities. They could only use normal physical attacks, and these includes mages, priests, tacticians and bards, the cloth armored players. Thus, the newbie village would be dominated by close combat players, while the priests and the mages were forgotten in a corner.

However, when a player reached level 10 and manage to find level 2 main cities to learn their first job advancement skills, then priests would be the strongest profession. Especially the beautiful female priests, they would be the hottest profession.

.....

I couldn't form a group, because I didn't have a suitable team mates. I did not belong to the official Undead Legion and also not from the Human Alliance. The only one with this kind of situation was probably only me alone. Anyway, those players from the Radiance Alliance might not even be willing to form a party with me, an ugly little skeleton.

"Shasha..."

Stepping on the fallen leaves, I reached the Breaking Dawn Forest as the day breaks. A ray of morning light penetrate through the mysterious forest, forming dotted shadows on the ground. It looked so serene.

Opening the map, the quest indicated the Green Praying Mantis' area. It was just a short distance in front.

I gathered 100% of my enthusiasm, readied my sword and stepped into the mysterious forest. After walking a short distance, suddenly my sixth sense felt an imminent danger!

"Hisss..."

A green coloured blade split the wind as it flew towards me. There was something attacking me!

"Pu Chi!"

My defense was broken. Although I wore a +9 defense armour, I couldn't withstand this attack. A large damage number floated on my head – 41!

What a nice brat, your attack power is too high!

Looking upwards, I saw a monster wearing an armour hanging on a short tree nearby. It was a scary-looking Praying Mantis, its body covered with thick green crusts that looked extremely tough and durable. There were two sharp looking blade on its two arms. It was these things that had attacked me previously!

Green Praying Mantis lv-7

Normal monster

Humph, a level 7 monster. No wonder its attack was so painful. However, at that moment, I have already deduced that although the Green Praying Mantis' attack was extremely high, its movement speed and attacking speed was extremely slow. The time difference between two attacks was around 4 seconds long. If it was like that, then there should be no problem for me to face these level 7 Green Praying Mantises alone.

Sliding my feet, I formed a beautiful arc as I jumped at the Praying Mantis' right side. I raised my sword. Kacha!

"31!"

This damage number was still alright. The most important thing was that the Green Praying Mantis' defense was not that tough, otherwise my Rusty Sword won't be able to break its defense.

A level 7 monster that has less than 300 health, looks like it is going to be over soon.

"Hiss hiss...."

The Green Praying Mantis hissed loudly as it turned its body, swinging both of its blade to deal a dual damage.

I quickly retreated, my feet moving smoothly as I positioned myself

behind the Green Praying Mantis. "Cha cha cha", I quickly dealt three strokes, the strong rhythm of attack made me feel excited. It had been a long time since I felt such an exhilarating rush. Ahh, after being burdened with 3 seconds delay for a whole year, I felt like a fish that had just entered water.

I took care to maintain a safe distance and made all of the Green Praying Mantis' attacks go to waste. But my Rusty Sword was relentlessly unleashing combos upon the Green Praying Mantis. Although it was higher leveled than me by two levels, it still died in the end.

In the mysterious forest, one was a person and the other a Praying Mantis, but they still managed to perform the pinnacle of efficient and strategic battle. After evading its attack for four times, I was more or less comfortable with fighting it.

"Pu Chi!"

Green coloured blood splashed out of the Green Praying Mantis after continuously attacking it for more than ten times. The level 7 Green Praying Mantis whined pitifully and fell to the ground, dropping a small Magic Stone. Picking it up, it turned out to be a low quality magic stone, with a quality of 14. It should be worth around 140 copper coins. It's not that much, but for the early stages, these amount of money was too precious. After all, you would have to collect enough money to learn your skills before you reached level 10. Otherwise you could die of stress of not being able to learn the powerful skills available to you.

Throwing the Small Magic Stone into my inventory, I realized that my exp bar had risen quite a bit. Killing a monster higher leveled than you would indeed give you rich experience points. Going deeper into the

forest, I looked for Praying Mantises that was alone.

After around two hours, I killed 87 Green Praying Mantises and rose to level 7. I added 20 points into strength, and my attack increased to 22-37. Killing the level 7 Green Praying Mantises became very easy, it's a pity that the deeper I went into the forest, the higher leveled the monsters became. When I met the first level 10 Green Praying Mantis, I was almost killed. Hence I could only sulk and turn back to the outskirts of the forest, killing the level 8 monsters for my own survival.

<Heaven's End>'s death penalty was extremely harsh. When a player died, he would rise as a soul in the nearest city. When his soul found his body and revived, the penalty for it was dropping 1 level. However, the soul could also revive inside the city, but the penalty for it was dropping 3 levels. The distance between the Breaking Dawn Forest and the newbie village was around 20 minutes, I would not want to waste 20 minutes running to my body.

Looking at the time, it was almost 4am in the morning. However, the server condition was still crowded. It was obvious that many people were still rushing to level.

"Yeah, tonight I would train until level 10 and get my job skill before logging off!"

I encouraged myself quietly, as I cruise through the depths of Breaking Dawn Forest alone. I killed the Green Praying Mantises one by one, waiting to collect the right amount of quest items to end the quest.

As I was hunting, I heard voices from afar. Evidently, another player had

came here!

I quickly collected a Small Magic Stone on the ground and hid my whole body in the bushes nearby. Only my pair of eyes could be seen, no, maybe it couldn't be counted as a pair of eyes...Only my skeleton's pair of dark eye sockets could be seen.

"Third brother, are you certain that the King of Green Praying Mantis is in this coordinates of the Breaking Dawn Forest map?" A warrior said in a dissatisfied tone, "We have killed these Praying Mantises for over half an hour, these level 6 monsters hardly gave us any experience!"

A magic knight calmly replied, "Boss, it should be in these coordinates. One of our assassin friend was killed by the BOSS at this coordinates about half an hour ago. He didn't dare to revive here, so he revived in the city and dropped three levels. He wasted two hours of training."

The warrior nodded, "Humph, I hope you're right. If we came here for nothing, you'd have to treat me for tomorrow's supper."

"Ha, that's a small thing!"

.....

The few people moved through the forest at a fast pace. Not half a minute later, the magic knight suddenly raised his hands and shouted: "Be careful, it is indeed here in this place, hahaha!"

Through the leaves, I had also seen it. A huge Green Praying Mantis was

just right in front, waving its mighty blades. Its green shiny crust shone with a little shade of gold, making it looked a little different from the other ordinary Praying Mantises.

At that time, I punched my knees in regret. If only I had just walked forward a little, I could have seen this BOSS monster! However, after thinking it over again, forget it. Even if I found this BOSS, I would probably be dead, because I couldn't even see the BOSS' level.

That level 8 warrior couldn't help but laughed loudly, "Brothers, we are going to be rich today! A level 12 F+ BOSS, this King of Green Praying Mantis is currently the strongest BOSS in this newbie village. If we can defeat it, it will definitely drop a strong weapon or equipment!"

The magic knight was still calm as he replied, "Boss, be more alert. This is a level 12 BOSS, and our average levels are at most level 8. We also have not learnt any skills. The chances of us defeating this BOSS wouldn't even be 20%!"

The warrior harrumphed coldly, "Even if we can't defeat it, we have to force ourselves to. Having such a strong BOSS right in front of our eyes and not killing it does not suit my playing style."

"Yeah, let's go!"

.....

The quartet decided their roles and with the first attack from the magic knight, they all started to coordinate their attacks.

"Let's attack!"

The magic knight roared spiritedly as he charged forward with all of his might. His hands wielded a Rusty Spear that was covered with spots of rust. A flash of light shone at the tip of the spear, as it pierced into the King of Praying Mantis's lower jaw.

"27!"

I broke in cold sweat as I watched. Isn't this chap's defense too high? That level 8 magic knight's full force attack could only help the BOSS scratch an itchy spot.

"Not good, we are completely not its opponent!"

The magic knight hurriedly retreated in shock, but he couldn't avoid the King of Praying Mantis' attack to his head!

"201!"

That was close, he was almost killed. His profession growth allowed additional growth in health. If another person were to receive that attack, he would probably be dead.

Currently, the highest leveled person in these newbie villages was level 9. Hence this level 8 magic knight was already counted as one of the top players, but he was no better than a noob in front of this BOSS.

The magic knight quickly retreated after the attack. The Praying Mantis' movement speed was slow, hence escaping was still possible.

.....

However, before these four people ran too far away, suddenly, a large amount of players came out from the bushes. They were an aggressive looking, elite troops with level ranging from 4-7. Furthermore, these people all had the words "Mad Dragon" in front of their names, and standing right in front of them, was a person with and ID "Descent of the Dragon". He was a level 9 magic knight, the highest leveled player in all of the newbie villages.

Descent of the Dragon immediately charged forward as he roared, "[Mad Dragon] guild has arrived, unrelated people please retreat and leave this place. Otherwise, we wouldn't bear the consequences!"

VW:UUTS Chapter 7 – Justice on Heaven's Behalf

The law of this world was the strong preys on the weak. It was the same with regards to this game. There would always be a strong guild that would rely on numbers to squash small teams, this was a common occurrence.

[Mad Dragon] guild was definitely the strongest guild in these three newbie village. Just with a glance, it was obvious that there was more than 20 people in the guild, and all of their levels were not that low.

Descent of the Dragon held a rusty spear in his hands, his eyes full of arrogance as he looked at the four people who were fighting against the BOSS. He dismissed them with his hands and shouted, "There are no one else here except for you four. Fuck off right now!"

Fuck off, these were such tyrannical words. He was implying that this place had already become their territory. There was no more place for other players!

.....

"Damn you!"

The level 8 magic knight was angry beyond belief as he raised his spear and hollered, "Fuck off? Fuck YOU! What the fuck is [Mad Dragon]? What gives you the right to monopolize this training ground?"

The other level 7 warrior was also furious as he readied his sword, "At the most, we'll just die together. Die!"

With that, he charged forward like a mad person. With a giant leap, he suddenly jumped an arch and his sword flew towards Descent of the Dragon's neck.

"Hey!"

Descent of the Dragon roared as he swung his spear, piercing the warrior's body and avoiding his sword attack.

I couldn't help but wince and shut my eyes. This [Mad Dragon]'s judgement ability was quite frightening. He was also fierce and ruthless when he attacked. He was clearly an expert gamer, the four people team was totally not his opponent.

His spear shook as Descent of the Dragon killed off the leader of the four man team. He then laughed and said, "Kill off the three others! Remember this lesson, sparing the innocent will incite a rebellion. They are not worthy of killing this BOSS!"

A bunch of [Mad Dragon] players advanced together and completely annihilated the magic knight and monk in just a moment. The remaining female bard was so scared that her face turned deathly pale, as she scurried off into the mysterious forest, running away from the guild.

This girl who was around 20 years old with her terror-stricken face, ran into the bushes without hesitation, and bump into me by chance!

"Ah?!"

The female bard was so shocked that her mouth opened wide. It might be because my appearance was too frightening, after all, a skeleton wielding a sword appeared in the forest. It would be a frightening sight to see.

However, the female bard's next reaction was unexpectedly an "Ugh!" sound escaping her lips. A dagger glowing with a green light had pierced into her chest as a level 8 assassin attacked her!

Watching the female bard slowly fell to the ground, I was still calm as before. However, as the female bard fell to the ground, the face of her attacker revealed behind her.

In that moment, the assassin's eyes widened as he discovered me there.

"Pu! Chi!"

These two continuous attack almost used up all of the energy in my body. This assassin didn't even had the chance to react and was killed in a flash. A fatal attack on his neck and a fatal attack on his abdomen, his weak spots was torn into shreds.

.....

Picking up the potions that the female bard and the assassin had

dropped, I continued to hide in the bushes, quietly watching the scene happening in front of me.

Even when the member in his group decreased by one, Descent of the Dragon didn't notice it at all. All of his attention focused on the King of Praying Mantis, his face red with excitement as he laughed, "Brothers, let's divide into teams and attack it in sequence. If you dropped a level, I will compensate it to you for 500 RMB! (USD\$80.56)"

Everyone's eyes in the [Mad Dragon] guild suddenly turned green as they swung their newbie swords and charged forward.

The drop rate in <Heaven's End> was extremely low, and the weapon drop rate was even lower. Almost all of the [Mad Dragon]'s 20 over members wore white-tiered equipments. Not even one of them had a weapon with higher attribute.

"Sha sha sha..."

A chaotic stomping of men stepped into the grasses as a bunch of people flocked to kill of the King of Praying Mantis. Sensing the incoming danger, the BOSS suddenly turned its body. Rising both of its blades up high, it let out a sharp screech. (TLN: What does the Praying Mantis say?) It looked domineering and powerful, as if it was trying to show off his prowess as the King of Praying Mantis!

"Forward, don't be scared!"

Descent of the Dragon smiled widely and said, "Pay attention to match

your positions, the attackers should attack once and retreat. The time between your attacks should be around 1.5 seconds, that should guarantee a 1 second gap in the time for the BOSS to attack. Work together to control the flow of the battle, avoid the BOSS' attacks as much as possible!"

What a good chap, he was a specialist in this field!

Descent of the Dragon continued to boost the morale of his men, "Brothers, we the [Mad Dragon] would definitely gain fame from this. We may not become the number one guild in the whole of China, but at the very least, we would still be number one in the Zhejiang province. Humph, killing this King of Praying Mantis today is our first step for [Mad Dragon] to become the King!"

Everyone's morals increased as their faces and necks turned red with excitement, roaring with killing intent!

"Ka Cha!"

With the BOSS' continuous attack, a [Mad Dragon] member fell to the ground and was killed immediately. A high damage number, 421, appeared on his head. I'm afraid that number would be enough to kill any player right now.

However, a whole bunch of [Mad Dragon] players still attacked simultaneously. Swords, spears, fans, flutes, broadsword, whips and all other kinds of weapons jumbled up together. The King of Praying Mantis health was quickly depleted.

"Ah!"

After 2 seconds, another [Mad Dragon] player died at the BOSS hands.

Descent of the Dragon supervised and directed the battle at the side, his expressions filled with uncertainty. He watched the battle situation and looked around the place at the same time, afraid that some people would come and spoil [Mad Dragon]'s ticket to fame.

.....

In the forest, I revealed a little smile. Although Descent of the Dragon was experienced in game judgement, his biggest threat right now wasn't the interference other players, but that his own guild couldn't finish the King of Praying Mantis off.

Descent of the Dragon only the battle on the surface. He lost a player for 7% of the King of Praying Mantis' health. If you count it that way, 25 of people would be enough to kill the BOSS. However, he forgot to notice that the BOSS recovery speed was extremely fast. Furthermore, his party would lose more people with time, and the amount of damage inflicted on the King of Praying Mantis would decrease over time. Thus, the 7% health for a player calculation would not be valid anymore.

This was easy mathematical calculations. It was a pity that Descent of the Dragon was too obsessed with capturing the BOSS, and only cared about the BOSS's high damage output, forgetting the simplest things.

As a result, it was just as I have predicted. As the guild members kept

attacking, Descent of the Dragon's expression showed that he noticed something amiss. His eyes opened wide as he shouted, "Quick, kill it quickly!"

Then he heaved a deep breath and said, "Stop when the BOSS' health is at its last thread, let me deal the last hit!"

I suddenly realized why Descent of the Dragon's level was so high. There was a rule in the game that the person who dealt the last hit would receive 50% of the BOSS experience. Descent of the Dragon was able to organize a group of people to kill high leveled monsters. With that, it would be difficult if his name did not appear at the Level Ranking board.

"Ka Cha!"

The King of Praying Mantis "Blade Tornado" was as powerful as ever, dealing damage to over 20 people at the same time. When it still had around 10% health left, only four [Mad Dragon] players were still alive. They were three swordsmen and Descent of the Dragon.

"Damn!" Descent of the Dragon spat out, as he readied his spear and advance forward himself. His cold gaze glared at the Praying Mantis as he shouted, "Bastard, go to hell!"

"Pu!"

Descent of the Dragon's attacking power was not that high, but his targeting skills were extremely accurate. His spear happen to pierce a small crack on the King of Praying Mantis' outer shell and stabbed it's

flesh, hence his damage was extremely high.

"Ahh!"

Following the screams, yet another two [Mad Dragon] members died. There were only two people left.

Descent of the Dragon was glad that he did not die, and he fixed his attention to the BOSS' last breadth of health. His gaze was fierce and ruthless, as if he wanted to swallow the BOSS whole.

.....

However, at this moment, a massive change suddenly occur!

"Ca!"

A flash of light flashed through and the swordsman, the last member of the [Mad Dragon] guild widened his eyes with shock. He had wanted to avoid the BOSS attack, but he was attacked suddenly from his back and died. It was a fatal attack to his neck!

Descent of the Dragon froze as he discovered the ambusher turned out to be a small skeleton wielding a rusty sword and wearing a shinning armour!

"Ah? Who are you?" Descent of the Dragon hollered.

"Lei Feng!" (TLN: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lei_Feng)

"What the fuck do you want?"

"Bring justice to you on heaven's behalf!"

I smiled brightly, it was a pity that my smile looked sinister. Aih, this skeleton face really didn't do justice on my real life's (somewhat) handsome face.

"Hua!"

The King of Praying Mantis slashed through the air. Descent of the Dragon noticed the incoming attack, and with a small sly smile, he avoided it. The BOSS' attack flew right towards me instead.

"Trying to reap what other has sown?"

I couldn't help but laugh as I slid my feet, avoiding the attack easily. At the same time, my sword struck at Descent of the Dragon's chest!

"72!"

In any case, I was still a level 7 full strength swordsman. Descent of the Dragon had not anticipated that my attack power was that high, nor had he thought that my reaction and battle judgement skills was so high leveled.

"Dammit, go to hell!"

Descent of the Dragon hollered and attacked me once more. I hurriedly dodged it, but unfortunately I still had a one second delay disadvantage. My movement speed was too slow, and I got hit.

"24!"

Descent of the Dragon was stunned at this. His feet hurriedly moved out of the BOSS attacking range as he licked his lips and smiled, "That armour looks good, I shall have it."

I also smiled, "Do you have the ability to take it?"

The two people stood with the BOSS at the centre, utilising their positioning and intercepting skills to make each other enter into the BOSS' range of attack. Descent of the Dragon's reaction and manipulating skills were all very good. With my one second delay disadvantage, killing him was indeed quite difficult.

"Ah!"

Suddenly, my foot slipped and I lost my whole balance.

"Chance!"

Descent of the Dragon acted without thinking much and charged forward, his spear charged towards me like a mad dragon.

I smiled triumphantly. Just a small mistake made you this happy? If it was the game experts on [Chaos Illumination], they would definitely not fall for this trick!

"Ding!"

My sword blocked his spear as I jumped and kicked Descent of the Dragon hard on his shoulders. His whole body trembled as he flew at a beautiful angle, right into the King of Praying Mantis' embrace!

"Ahh! You bastard!"

Descent of the Dragon was shocked beyond compare as he hollered, "I'll find you back, stay here if you are not a coward!"

"Ka Cha!"

The King of Praying Mantis' fatal attack took away Descent of the Dragon's health in a flash, even taking away his newbie spear. With an attack of 0-1, of course I wouldn't have any interest in it.

"Shua!"

A sword suddenly flew towards the BOSS' lower jaw at a tricky angle, powerful as hell!

"Pu Chi!"

"101!"

Indeed, my damage was quite high!

I was not that greedy. I hurriedly retreated after an attack and hid on the fork of a tree. Then, my sword flew across the air like a poisonous snake!

"121!"

Yet another attack at its weak point!

In two minutes, under such a flurry of attack, the King of Praying Mantis was already right at its deathbed. Furthermore, with the defense of a black-tier armour, this Boss could never kill me with one attack. Fortunately I had brought a lot of health potions, hence I could endure its attack!

"Ssss..."

Letting out a pitiful cry, the King of Praying Mantis finally fell to its death.

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations! You have killed the King of Praying Mantis. You have received 7000 experience points and 40 fame!

.....

"Shua!"

I rose two levels in one go, and became level 9. I became number one on the Newbie Village Level Rankings. As Descent of the Dragon died and lost a level back to level 8, he lost his number one position.

Looking at the ground, there was a brightly shining large magic stone with a quality of 98! Haha! I'm gonna be rich!

In addition, a sword shining with a green light laid on the ground. This was the weapon that the King of Praying Mantis had used, but it made my heart thump with excitement.

VW:UUTS Chapter 8 – Undead Powers

Like a tiger pouncing on its prey, or a dog pouncing on its bone, I snatched the green sword on the ground and hugged it to my embrace. I cried with tears on my face, “My little precious, I finally found you!”

[TLN: <http://images2.fanpop.com/image/photos/14000000/Gollum-Smeagol-smeagol-gollum-14076818-960-403.jpg>

Lord of the rings, cave guy]

Afterwards, I equipped the sword in my hands. A green vine twined around the sword hilt as the blade was enveloped in a green light, sharp and shiny. I smiled as I felt the familiar feeling of cold metal on my palms. Looking at the attributes, it was indeed a treasure –

[Green Forest Blade] (Black-tier equipment)

Attack: 10-18

Strength: +4

Required Level: 8

.....

Well done! 18 Attack Points, now I can throw my newbie sword away to the street market. This Green Forest Blade was indeed too powerful. Just by carrying this sword, with the current level in the newbie village, I could already be known as the strongest hero across the mountains and the seas.

However, right at this moment, a bell sounded in the air –

"Ding~!"

System Announcement (Player Descent of the Dragon's Shoutout): Dear friends, I am [Mad Dragon] Guild guildmaster. We found an Undead Legion's monster in the Breaking Dawn Forest just now, a frightening skeleton warrior. It is said to be the newest BOSS monster that had just spawned from one of the newbie villages. The BOSS monster is located at the southern part of the Breaking Dawn Forest. Friends, if you have the strength, come and join us to exterminate him!

He was actually cunning enough to say I was a BOSS monster. He just wanted to borrow others' help to kill me, didn't he?

But I was a player from the Darkness Alliance, even my name would appear as red in front of other players. Forget it, I shouldn't stay here and invite more trouble. My connection with the [Mad Dragon] should end here, there's no need to stir a bigger trouble.

Looking at my experience bar, it's at level 9, 57%. Yeah, let's train to level 10, change my profession and learn some skills first. Since Descent of the Dragon placed me on his Wanted List, then he could go ahead and try to create a ruckus in the newbie villages. I'm not interested in joining the chase.

Wielding the Green Forest Blade, my abilities had increased by a lot. I decided to kill my way through the Breaking Dawn Forest. Collecting the experiences and getting the experience reward from the quest, I should be able to reach level 10.

Then, suddenly, in front of me, a level 10 Green Praying Mantis suddenly charged forward.

I didn't stop to think and swung my sword immediately. With a "Ka Cha" sound, a damage number appeared on top of the green praying mantis head-

"124 ! "

So powerful, my 38-64 attack really did not disappoint me!

A level 10 monster should have around 500 health, I could probably finish it in 4 attacks. The feeling of changing your weapon to a much better one was really refreshing, just like switching from a revolver to a machine gun!

Killing my way through the Breaking Dawn Forest, I ran straight towards my newbie village.

Right around this time, a system announcement suddenly rung-

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Player Wind Dream from newbie village no. 7 has reached level 10 and became the first player to change his profession. He received the rewards: Level +1, Fame +50, and gold!

.....

I was slightly amazed. Well done, how the heck did you hunt that you were able to reach level 10 even faster than me? Indeed, the world of heroes sure was wide and vast, this was the generation where strong powers come forth in large numbers!

Entering the newbie village and finding the Scattered Corpse Village Guard, I reported back the success of my quest. Indeed, I rose to level 10. It was a pity that the System did not give me any recognition and announce it to the whole world. But it was also fine that way. I was not strong enough to be known by the public. Otherwise, some youths from the Radiance Alliance who were blinded by hatred might just attack me in the village. Then they might even nail me on the cross, or put me inside a pig's cage... I really don't want to think about such miserable ends... (TLN: pig's cage)

Arriving at the item store, I took out the Large Magic Stone. The skeleton beauty was immediately stupefied as she shouted, "Little Skeleton, you are so strong! What a powerful Magic Stone. Come, I'm willing to pay 1980 coppers to buy this stone!"

I nodded, and then I proceeded to sell the other 4 small stones I found. With that, 24 silver appeared in my inventory. That amount should be enough to learn a new skill.

Once again, I approached the necromancer that raised me up from the dead. Since he's the Village Head, I should at least pay him my last respects before setting out from the newbie village.

"Little Skeleton, your growth is simply astounding. You made me really happy!"

The Village Head knocked my forehead with his staff and laughed, "Go, there is a much wider and bigger world out there waiting for you. Your next destination is the Floating Ice City. There is a place called the Frozen Mound around 10 li (500 metres) away from the city. Yeah, that will be your new place. You can find an Undead Swordsman Master in the Frozen Mound. Take this recommendation letter from me. The Master will then take you as his disciple with this!"

With a "Pa Da" sound, the recommendation letter I had received straight away entered into my inventory. Indeed, it was the certificate for a job change. From today onwards, I am going to be an honourable, courageous warrior! My dream of living with 'gold and mistresses' as an Undead Swordsman is coming near!

I walked the path towards the Floating Ice City, full of hopes and excitement. That place was a place where dreams come true.

Floating Ice City was one of the nine level 2 cities in the Chinese Servers. Above that would be the three level 3 main cities, but the names of these cities were currently not revealed yet. In the map, the place where the three main cities should have been was also still an empty space.

Basically, all the players from Jiang Su (a province in China) had been all allocated to Floating Ice City. This was the predetermined system by the company.

.....

Opening up the World Map, the Floating Ice City sign had already appeared. It was approximately 30 minutes away from the Scattered Corpse Village. There were a lot of other newbie villages around the Floating Ice City, at least 10 of them. And all of the elite players from this newbie villages will gather in the Floating Ice City. When the time comes, this city would definitely be filled with outstanding heroes and warriors.

I smiled slowly as I carried the Green Forest Blade in my hands. Floating Ice City, you shall be the stage for the revival of "Fallen Dust"!

Following the dusty road, I didn't encounter any danger throughout the journey. However, I saw a troop of NPC soldiers walking past, which I quickly avoided. These soldiers wouldn't even be merciful towards bandits, so they would definitely never let me, a skeleton soldier from the Undead Legion, walk away without a scratch.

"Di!"

The System Announcement appeared in front of me. Good day, Player [Broken Spear]. Since you have not belonged to any faction yet, you can enter both main cities that belonged to Radiance Alliance and the Undead Legion and would not be attacked. However, in a battle area, your attribute will still belong to the demonic attribute!

...

Oh, so that was the case. I could still enter the main city!

However, after a second thought, I decided not to. The NPCs in the main cities would never give a quest to an Undead Swordsman. I should just go to the Frozen Mound and meet the old Master. I might still be able to get some quests there. I would also probably be able to learn a powerful skill!

When I thought about skills, my eyes gleamed with tears. I had killed monsters for one full night without a single skill, and now, at last, I would be able to learn a skill!

I quickly ran forward, leaving the Floating Ice City area and flew into the thick forest nearby. Not far, I suddenly felt a thick air of Undead Energy. The cold wind blew ruthlessly as my destination, the Frozen Mound, appeared in front of me. This was one of the Undead Legion's army camp, there were some Undead Legion troops guarding inside.

"Blub blub..."

There were bubbles coming out from blood-coloured ponds that were placed on both sides of the Frozen Mound. They were filled with remains of bones and flesh. This, could this be the dining hall for the Undead Legion?

Thinking about that, I almost puked out. I would never eat a corpse even if I was beaten to death!

Entering the Frozen Mound, there were a lot of NPCs merchants selling goods along the aisle. The Undead Blacksmith raised his long white bone arms and started beating a piece of iron with an iron hammer, until it was red. The Undead Potion Merchant held bottles in his hands and revealed

a sinister smile. The gleam in his eyes as he looked at me made me run away from that place in fear.

Carefully walking out to the camp borders, the person I wanted to find finally appeared!

An Undead Swordsman clad with a full body of armor finally appeared. He held a sharp sword that gleamed in red light as he looked at the surroundings with her sinister eyes. A line of words appeared on top of his head.

Undead Swordsman Master LV-???

.....

Yes! I finally found my master!

I walked forward and gave him the recommendation letter that the Village Head had given me.

The Master took the letter and read it, then said, "Brat, you are my disciple from today onwards. You must become a courageous and powerful Undead Swordsman. You must remember, we must kill to survive in this world. In order to survive, we can give up on everything. However, the only thing that we cannot give up is our Undead Legion's Honour!"

System Announcement: You have succeeded in learning a skill – Undead Powers!

.....

Quickly opening my skill window, indeed, there was a new passive skill that appeared –

[Undead Powers] (Innate Skill – Level 1): Calls forth the sleeping powers of the dead. Any attack on living things will have an added damage of 5%. The skill's effect will increase with the level of the skill.

I was immediately overjoyed. This skill may not seem that great, however, it was actually very powerful. A level 1 [Undead Powers] could add an additional 5% damage, if I rose to level 100 and trained the skill level to level 10, wouldn't I be able to inflict an additional of 50% damage? Or maybe more?

Overjoyed!

At this moment, the Undead Swordsman master looked at me and laughed, "Brat, you have lots of potential. Now, I will grant you the qualifications of an Undead Swordman!"

"Ding", my job change was finally completed. I had finally became a real Undead Swordsman!

However, the Master suddenly stopped moving. It seemed like he was waiting for me to pay him the price for learning the skills.

I walked forth and opened the Master's chat options. In the middle, an option "Learn Skills" appeared. After choosing this, three skills that could be learnt at this time appeared.

[Basic Sword Mastery]: Increase the critical chance inflicted by swords. One of the basic skills of the Undead Swordsman Profession.

[Corpse Pillage]: Ability to search through a corpse. Maybe you can find extra loots.

[Death Blade]: Attack a target with 110% damage, but critical chance is decreased by 35%.

.....

Not bad, I finally had an active skill. This [Death Blade] seemed to be very strong, it could inflict 10% more damage at level 1. Just that the critical chance will decrease. But that's okay, as long as the attack is powerful and accurate, the critical chance decrease can be made up with additional equipments.

VW:UUTS Chapter 9 – Black Wrist Guard

Every skill ability costs 5 silvers to learn, and I had 24 silvers in my inventory, so I immediately learnt all the skills at once. The skills immediately appeared on my skill window. They were two active skills, one active skill was [Death Blade], the other one was [Corpse Pillage]. Both seemed to be extremely useful.

Swinging my Green Forest Blade, I murmured [Death Blade], and at once, a green light enveloped my blade!

“Pu Chi!”

There was a small trench on the ground from the aftermath of the attack. Hey, the effects of this skill was indeed quite good.

After leaving the Undead Swordsman Master, I roamed about the Frozen Mound for a while. Although I was overjoyed learning the new skills, I didn't start trying them immediately on monsters. Instead, I went to the outskirts of the Floating Ice City, and found five Sentinel Guards camping outside. One of the Sentinel Guards who looked to be the leader, an Undead Swordsman wearing a white armour, was looking at a distance to the Floating Ice City, sighing wistfully in distress.

Yes! There's a quest!

Chest sticking out, I walked forth and said, “Sir, may I help you?”

"Oh, Little Skeleton!"

The Sentinel Guard Leader looked at me and said, "Haven't you seen it? The Graveyard City here is our home, yet a lot of evil spirits had come to invade us. They had actually dared to enter our territory. I suspect that we will have to fight against the Skeleton Master. We have to fight back! Little Skeleton, go forth to the surroundings of the Graveyard City in front, kill 50 Low-Ranked Skeletons and bring 10 Skeleton Fingers to me. You will then receive a huge reward!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have received the quest [Skeleton Fingers]!
(Quest Level: F+)

Quest Description: Near the Graveyard City, kill 50 Low-Ranked Skeleton Soldiers and collect 10 Skeleton Fingers. Then, submit it to the Sentinel Guard Leader Falk to finish the quest.

.....

"Dammit, how could they dare to invade my territory! They are seeking death!"

I brandished my sword, full of spirit. I had subconsciously started to think of Frozen Mound as my own territory.

The place was an abandoned graveyard, the smell of death potent everywhere around. In the forest of stone tablets, every tomb was already

opened and empty as the corpses had already been summoned as an Undead. They had all turned into a member of darkness.

However, even though we were both Undeads, we were separated into different Factions. I had no idea which Faction I belonged to, but at the very least, the Undeads in front of me had already become my enemies.

Under the starlight, deathly white skeletons wander about the graveyard, groaning loudly. So this was what Ghost Call sounded like.

Skeleton Soldier with Shattered Bones – LV 12

.....

Level 12 Skeletons. Alright, let's try fighting it!

I made sudden big strides forward, brandishing my sword that was enveloped in a green light. With a loud sound, I hacked into the Skeleton Soldier's shoulder. [Death Blade]!

"147 ! "

The Skeleton Soldier trembled all over and fall over after staggering backwards. [Death Blade's] power was indeed impressive.

I immediately followed through, my sword brandished again as I unleashed four multiple attacks on the Skeleton Soldier's body. It didn't have a chance to retaliate to my attacks at all. This was the power of

attack rhythm. In VRMMORPGs, the most basic skill you would have to learn was getting the rhythm of attack. Once you have overpowered your opponents with your rhythm of attack, you would definitely win.

Overpowering an opponent with an attack rhythm was actually very easy. When I managed to score an attack with the Skeleton Soldier, it would lose its balance and fell to the ground. At this moment, we should not give it a chance to recover. When it was stumbling to one side, quickly add an attack to push it over. Once it couldn't recover its stability, then it would automatically be our win.

"Cha!"

A sharp rush of sword suddenly pierced through the Skeleton Soldier's eyes, scoring a critical attack!

"228 ! "

What a high damage number! This attack made the level 12 Skeleton Soldier fell to the ground with a groan, giving me 75 exp. Furthermore, a purple flame was left behind, floating in the air as it burned ablaze.

"Eh? What is this?"

I wondered amazedly as I reached out to touch the purple flame. Then, a sound suddenly rung in my ears –

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Would you like to accept this Undead Flame?

.....

It shouldn't be a bad thing. I accepted it immediately!

"Shua!"

The purple flame then entered my chest. At the same time, my whole body felt refreshed, like I had just smoked 1 kilograms of marijuana. I felt reborn.

That's weird, there wasn't any extra experience or special effects, was that flame just for refreshment?

I shook my head regretfully as I murmured, "Forget it...Anyway, I managed to feel refreshed."

I continued to wander around the graveyard. This Skeleton Soldiers with Shattered Bones were regarded as low ranked monsters amongst the Undead. The Undead Flames that they left behind were a little weak. Although I did not know what benefits it would bring me, I still absorbed every single Undead Flame that was dropped. Since it would be waste to leave it alone, I should just eat everything up!

"Ka Cha!"

Another skeleton fell to the ground and dropped a Small Magic Stone.

It should be able to sell for 1 silver.

Picking up the Small Magic Stone, I couldn't help but sigh, "Only a Small Magic Stone dropped within one hour...This kind of drop rate is simply too much..."

However, my experience point had increased by a lot. It had already reached 95% at level 10. I could raise my level to level 11 after killing a few more monsters. Furthermore, I had already collected 9 Skeleton Fingers out of the 10 required ones for the quest. I should be able to finish the quest soon.

Looking at the time, It was 8.30am Beijing Time. It was already in the morning. I had unconsciously played for more than 7 hours, but the results I achieved was not that bad. It was already not bad to be able to leave the newbie village within such a short time, and I still managed to get two black-tiered equipments. At the present stage, I was probably amongst the expert players in the whole server.

Opening the Player Ranking Board, I found that there were already many players flooding the Floating Ice City. Even with my level, it did not manage to enter the top 10 rankings. Damn these people. Indeed, there were a lot of talented players hiding all over the country! Checking the Player Rankings, I was on the 12th spot in the Floating Ice City Ranking Board. The person on the first spot was somebody called [Wind Fantasy], a level 13 warrior. What a frightening leveling speed, he must have made used of some bug!

On the other hand, the player on the second spot was someone called [Ghost Valley], and his profession was a level 11 Undead Knight. It seemed like he was the same type as me.

However, none of the top players in the Floating Ice City managed to enter into the top 10 players of the whole Chinese server. That would mean that I was not even ranked within the top 100 of the Chinese Servers. That was kinda pathetic.

However, I had already thought it through. Levels were only a small part of player's power. There was no need to regard levels as the most important factor. A real expert player would have an extraordinary skill that would be able to kill any top leveled players in an instant, but they would rather stay hidden than be included in the top players Ranking Board.

.....

"Cha!"

My Green Forest Blade split through the wind. Yet another level 12 Skeleton Soldier fell to the ground and dropped a Skeleton Finger and a Small Magic Stone. Furthermore, a golden light suddenly fell onto my body as I finally rose to level 11!

After absorbing the Undead Flame, I immediately went to Frozen Mound to submit my quest. I went to the Sentinel Guard Leader Falk and gave him the 10 Skeleton Fingers.

Falk grasped the fingers and laughed out loud, "Not bad, Little

Skeleton! Those dirty worms finally tasted our powers! Well done, you have safeguarded our pride as the Undead Alliance. Come and receive your reward!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have finished the quest [Skeleton Fingers]. You have received 1200 experience points, 5 fame, and the quest reward [Black Wristguard]!

I was overjoyed. An equipment for a reward, it's my lucky day!

Pa Da!

A black coloured wrist guard appeared in my inventory. It turned out to be an equipment with extra attributes!

[Black Wristguard] (Black-Tier Equipment)

Defense: 8

Strength: +2

Required level: 10

Immediately, I equipped the wrist guard happily. My defense went to 18 points straight away. Now I should be able to qualify as a top warrior, right?

My mouth split wide open into a satisfied laugh. After equipping the wrist guard, my whole arms were covered and protected well. At least now I looked more like a normal person. In the future when my level was higher and I could equip a leg guard and a pair of shoes, with the addition of a helmet or something, nobody would probably be able to guess that I was an Undead.

After all, the path of an Undead was extremely difficult. If I did not cover my whole body with equipment, when people saw my skeleton face, pandemonium would probably break out!

After a short pause, I pulled out my pants and looked again, quietly crying inside.

Anyway, to sum up, why would my level be so far behind?

Firstly, I wasted too much time PK-ing the players in the newbie village. I also wasted too much time killing the Chief Big-Eared Rabbit BOSS. Although the BOSSes gave a lot of experience, it was nothing much.

Secondly, I had a disadvantage with my disability. My three seconds delay was still recovering, and my reaction skills were not that agile currently. It would definitely be a disadvantage when leveling.

Thirdly, I had a problem bugging me in my heart. I couldn't help but to

keep thinking of that person.

.....

What level are you now? My lady boss, He Yi.

VW: UUTS – Chapter 10 – Let Me Live With You

"Huff."

Taking off the helmet gear, I took a deep breath. My body couldn't really endure being up for 8 hrs straight. Or maybe it was because I was buried underground for so long?

Outside, there was a light drizzle. It was rare to see such a gentle rain during summer, that sent people down the nostalgia lane. I was also starting to feel strange inside. A simple rain can cause a ripple in the calm lake of my mind, where had all my determination gone to?

I went downstairs and entered a small noodle shop, shouting, "Boss, give me a bowl of beef noodles with sliced beef; the five dollar a bowl one. Remember to put extra slices of beef in it!"

The boss rolled her eyes at me and swung around, starting to prepare the noodles.

Before long, a hot, steaming bowl of beef noodles was served. The real estate crash three years ago had one good consequence. The food offered by the hawkers and restaurant had become cheaper. People who made a living playing games like me could finally afford to eat meat everyday.

To my chagrin, there were no extra beef slices in my sumptuous meal. The beef slices were simply cut as thin as a piece of paper, dammit!

.....

Finishing off my noodles, including the soup, I rubbed my stomach as I headed back upstairs. I'd been sluggish since morning, so I pretty much fell asleep as soon as my head hit the pillow.

In my dreams, I was lying on a mountain of gold coins. My pillow was a massive Dream Magic Stone, and my mattress was a ton of glittering Amethyst Stones. I held the God-Tier Flaming Sword in my left hand and the God-Tier Cutting Blade in my right. I was also wearing the top-notch Sharp Demon Armor. With my legs crossed one over the other, I shouted to the servants below me, "Gentler. Can't you be a bit more professional?"

"I apologize, Master!"

A girl next to my feet replied with a charming and pleasant voice. The girl was an elf wearing only cloth bandages over her body. She was currently massaging my feet, kneeling before me. Her well-developed and delicate physique could make anyone fall in love with her at first sight. Yeah, I'd be content living days like these!

In a far distance, the Undead Legion's Commander was covered with barbed wire, kneeling on the ground. He trembled all over, shouting out loud, "Chivalrous Hero, please spare my life! I am just trying to make a livelihood. Spare this lowly life and give me a way to survive. I have an eighty year old mother and a baby son who still needs nursing!"

I ordered, "Off with his head!"

Countless Gods descended upon the earth and tore the Undead Legion Commander apart into eighty pieces. The Gods then turned the pieces of the Undead Legion Commander's flesh into a long meat skewer. They divided the barbequed meat amongst themselves and cried out their victories.

At that moment, a delicate voice said in my ear , "Eat a grape, my King...."

Turning around, a purple coloured grape popped into my mouth. The fragrant and sweet flavour burst in my mouth. I raised my head and looked towards the beautiful girl that was feeding me grapes, but the sight of her made me froze with shock. It was the unrivalled beauty that I dreamt of day and night – He Yi!

"Ah?!"

I cried out in shock and immediately sat up, "Lady...Lady boss, why is it you?"

.....

"Lu Chen, damn you! Wake up right now!"

Suddenly blinking my eyes open, I realized that it was all a dream. A person dripping in sweat stood in front of me. This person was Du Shi San, my best friend.

"Shi San, why are you here again?" I asked.

"What, am I not welcome?" Du Shi San patted a large suitcase next to him. There was even a helmet on top of the suitcase. He smiled, "My holidays just began. Being home alone is boring, so I came to live with you. In addition, we can play <Heaven's End> together and level up together. Isn't that great? Haha...."

I looked around the room and said, "This apartment only has a room and a hall, plus there's no AC. Where are you going to sleep?"

"I'll sleep in the hall."

"Then you need to pay for the whole rent...."

"What the heck?! Isn't that too evil?"

Du Shi San rolled his eyes, "Let's stop the small talk. What level are you now? Do you need me to carry you? I'm already halfway through level 9. By this afternoon, I should be able to rise to level 10 and leave the newbie village. Hehe! Brother, with your 3 seconds delay, you should still have gotten to around level 8 right?"

I smiled mysteriously, "Wrong, my current level is——11!"

"What?!"

Du Shi San exclaimed in astonishment, "How is that possible? It was already a marvel that you continued playing with a 3 second delay when

everyone else would have given up, how could you have leveled up so quickly?"

I took a deep breath and said, "Shi San, I need to tell you something."

"Yeah, what?"

"My nerve's reflex delay time has already been reduced to —— 0.7 seconds. I just tried it this morning."

"....."

Du Shi San was completely frozen. Suddenly, like a volcano he erupted with laughter, shaking our surroundings. He was beyond happy, and his entire face flushed red. He suddenly hugged me tightly and laughed, "My brother has returned. Haha, my brother, Luo Chen, has returned!"

I laughed, "Alright, don't get too excited."

"How could I not be excited?" Du Shi San laughed, "My brother has finally returned. Hahaha, the exceptional talent show is just about to begin. Humph, those motherfucking Chaos Illumination bastards were running rampant, doing whatever they want. We two brothers should join hands together, and topple their legendary history. Fighting God? What kind of bullshit is that?

I patted his shoulders and replied, smiling, "Don't be anxious, Chaos Illumination is not within the jurisdiction of Jiangsu Province, hence they wouldn't appear in the Floating Ice City. Furthermore, I still have a 0.7

seconds delay. With such a large reaction time disadvantage, we wouldn't be able to defeat Chaos Illumination currently. Let's stay silent for a while. I am not using my previous ID, so Chaos Illumination won't be able to find me. When the time is ripe, I will collect what they have have owed me plus the interest!"

"Alright, I'll always support you!" Du Shi San patted my shoulders and laughed, "Lu Chen, now that you've reduced your delay to within 1 second, should we go drinking this afternoon to celebrate?"

"No, this afternoon, we'll rush levels. The people who managed to gain levels in the early stage would have a higher advantage. It won't be too late to celebrate after we've established our superiority. Either way, since we are living together, we can drink together at any time!"

"Hahaha, alright. This afternoon, we'll purchase some food rations. Let's struggle hard to level for a week without leaving!"

"k ! "

"Right, let me rush to level 10 in the afternoon. Meanwhile, you should train by yourself. After I leave the newbie village, I'll look for you in Floating Ice City. What's your ID?"

"Fallen Hero!"

"....."

"You?"

"Outstanding Expert!"

"....."

"Damn, Lu Chen you bastard! Don't look at me like that..."

Actually, Shi San was a complete newbie to have chosen such a name. If I had known earlier, I would've changed my ID to "Elegant Pretty Boy".

.....

Around two o'clock in the afternoon, the two friends went to the local supermarket and bought an n number of instant noodles and frozen dumplings. Then, they went to the restaurant downstairs that served Hunan Cuisine. At home, we went online separately. I went online from my bedroom while Shi San went online on the sofa in the living room that he would spend his future days with. Actually, this brat came from a rich family, so he should be able to live a comfortable life. However, he insisted on coming to this doghouse apartment to live with me.

At 3 pm, we went online!

"Shua!"

Darkness filled my view as soon as I got online. However, I knew that I was inside my "home" – a tomb.

That's right, every player had to stay in a safe place before logging off. Otherwise, their safety wouldn't be guaranteed. Some players would buy a simple tent from NPC stores, it only cost 10 copper coins each. It could also be used for a long time. However, the Undead Legion didn't use tents, everyone would sleep inside their tombs.

My tomb was located near the Frozen Mound. The tombstone was a little crooked.

"Sha sha..."

Climbing out of the tomb, I looked at the inscriptions written on the tombstone, full of interest. "Viscount Lu's Grave". Damn, it's no wonder that the tomb was so snug and comfortable, it turned out to be an aristocrat's graveyard!

However, these words were simply too disgusting!

Thus, I pulled out my Green Forest Blade and erased the inscription on the tombstone. At the same time, I wrote, "A single room apartment. Looking for people to co-rent. Please contact for negotiation."

.....

Laughing out loud, I left this comfortable little house. Lifting my sword, I strode towards Frozen Mound to visit the same old Skeleton Leader Falk. Seeing his worried face yesterday, I'm sure that he would still have quests for me.

VW:UUTS Chapter 11 – Ghost Valley

"A ha! Little young skeleton, you're finally back!"

Sentinel Skeleton Guard Falk waved his bony hands, and shouted out happily, "After you killed so many Skeleton Soldiers yesterday, that hidden Undead Leader has finally appeared. Right now, he has gathered a bunch of Skeleton Soldiers in the Graveyard and started to invade us. In order to safeguard our Frozen Mound's honour, go, kill 200 green Skeleton and bring me 20 Green Skeleton Fingers. I promise to give you a bountiful reward!"

I accepted it as fast as my fingers could press the accept button. I rejoiced at the fact that Frozen Mounds has only me as a player. Otherwise, how could such a good quest fall into my hands?

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have received a quest [Green Skeleton]!
(Quest Level F+)

Quest Description: In the Large Cemetery near the Frozen Mound, kill 200 Green Skeletons and collect 20 Green Skeleton Fingers. However, you'll have to beware that the strong Undead Leader has appeared in the Large Cemetery. You are not qualified to be his opponent at all. Should you meet him, you must run away as fast as possible.

Complacently, I thought, humph, kill 200 Green Skeletons, seemed like I would have to hunt for the whole day. Very good, Du Shi San would

probably have left the newbie village by then. When that time comes , I would be able to see how this rookie brother of mine has fared so far.

Approaching the Undead Swordsman Master Su Lun, I tried to see if there was a new skill to be learnt. Disappointedly, I found out there was none. Su Lun only looked at me and guffawed, "Little Skeleton, are you feeling a little hungry? Don't worry, there's a lot of rotting flesh in the Graveyard for you to satisfy your hunger. You can also eat fresh meat if you want to, there are a lot of puny humans outside Floating Ice City, hahaha!"

Hungry?

I immediately thought of the rotting pond outside Frozen Mound, that was definitely the Undeads' dining hall!

Damn! My stomach couldn't help but twitch. It was so disgusting – I swore to never eat corpses!

However, seeing my status, I realised that I had hunger attribute. I saw that my hunger attribute was at 71 points, so I can probably last for a while more. If my hunger went below 20 points, my character's status would be decreased by a whole lot. At that time, I would have to eat something no matter what!

Whatever, it's not like I'll starve to death. I should go level up first!

I exited Frozen Mound and directly went to the Large Cemetery. The monsters here had already changed, it was not the level 12 Shattered

Skeletons, but it was a type of Undead Skeleton that emitted a green light – Green Skeleton – Lv15.

Not bad, a level 15 monster would probably be too hard for a level 11 like me to fight, but I had three black-tier items, the Glimmering Breastplate, Black Wrist Guard and Green Forest Blade. I should be able to stand my ground!

Walking around the perimeters, I found that the monsters in the southern part were a little bit scarce, suitable for a solo like me to train.

I approached the Green Skeleton soundlessly and ambushed them in an instant.

"[Death Blade]!"

With a shout, I executed my skills and a green light enveloped my sword. I pierced the Green Skeleton right on its shoulders!

"157 ! "

Not bad, my attack power is very sharp!

I quickly swung another two normal attacks. Although the damage number was not as high as [Death Blade], but it was still fine.

"Hou!"

The Green Skeletons growled menacingly as it suddenly struck back. It was still a high-leveled monster.

"Pu!"

The Green Skeleton's sword pierced through my chest. Pity, I am an awesome skeleton, you weren't able to pierce through my heart!

"94!"

As a large damage number appeared, I turned serious. At level 11, my full health was only 230 points. I will die if I take on three head on attacks from the Green Skeleton. Alright, this kind of skeleton would usually have a large attack power but their movement and attack speed would be far less inferior than a normal person's. This was one of my attack strategies – Defeat the slow with speed!

"Cha cha cha!"

With splendid footwork, I drew a "z" on the ground and positioned myself around the Green Skeleton. It let out a roar as it turned around, but his movement speed was extremely slow. By the time it tried to attack me, I had already moved to its other side. With this strategy, I managed to reduce the Green Skeleton's health to less than 25%.

From the beginning till the end, the Green Skeleton only managed to attack me twice, while I managed to defeat it within 7 strikes of my sword!

With a loud groan, the first Green Skeleton had died in my hands. My experience increased by a huge margin, and to top it all, it seemed like the Green Skeleton was going to a wedding party with a gift, it had unexpectedly dropped a Small Magic Stone of 98 quality points and a Green Skeleton Finger!

Tidying my profits, I picked up my loots and threw it into my inventory. Then, I continued to look for another lone Green Skeleton.

As I hunted the monsters, I opened the Floating Ice City's Player Ranking Board. To my surprise, I, despite being a level 11 player, had fallen to the 127th rank. What crazy people! There must be a lot of crazy people who trained non-stop while I was sleeping. This kind of levelling rush was simply too much.

Wind Fantasy, who had been ranked first when I logged out, was now 5th. He had reached level 14, so he should have logged out and be resting. On the other hand, the first place was now replaced by the player who had been ranked second previously, Ghost Valley. This Undead Knight was simply too powerful, he had even risen to level 16. What a levelling maniac!

I involuntarily laughed. Yeah, I should relax a little. Levels were only temporary, actually, I should be able to level up quickly killing these Green Skeletons. I think I could level to level 14 or 15 once I finished this quest. In the early stage, levels are important, but equipments are also equally important. Without a good equipment, even an expert player would only be an empty shell.

Furthermore, I had noticed a familiar ID in the Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board – Blazing Sun. That's right, it was Xu Yang, one of the Four

Elders of the Ancient Sword Dream Guild, the strongest member of the guild.

A year ago, He Yi had established the Ancient Sword Dream Guild and invited expert players from all over the Chinese Server. Xu Yang and I were invited almost at the same time. With the addition of two others, the four of us had became Ancient Sword Dream's "Sun Moon Star Dust" four elders. Xu Yang's ID was Blazing Sun, representing the Sun in the title, while mine was Fallen Dust, representing the Dust.

As time went by, Ancient Sword Dream Guild had slowly declined as we were annihilated by top-notched guilds such as [Chaos Illumination]. After we disbanded our guild, there were only five people left, the Guild Master He Yi and the four of us, "Sun, Moon, Star, Dust". Thinking about it again, it was such a lamentable story.

Who would know that Xu Yang had unexpectedly appeared in the Floating Ice City and was ranked 21st on the Player Ranking Boards? If nothing goes wrong, he would be able to reclaim the Ancient Sword Dream's former glory!

I couldn't help but feel a sense of pride in my heart. Dreaming about He Yi's beautiful looks, I involuntarily laughed out loud, "Boss, my reaction delay is only 0.7 seconds right now! Just wait and see, I promise to make Ancient Sword Dream a guild unparalleled Under the Sky!"

I resolved to make a name for myself in the Floating Ice City, then I would return to the Ancient Sword Dream Guild and recreate the history together with He Yi!

Another Green Skeleton met its death at my hands. Absorbing its Undead Flame, I refreshed myself. Suddenly, I realized that I had not tried using a skill – [Corpse Pillage]!

That's right, this [Corpse Pillage] was a skill that could only be used on corpses. Maybe I could unintentionally receive more loot.

Bending down, I stretched out my five fingers as a green light started emitting out of my bony, white skeleton palm. Then a "ding!" suddenly rung out. I had managed to excavate an item!

[A Piece of Damaged Cotton]

Quality: Inferior

Usability: None

.....

Damn! It was a complete rubbish! I immediately threw the Damaged Cotton liked I was pitching a baseball, and continued to look for another target.

Afterwards, I tried using [Corpse Pillage] every time I killed a monster. Of course, although these Green Skeletons gave bountiful experience, they gave very little profit. 95% of them would only give me Damaged Cotton, 5% of them gave me nothing.

After hunting for an hour, almost 100 Green Skeletons had died in my hands. My level had also risen to level 13 at 47% experience. Such a leveling speed was indeed so awesome!

"Ka Cha!"

Another Green Skeleton died again. After absorbing its Undead Flame, I continued using [Corpse Pillage]!

"Ding!"

My eyes lighted up as I actually extracted an item!

[Large Magic Stone]

Quality: 41

.....

Oh my God, it was a Magic Stone?!

Immediately, I laughed so hard that my mouth almost tore apart. Magic Stones were equivalent to gold, and gold was the origin of life! This was definitely a good skill. Wait until the right time when the game had developed enough, selling these Magic Stones would definitely provide me with a good living expenses!

Large Magic Stones could be sold for 1-20 silvers, and at the present stage, silvers were still a rare commodity. I had read in the forums that a lot of newbies came out from their newbie villages to enter their designated big cities, but they only had 1 to 2 silvers on them. In the end, they couldn't even learn their profession skills and had to scavenge

outside the city hunting for Magic Stones.

Magic Stones drop rate was not high. I had only gotten two stones after killing more than 100 Green Skeletons. If [Corpse Pillage] could extract Magic Stones, then I would have a godly skill that would allow me to become a millionaire.

After a moment of rejoicing, it was time to continue my leveling!

In a distance not far from where I was, a lone Green Skeleton was staggering as it roamed around. I approached it slowly. Just as I was about to attack it, unexpectedly, a chill ran through my back!

Something's wrong!

"Pu Chi!"

I felt a searing pain on my back. I quickly checked my health. It had actually dropped by 207 points, I was almost killed in one shot!

Reacting quickly, I immediately rolled my body on the ground and ran away as fast as I could. At the same time, I turned my head to look at my assaulter. To my horror, a two-metre tall Undead Leader had suddenly appeared at the position I was in a few moments ago. I couldn't see its level at all, as the difference in level between the monster and I were too high. However, its attack power was too powerful. Even with two black-tiered equipments on my body, I had almost been killed in one attack. If it was another person, they would have been dead.

"Hiss..."

The Undead Leader let out a loud roar, seemingly discontented with me, an "intruder" in his presence. Looks like he had marked this place as his territory.

No wonder the quest had warned me to run away from the Undead Leader if I ever met him. It seemed like this toy was not something that I could defeat with my current abilities. I guessed that it was at least a level 20 bastard. Throwing such a strong bastard into novice villages, wouldn't it become the great dictator of all here?

Continuing on, I carefully continued to kill the Green Skeletons. To me, the most important thing right now was to level up and get Magic Stones.

In a blink of an eye, another hour has passed. My level has rose to level 14 at 58% experience. It looks like I would be level 15 when I finished the quest. Indeed, my leveling speed was extremely efficient!

Counting the amount of Skeleton Fingers in my inventory, I realised I only had 19. I lacked one more.

.....

Looking around, I found a reckless Green Skeleton who decided to roam around alone on its own, not far from me.

I snickered happily and charged towards it with my sword. However, in

that moment, I felt another person's presence and I quickly dove into the bushes nearby.

In the forest, another Undead had appeared. It was an Undead wearing a Golden Armor with a Light Blue Spear in his hand. The skeleton's face looked sinister and malevolent as a line of words floated above the top of its head.

Ghost Valley – Lv.18 Undead Knight

.....

VW:UUTS Chapter 12 – Iron Bear

Damn! Is that the Floating Ice City's first ranker?

My eyes glinted with killing intent.

Visitors always come with bad intentions. Ghost Valley looked at the surroundings, then glared at the place I was hiding and hollered, "Brat, come out now!"

Indeed, the saying "Those with good intentions will not come, but those with bad intents will." was indeed true. This Ghost Valley had come for me.

There was no reason to retreat. Following a "sha sha" sound, I came out from the bushes and glared coldly at Ghost Valley. I laughed rather sinisterly, "Brother, what do you want?"

"Cheh! Who's your brother?"

Ghost Valley stared at me coldly, looking extremely arrogant as he said dismissively, "Tsk tsk... A level 14 dared to train in this place, aren't you too ambitious?"

I waved my hands and laughed, "So so, I guess."

"Are you Floating Ice City's third?" Ghost Valley coldly asked.

I followed through quickly, "You are the one who said that. But I wouldn't be satisfied with just third."

"Aren't you an arrogant one!"

Ghost Valley raised his long spear and shouted at me, "This Frozen Mound is only large enough for one Undead Player. Come, let's duel, the loser shall be kicked away from this Frozen Mound!"

I shook my head and said, "Time is precious. I don't have time to waste for PK."

"What did you say?"

Ghost Valley was furious beyond belief as he shouted, "Is this the attitude that a strong person should have? Looks like you, brat, are only a noob who don't have the courage to fight a single battle!"

I raised my brows immediately and coldly replied, "Oh really? Then let's give it a go, I'll finish you in a minute!"

"Haha, don't be too boastful now!"

Ghost Valley laughed out loud, brandished his spear and charged forward. A red glow enveloped his spear as he executed the Magic Knight's first skill – [Flaming Thrust]!

"Sha sha..."

Grass flew in the air as I suddenly shifted my feet to another position. My body turned a whole circle like a swing, avoiding Ghost Valley's [Flaming Thrust] attack. A beautiful "MISS" sign appeared, making him freeze in astonishment!

"Damn..." Ghost Valley opened his mouth wide, "Avoiding with footwork? How...How could this be?"

I didn't speak at all, my Green Forest Blade glowed with a green light as it went down fast like lightning –

"[Death Blade]!"

With a "peng", Ghost Valley was pushed back a few steps, blood dripping from his body.

"184 ! "

Indeed, the Magic Knight profession really lived up to its name by having the most defense and health. Otherwise, I could probably kill him with one attack.

"I don't believe I couldn't defeat you!"

Ghost Valley turned out to be an extremely stubborn person as he dashed to attack me again. This time, he adopted the strategy of attacking me from the side. His long spear split the wind as it flew

towards me, it was extremely hard to avoid!

Since the opponent was using a normal attack that did not require a cooldown time, I couldn't avoid that attack at all, having the disadvantage of a 0.7 seconds delay. I could only grit my teeth as I received his attack.

Of course, I'm not someone who would keep quiet when beaten. In the moment that Ghost Valley had executed his attack, I had also charged forward with my blade towards him. I'm going to give it my all!

"95 ! "

"179 ! "

The two of us exchanged our blades, but it was Ghost Valley's loss. His defense was so much more inferior to mine. His armor looked like a white-tiered equipment that has no added attribute. It should have a defense of around 7 points.

"Eh..." Ghost Valley sucked in a sharp breath as he saw that there wasn't even 10 points left in his health. He looked at me disbelievingly, "This... How could this have happened?"

I laughed coldly, and inflicted my last attack.

"You can still stay at Frozen Mound. This is a big training ground, it should be enough for two people to train in. But you must not disturb me by all means, otherwise, I will kill you straight away every time I see you!"

I moved my Green Forest Blade and swept it past Ghost Valley's neck. His eyes opened wide with shock as he slowly fell to the ground, his soul released from his body.

He dropped two small health potions. I picked them up and looked at Ghost Valley's corpse. My heart felt calm despite having killed another. Everyone should take responsibility of their own actions. This was a lesson for Ghost Valley's arrogance.

.....

Continuing to level, I killed four more Green Skeleton before finally getting the 20th Skeleton Finger. I could finish my quest now!

I was about to happily go back to Frozen Mound when Ghost Valley's corpse suddenly stood back up. His soul had returned and he revived. However, his level went down to level 17.

Coldly looking at me, Ghost Valley showed a dissatisfied expression as he said, "Next time. I will win our next duel!"

I nodded and laughed, "I'll welcome a duel with you anytime. Oh right, I'm staying at the left side of District 1, b1 tomb in the graveyard outside Frozen Mound. You are welcome to visit if you have time!"

Ghost Valley froze, "I lived at b2..."

Oh, so we were neighbours.

I couldn't help but laughed out, "We should keep in touch more in the future!"

"Yeah!"

Ghost Valley nodded, and I could see now that although he may be proud and aloof, it was not to an unreasonable degree. In fact, he could even be considered a talent. At the very least, since the opening of the server, he had been training and levelling non-stop. This person's endurance and courage could be considered to be amongst the Floating Ice City's top three!

Actually, there would be a group of people who trained a crazy amount of time in every game. After mixing within the Virtual Reality community for so many years, I was not surprised to see such a crazy player any more.

Going back to Frozen Mound, I looked for the Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk and handed 20 Skeleton Fingers to him. He immediately received the quest items and patted on my shoulder, laughing out loud, "Hahaha, you are really a blessing for us, Little Skeleton. You have proven your courage and skills once again. Come and receive your reward that belonged rightfully to you!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have finished the quest

[Green Skeleton]. You received 2200 experience points, +21 Fame and also the Quest Reward: [Green Bone Fan]!

.....

My eyes lighted up as I saw the equipment reward! I hurriedly open my inventory. Indeed, a fan glowing in green was quietly lying in the corner of my inventory. I immediately took it out and the fan's item properties was displayed right in front of me –

[Green Bone Fan] (Black-tier)

Attack: 15-24

Stamina: +2

Tactics: +1

Required Level : 15

.....

Holding the fan, I was a little speechless. Fans were Tactical Weapons, hence they would usually fare less in their attack power. However, this fan had actually had such a high attack power, even more than my Green Forest Blade. It was such a waste.

Other than adding one point to Stamina, this fan also added 1 point to Tactics. What a powerful weapon!

Having read through the <Heaven's End>'s website, I knew that Tactics could be used in a party. When a player created a party, the Party Leader

would be able to make use of their Tactical Skills, for example – [War Dance], a skill that increases the party's attack strength by 5%. However, the Party Leader would need their Tactics Attribute to be more than 20 points. Tactical Skills were also known as Commander Skills. When a player's level was high enough, Tactical Skills would be a deciding factor to determine whether he could be a Commander in a war or a battle. Every strong parties would need a strong Commander as their leader.

Furthermore, amongst <Heaven's End> professions, a Tactician would be the primary users of Tactical Skills, because Tacticians would have a one point growth in Tactics every time they level up. This was incomparable to other professions. A level 20 Tactician would have 20 Tactics points. Even without any equipment, they would be able to utilise [War Dance], Iron Wall (Increases the party's defense by 5%) and other Tactical Skills.

Seems like this Green Bone Fan's worth would only be realised in a Tacticians' hands!

I immediately threw the Green Bone Fan into my inventory. If I had time later, I should go to Floating Ice City and sell this Green Bone Fan. Only then would I have some money to buy potions.

Then, I looked up at Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk. This guy seemed to have something else to say, his face looking grim and worried. He patted my shoulders and said in a low voice, "Little Skeleton, I have to tell you a bad news. Just half a day ago, an outstanding scout from Frozen Mound, Sache, was murdered in the Frozen Alley. I have not seen his corpse yet, but I have heard from the rumours that Sache had died from an Iron Bear attack. I hope that you could go to the Frozen Alley and kill that heinous Iron Bear. Remember to bring its head back to me."

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have received the quest [Iron Bear]! (Quest Level: F+)

Quest Description: Go to Frozen Alley, kill the Iron Bear and bring its head back to the Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk.

.....

It was another hunting quest that I cheerfully accepted.

Opening the map, I looked for the location of the Frozen Alley and found that it was the road that led to Floating Ice City from the Frozen Mound. The road was quite dangerous as this was one of the focal territory fought over by the Radiance and Darkness Alliance. There would probably be a lot of dispute here in the future.

I spent 1 silver to repair all of my equipments. The cost of repairing three black-tier equipments was really high!

Selling all of my magic stones and tidying up my inventory, I was ready to journey into the Frozen Alley.

After walking for around for ten minutes, a foul stench whiffed up my nose. Oh my, there was a headless Skeleton Soldier's corpse right in front of me!

I walked forward and discovered that it was a half-rotting Undead soldier, the secret scout Sache. He was indeed an unlucky chap. Not only was his corpse headless, his chest was broken to pieces and he gave out a strong rotting smell. That Iron Bear had actually eaten bones, wouldn't it suffer from indigestion? Otherwise, it must be living on a special diet.

Standing up, I looked around at the surroundings and immediately absorbed the Secret Scout Sache's Undead Flame. His weak tinder flame would at least provide me with plenty of Undead Flame.

"There!"

My eyes turned sharp as I pulled out my sword and quickly charged into the forest. Indeed, a huge bear was roaming just in front of the tree ahead. Although it wasn't a BOSS, but its level was extremely high – Thorny Iron Bear – Lv.20!

My heart twitched for a moment, then I swiftly cursed at the Frozen Mound's Sentinel Skeleton Leader, "Falk!"

I looked at my current level – level 15. Picking a fight with a level 20 monster would be a harsh fight. My equipments were all level 10 or below, after all. I couldn't ride on my early stage advantages anymore.

However, I could only endure this challenge and pray for Heaven's protection to defeat this Iron Bear!

"He!"

My figure swept past, suddenly appearing right behind the Iron Bear as I fiercely pierced my sword into its back!

"Ca!"

Amazingly, my Green Forest Blade let out sparks of fire and did not manage to cut through the Iron Bear's body.

"21 ! "

A pathetic number floated up in front as if to ridicule me. Alas, the Iron Bear immediately turned around, angry at being attacked, letting out a loud roar as it charged towards me.

I regretted my actions thoroughly. What an idiot! Iron Bear's defense would naturally be as hard as an iron, why am I still so stupid and tried to attack it from its back? I'm an idiot!

I hurriedly retreated back, but I still couldn't avoid one of its attack. My health immediately dropped by 107 points.

I waited for the right moment and thrusted my Green Forest Blade out like a poisonous snake, targeting the Iron Bear's eyes!

"Pu Chi!"

Fresh blood gushed out, I managed to break its defense by a whole

margin!

"189 ! "

Tsk, attacking an enemy's weak point was indeed a refreshing feeling.

My feet slipped away skillfully to the right side as I twisted my sharp sword and fiercely pierced them into the Iron Bear's mouth. Blood gushed out again immediately as I made a critical attack, 157!

Iron Bear's full health was at the most one thousand, I was doing quite well!

Grabbing a potion and gulping it down, I immediately moved away from the Iron Bear. This monster's attack power was extremely high. However, its attacking speed was not that fast. Technically, I should be able to defeat it with my footwork control.

VW:UUTS Chapter 13 – Asura

Notes:

Lu Chen (the MC) belonged to the Departed Spirit Faction. The author has only used Departed Spirit but it sounded weird so I thought it was the same as Undead Alliance. Turns out under Undead Alliance, there were different kinds of factions, e.g. the Departed Spirit, Bone Spirit etc. It will be explained later on in the chapter.

Night fell and the Frozen Alley was soon covered with frost. The moonlight reflected off the snowy ground Under the moonlight, the whole ground was white as snow, like it had been covered with snow.

“Pa Ca!”

The sound of sharp blade cutting through flesh echoed through the silent forest. The intense battle in the forest was still continuing.

With a “gu dong”, I downed another bottle of health potion and stared resolutely at the Iron Bear’s and my own health bars. My mouth involuntarily thinned into a grim smile. Although my smile looked sinister, it was still a sincere smile from my heart.

As I rained a combo of attacks on the Iron Bear, I could finally foresee its demise. With my current attack speed and my footwork control, killing this Iron Bear was a cinch.

“Pu Chi!”

My Green Forest Blade pierced straight into the Iron Bear's skull. A large damage number appeared – 284!

It was a killing strike. The Iron Bear let out a loud groan as blood spurted out from his head, and collapsed to the ground.

A large Magic Stone bounced out from the Iron Bear's corpse. Furthermore, it also dropped a green coloured Leg Guard, which made me extremely excited. It dropped an equipment! I am really striking it rich today!

Immediately, I examined my loots. I had received a Large Magic Stone with a quality of 57 points, it could be exchanged for 11 silvers! The green-coloured Leg Guard, on the other hand, was a leather armour.

[Bear Leather Leg Guard] (Black-tier)

Defense: 7

Agility: +2

Required Level: 15

.....

Tsk tsk, leather armors' defense was indeed much inferior to heavy armors'. However, this additional two points on agility could probably be converted into 0.1% increase in movement speed and 0.2% of dodging rate. Anyway I didn't have a leg guard equipped currently, I should just wear it first and gain the extra 7 points in defense.

"Shua!"

With a flicker of light, the Bear Leather Leg Guard immediately appeared on my legs. Yeah, there was no need for these wonderful and beautiful legs to be exposed to public any more.

"Eh...?"

I cried softly, as I felt something wrong in my body. There seemed to be something wriggling in my leg bones and ribcages. What the heck was that? Was it a maggot?

Frantically taking off my armor, I looked at it closely. It wasn't a maggot, but a piece of blood-red, human flesh sticking out from my ribs. What kind of situation is this?

With the question still unanswered, I immediately chopped off the Iron Bear's head. I shall think about it again after I go back to Frozen Mound and submit the quest!

.....

"Ah ha, Little Skeleton. You are indeed brave without compare. You are a promising bright star amongst the Undeads!"

The Sentinel Skeleton Leader sung my praises and rewarded me with huge experience points that boosted my level to 16. Once again, I had managed to enter the top 100 of the Floating Ice City's Player Ranking Board. I was the 97th. In the early stage, the rankings in the Player Ranking Board changed at an unbelievable rate. Wind Fantasy, who

topped the list yesterday, had also dropped below the top 100. I guess he would be weeping tears of blood when he woke up later on.

Looking at my accomplishment of reaching level 16, I happily looked for the Undead Swordsman Master Su Lun and asked, "Master Su Lun, why don't we annihilate the Undead Leader in the Graveyard? It is our biggest threat right now!"

"Don't be too anxious, Little Skeleton!" Su Lun replied with heartfelt words, "You are not strong enough currently. What if that Undead Leader killed you and absorbed your Undead Flame? Then we, the Frozen Mound would have lost a valiant and brave little Skeleton Swordsman..."

"Damn!" I quietly cursed. Then, I asked again, "Master, is there any use for an Undead's Undead Flame? I have absorbed quite a lot of them."

"Oh, that thing..." Su Lun placed his hands akimbo as he laughed out loud, "The Departed Spirit is one of the core factions amongst the Undead Alliance. The higher the level of an Undead, the higher ranked it would be. In addition, the Undead Race is a race that feeds on each other. If you absorbed sufficient Undead Flame, you would be able to evolve to an even higher ranked Undead Swordsman."

"Higher ranked?"

"Yes!" Su Lun nodded and said, "You are currently a little Skeleton Swordsman. But if your body started to grow flesh, it would serve as a proof that you had started to advance in rank and become a Bone Spirit."

"Is the Bone Spirit the highest ranked of the Undeads?"

"No, it is still one of the weaker races. Above Bone Spirits, there are still Bone Spirit Leader, Bone Spirit Commander and these other monsters that rely purely on physical attack. When a Departed Spirit gained enough strength, hehe, his flesh would completely grow out, and he would be no different than a human being. That state is called – Asura!"

My jaw dropped, immediately looking forward to the future, "Haha, no different than a human being? Then...then wouldn't I be able to enter Floating Ice City as and when I please to pick up girls?"

Undead Swordsman Master Su Lun threw me a disdainful look, "Brat, are you ever going to grow up? When you have evolved into Asura, would you even worry about not being able to have women? An Asura's strength is extremely powerful, far more powerful than your wildest imaginations. I tell you, an Asura's strength could rival a whole empire's, it's an existence equivalent to a King. Furthermore, above Asura, you could still evolve into King Asura, God Asura...Aish, these are the realms that both you and I could never attain in our lives!"

I yearned to become an Asura even more. "An existence like a King? Oh my, then wouldn't that be...then wouldn't I be able to establish a new Kingdom and choose three thousand beauties to serve my harem...? HAHAHA!"

(TLN: Chinese emperors are known to have 3000 women in his harem)

Su Lun looked at me with disgust as he grunted, "Stinky brat, just train diligently and don't let other Night Spirits absorb your Undead Flame. In

the future, maybe you would have the opportunity to step into the realm of Asura. In any case, it will be impossible for me to do it."

.....

Even After bullshitting for the whole day, I could not manage to get another quest. There was no other way, I should probably grind levels. The leveling speed shouldn't be too slow. There were originally only a few quests available in <Heaven's End>. I had been fortunate enough to receive quests continuously in Frozen Mound probably because I was one of the few players training here. Players in the Floating Ice City, on the other hand, might not even know what a quest look like even at level 15!

Selling off the Large Magic Stone in my inventory, after struggling for a few hours, I managed to gain a 27 silvers profit. I could probably pass off as a little millionaire!

Examining my equipments I found that I had a Wrist Guard, Armor, Leg Guard and a Weapon. Everything was black-tiered, a newbie set of equipment. This was indeed the age of black-tiered equipments, where the owner of black-tiered equipments would have the most power. However, I could probably go to Floating Ice City with this set of equipments.

In the forums, there was quite a lot of players who were dealing in equipments. An armour or Wrist Guard that added +2 Strength could probably be sold for \$100, especially because there was very little amount of equipment with extra attributes available in the early stages of the game. Furthermore, the Floating Ice City Armour Store only provided newbie white-tiered equipments, which was much inferior to black-tiered equipments.

From this, it could be seen that the equipment I wore on my whole body currently was worth at least \$400. But this was just a conservative estimate. My Green Forest Blade alone might even be worth \$400, there were scarcely any equipments with extra attributes available in the early stages of the game!

After some thoughts, I decided to visit the Floating Ice City. As a player who was designated to the Floating Ice City, there was no reason for me to not visit it.

En route to the Floating Ice City, I passed through the Frozen Alley. I went into the forest alone and avoided level 20 monsters that crossed my path. After twenty minutes, I arrived at the edge of the forest on the outskirts of Floating Ice City. My name was still marked in red and it could not be hidden. If another player saw this, they would definitely think that I was a Chaotic Player.

From a far distance, the majestic metropolis Floating Ice City appeared in my view. It looked like, of the four seasons, the city experienced winter alone. Its walls were covered with snow and the Imperial Palace looked solemn, like it was frozen in time. The base of the city looked like a floating block of ice. This was also the reason for Floating Ice City's name.

I cautiously followed the trail out of the forest. When I was about only a hundred metres away from the City Gates, I immediately charged forward, dashing into the city a hundred metres in 8 seconds. The moment I stepped into the city, my name naturally turned a healthy green colour. This made me feel very happy as I would not need to sneak any more.

.....

Arriving inside the city, there was not many players on the city plaza. Everyone looked to be in a hurry as this was still the second day of the start of the game. They were all busy training and getting equipments, who would have the time to idly sit here?

I stuck out like a sore thumb standing still in the middle of the city plaza as I took out the Green Bone Fan from my inventory and shouted, "Selling level 15 black-tiered Fan, attack 24, stamina +1, tactics +1. It's a must have item for any adventurers, a powerful killing weapon. It can be used by Tacticians and Priests. It is fashionable and suitable for female players. Those who have wives can take a look at it for a while, those who do not can buy it for others' wives too. Come quickly and take a look!"

My shout invited a crowd of people who flooded towards me from all directions. Very quickly, more than ten people had surrounded me and spoke altogether –

"Damn! Someone has gotten a level 15 weapon already. What a powerful item, it actually has 24 attack! So strong...my own weapon only has 1-3 attack..."

"Heavens, this weapon is so strong! I didn't thought that someone could get a weapon that adds to the Tactics attribute this early in the game!"

"Why does this seller look so weird?"

"Not weird, it's just a skeleton that has grown a little bit of flesh."

"....."

Looking at the crowd bustling with excitement, I shouted out, "Is there anyone who wants it? I will immediately sell it straight away if the price is right. Call out your bids or lose this chance forever!"

Immediately, someone replied, "2 silvers, would you sell?"

I opened my eyes wide, "You won't get it so cheap even at a NPC stores!"

The crowd immediately burst into laughter. At this moment, a level 16, youthful looking Tactician came forward and sincerely replied, "I only have 11 silvers after putting together all three of us had. I know the amount won't be enough, that's why I would be willing to add this into the deal. If you think we can have a deal, then we can trade straight away. Otherwise, can we still be friends?"

Saying that, he took out a black coloured boots, his gaze falling on my gorgeous white bony legs. What he meant could not be clearer.

I looked at the boots. Hmm, it's not bad. It's a black-tier equipment although the level was a little low.

[Porcupine's Boots] (Black-tier)

Defense: 12

Stamina: +3

Required Level:10

.....

My eyes lit up immediately. The major advantage of these boots was that it added 3 points to stamina. This would convert to 30 health points. I was a swordsman with a full strength build, adding all 5 points immediately to strength whenever I level up. What I lacked the most was health.

Thinking it out, a Green Bone Fan would not be of any use to me. This person had offered a level 10 boots with 11 silvers to trade with me. I guess it was more or less a good deal.

Thus I nodded my head and smiled happily, "Alright! Brother, you are a really nice person!"

"Alright!"

The other party was also elated. The Tacticians did not have a strong attacking power in the beginning after all. If he had a weapon that has a 24 attack, he would have conquered his own weakness, and would not be ridiculed or feel embarrassed in his party.

After the deal was done, I received 11 silvers and a black-tiered boots to boot. At long last, I could cover my whole body.

Wearing the Porcupine Boots, my defense immediately rose to 37 points and my health also rose to 310 points. My survivability had

advanced by leaps and bounds!

After the deal, I happily went out from the Floating Ice City. I had not even taken a step out from the city when a cold voice called out to me from right behind me. "Brat, are you just going to leave like that?"

UUTS Chapter 14 – Arrogant Mad Dragon

Under the copper-coloured city walls, a row of five people stood on top of the Floating Ice City bridge. Their names looked familiar. Each person's ID had "Mad Dragon" written as a prefix. The person standing right in front was Descent of the Dragon, the first enemy I made in <Heaven's End>. After our battle in the Breaking Dawn Forest, I didn't expect to meet him here again.

Descent of the Dragon was full of dissatisfaction as he glared at the Green Forest Blade in my hands. He coldly laughed, "If I am not mistaken, the black-tiered Green Forest Blade is ranked seventh on the Floating Ice City Weapon Ranking. You must have gotten this sword from the Green Praying Mantis King, right?"

I didn't deny it, and raised my brows, "That's right, what about it?"

"What about it?!" Descent of the Dragon gritted his teeth and angrily retorted, "Leave your Green Forest Blade behind, and maybe I'll let you go alive. Otherwise, don't even dream of continuing to live your life in Floating Ice City."

I couldn't help but smile disappointedly, "You are joking right? Whether or not I stay in Floating Ice City, it shouldn't be something for you to decide."

Descent of the Dragon suddenly laughed out, his handsome face almost distorting immediately, "Really? Today, I shall let you know whether it is my decision or not!"

Descent of the Dragon roared in anger, "Brothers, exterminate this filthy Undead!"

Immediately, every single one of the [Mad Dragon]'s member took out their weapons. One of the bards in the group took out a bamboo flute and played a broken tune. Immediately, a pillar of green light fell on Descent of the Dragon. It was the bards' beginner skill – Iron Soldier! This was a type of support skill that increases the target's hit rate!

.....

A large group of players had gradually come to a halt at the entrance. The uprising here had attracted a crowd of players. Many of the players were even pointing at me, secretly whispering to each other —

"Damn! This Undead is hiding a red name!"

"What, aren't Undeads one of the faction that we are against? Why would this brat come to Floating Ice City?"

"Kill him! Maybe he will drop the Floating Ice City's seventh ranked weapon..."

.....

The situation was not in my favour. If I continued to delay, I'd probably be unable to retreat.

With a confident stride, I reached out my hands towards the east as I shouted loudly, "Look, an UFO!"

Everyone suddenly raised their heads and looked towards the direction I pointed at.

Seizing the opportunity, I rushed out of the city without looking back. The members moved quickly, and Descent of the Dragon immediately caught up. Although he was a Magic Knight, his current level was still low. Hence, he didn't have a mount, and had no way of catching up to me.

Descent of the Dragon was beyond furious. The 25 year-old-ish spoiled young master of a rich family widened his eyes in fury as he shouted out loud, "Brothers, this brat is extremely cunning. Let's go! We'll enter the Frozen Forest together, and take back that black-tiered weapon that was originally ours!"

Thus, over twenty people were suddenly hot on my tail.

In the forums of Floating Ice City in the Chinese Servers, the name of the [Mad Dragon] guild was extremely well-known. They were also referred to as the Floating Ice City's strongest guild. Looks like this reputation was not based on empty claims. They were able to gather over twenty people in such a short time. There were as many people as there are feathers on a bird in that guild; no wonder the forums were always buzzing about how there were over 1000 members enrolled in the [Mad Dragon] guild!

Soon after, we reached the forest's edge. I disappeared in a flash,

without even leaving a trace of my shadow. Only some swaying leaves indicated I had ever been present.

Descent of the Dragon led over twenty people to rush into the forest edge, his face ashen as he bellowed, "Fallen Hero, I don't care what kind of person you are, but you have already tried to mess with the [Mad Dragon]'s scales. Even if a bastard like you was the emperor himself, I will still skin you alive down to the bone today!"

I stood silently under a dense birch tree and laughed, "[Mad Dragon]'s scales? You dared to call such an inferior guild a dragon? If you guys are really a mad dragon, I'll rip each of your shitty scales off one by one!"

"Damn!"

Descent of the Dragon angrily hollered, "Brothers, he's in the east. Enter the forest and destroy him. Let everyone in Floating Ice City know that nobody should ever provoke the [Mad Dragon]!"

"Yes, boss!"

A large group of people charged over.

My gaze swept past the area and immediately determined the positions of the players. Their battle formation was triangular-shaped, so I couldn't face them head-on. Every single one of them had learnt their beginner skills and each skills was powerful in its own way. Facing them head on would be greatly disadvantageous.

"Sha sha...."

The birch tree leaves swayed as I immediately disappeared from my original spot.

While I was quickly running away, I suddenly grew alert as the enemies had started their attacks!

Shua!"

A ray of cold light burst forth from an empty space. Without a doubt, such a magnificent ambushing skill could only be from an assassin player.

I didn't retreat, instead, I dodged to the right in that split moment before the enemy's attack hit me. At the same time, I pulled out my sword. My Green Forest Blade shone brightly as it collided with the assassin's dagger, producing a loud "clank" sound.

"Hah?! Such a fast speed...."

The attacker was stunned. This person was a level 17 assassin, with the ID "Arrogant Mad Dragon". He looked to be about 20 years old, and he still seemed juvenile. In terms of his attacking techniques, he was quite skilled. He simply hadn't yet reached the level of a top assassin.

I froze. Even his name had Mad Dragon in it, this person must be one of Descent of the Dragon's subordinates. I couldn't spare him!

Suddenly in the moment when the Green Forest Blade was about to go down, Arrogant Mad Dragon gritted his teeth and bit out, "You are seeking death!"

His figure blurred for a moment as he unexpectedly retreated back in a perfect zig-zag, completely dodging my blade!

I froze again. Looks like Descent of the Dragon's claim of being the best in Floating Ice City was not based on empty words. This Arrogant Mad Dragon's game-playing control was really good.

"Shua!"

A gust of wind flew out as a layer of dark green light covered Arrogant Mad Dragon's dagger.

It was indeed the level 10 assassin skill – Cold Spike!

Cold Spike was an active skill that increases hit rate by 20% and also caused normal attack damage to increase to 125%.

"Puchi!"

I couldn't react in time, and received the hit as the blade pierced my chest. Luckily, Arrogant Mad Dragon's dagger was only a white-tier equipment with 3-5 attack. Otherwise, this attack would've been fatal.

"Die!"

Arrogant Mad Dragon's eyes were filled with killing intent as his dagger brushed across my neck in a split moment. He was indeed an assassin, his moves spared me no mercy!

In that instant, my killing intent was also stirred. There was absolutely no way a person like this could be spared!

"Pa!"

My battle boots managed to kick Arrogant Mad Dragon's arm from an awkward angle. I borrowed this momentum and flipped my body over, whirling around in the air. The green blade covered in the dark green light of the skill fiercely cut down towards the opposite party!

"Ca!"

With a sharp, clear sound, Arrogant Mad Dragon stood transfixed at his position. He never thought that he would be killed the moment he was winning. The attack that should have killed me was reversed to him in an instant.

As I saw Arrogant Mad Dragon slowly fall to his knees and become a corpse, I coldly snorted and turned around to continue advancing into the jungle. At the same time, I secretly wondered, "If I had picked a fight against the 20+ players alone, I would have undoubtedly died. That 0.7 second delay was still enough to cause my death!"

Angry curses resounded from afar as Descent of the Dragon charged

over, bringing a bunch of lackeys. His game-playing skills were not inferior to Arrogant Mad Dragon. Now that he had learnt new skills, his killing power had obviously shot up!

Gradually, we had already gone deep into the jungle. Finally, the number of [Mad Dragon] members pursuing me had been reduced to only five. The others either couldn't keep up with my speed, or had been attacked by monsters halfway.

"Hei!"

I suddenly turned around and stood proud on an empty space in the forest with my sword ready. A funny scene have occurred. A frail little skeleton had raised his sword and stood proudly on the grassland, like a God that had descended down upon the earth.

Descent of the Dragon charged forwards, leading four of his lackeys. When he saw that I had no intention of running, he suddenly froze. He'd seen through my plans, and he wasn't one hundred percent sure that he could deal with me with just five people.

For a while, Descent of the Dragon stood there, unable to do anything else.

"Boss, let's go and destroy him. This brat has a black-tier weapon on him!" A short barbarian warrior bellowed.

Descent of the Dragon knitted his brows tightly; someone with a black tier weapon was indeed an enticing targe. However, this meant that the

opposite party's defense was extremely high, making him extremely difficult to kill.

Seeing that the opposite party didn't dare to act, I couldn't help but laugh loudly. I pointed at Descent of the Dragon and said, "Floating Ice City is one of the level 2 main cities in the Chinese servers. Most of the players in Jiang Zhe Hu were assigned to Floating Ice City. You guys should all know this clearly. You guys, the [Mad Dragon], is such an inferior guild, yet you want to proclaim yourself as the leading figure in Floating Ice City? That's just wishful thinking!"

Just as he was about to act, an archer from [Mad Dragon] suddenly staggered over and shouted, "Boss, bad.....bad news...."

"Calm down, what happened?" Descent of the Dragon asked impatiently.

The archer immediately walked forward and whispered a few words in his ear.

"Damn!!!"

Descent of the Dragon turned furious and roared, "Wind Fantasy has crossed the line. Bastard, to think he dared to bully my [Mad Dragon]. Come with me, we're heading to Snowing Forest!"

"Ai, don't go...."

I reached out to try to keep him from leaving, but Descent of the Dragon

and his brothers had already disappeared like smoke. It seemed that this Wind Fantasy had come to cause monstrous trouble to the [Mad Dragon]. Moreover, what he had pulled up was even greater than what I had....

.....

"Damn, what is this...."

Somewhat speechless, I turned around to enter the jungle. I had already exchanged my Green Bone Fan for a piece of equipment and some silver coins. Mission accomplished, it was about time to return to Frozen Mound in order to check if there were any new quests to accept.

I hadn't even walked three steps before a bout of scorching energy suddenly headed towards me. It was a pike containing blazing energy!

Damn it, someone had pulled a sneak attack on me!

VW:UUTS Chapter 15 – Ghost Valley’s Rematch

A blaze of fire shot out suddenly!

It was the Magic Knight’s level 10 profession skill that increased 15% fire damage. When the skill reached level 2, it would be able to exert 25% extra fire damage. This skill was the king of skills for PK-ing in the early stages!

I couldn’t guard against the attack. A biting pain shot through my shoulders, as if I had just been bitten by a poisonous snake.

“128 ! ”

Such a shocking damage value! At least, it was extremely high for my health bar.

My feet slid away, taking the advantage to escape from the enemy’s range of attack. I grasped my Green Forest Blade tightly as I gave a death glare to my enemy. It was a Skeleton Undead Player holding a long spear. It was none other than the level 17 Ghost Valley, who should be ranked amongst the top 10 players in Floating Ice City!

“Hei!”

Ghost Valley laughed maliciously as his spear blade rushed towards me. He was obviously here for his revenge from our previous encounter.

"Shua!"

The long spear shone with a cold gleam and shot forward, like a fierce dragon that had burst out from the ocean. Ghost Valley lunged forward with a roar. Although it was a normal attack , he had the perfect basic attack form nailed down. He was definitely a skilled expert!

I hurriedly gulped down a bottle of health potion and retread half a step backwards with my left foot. After my shoulder received that unavoidable attack, retreating would reduce the damage I received to the minimum. At the same time, I flicked my wrist and sandwiched Ghost Valley's spear with my sword hilt. Then, I took this advantage and sent my sword flying towards him as I roared, "An opening!"

With a loud clang, Ghost Valley's spear shook violently as sparks of fire flew in all directions. A shocked expression filled his face as my Green Forest Blade flew rapidly towards his chest.

"Pu Chi!"

Black coloured blood splashed out as a large damage number appeared on top of Ghost Valley's head – 228!

I didn't give him any time to recover and rained down a chain of attacks on him, piercing my sword into his chest. Then I switched my posture, raising my right leg and kicked on Ghost Valley's long spear. With the great impact of that sudden kick, Ghost Valley lost his grip on his weapon. His defense had failed!

This was my chance!

"Shua shua!"

My long sword sliced and pierced into Ghost Valley's neck, and I unleashed an additional special attacking skill. The light from my [Blade Rush] skill glowed across my sword as it directly pierced into Ghost Valley's neck.

"Damn..."

Ghost Valley's eyes opened wide and could only watch helplessly as I unleashed my attack on him. I brought down [Blade Rush] on his neck with all my strength, as I shouted low, "You are the one seeking your death. Go ahead and find me for revenge anytime you want, I'll play with you!"

"Pa Da..."

Ghost Valley fell to the ground, dying filled with regrets. His profession was Undead Knight, which belonged to the Magic Knight class, just like how my profession belonged to the Warrior class. Thus, Ghost Valley's health was extremely high, unfortunately, his attack power was a little bit low. When he failed to kill me with the first strike, I was able to take control of the battle flow and kill him on the spot. This was still something that I had confidence in.

Seeing Ghost Valley's corpse falling to the ground slowly, I couldn't help but chuckle a little as I sat my buttocks down on the ground right beside

him, taking a bottle of health potion to recover my health.

At this time, Ghost Valley's soul must have already been released.

A loud "ding" was suddenly heard. System Announcement: Player Ghost Valley has invited you to his friend list. Accept/Reject?

.....

I was astonished but I chose accept in the end. Ghost Valley's name immediately appeared under my friend list. He turned out to be the first friend on my friend list in <Heaven's End>.

After a few minutes, Ghost Valley sent me a message, "Can I ask you a question?"

"Ask away." I replied

"Your PK technique is really similar to a person. Are you.. are you the God of War Chaos Illumination?" Ghost Valley sent another message.

I was dumbstruck. Chaos Illumination? Was my PK technique that similar to that Chaos Illumination, whose name was renowned all throughout China?

After a short pause, I replied, "No."

After a few seconds, Ghost Valley replied, "Then all is good. Since you are not Chaos Illumination, then you aren't invincible. Someday I will find a way to destroy you!"

I was speechless. Turning off my message window, I stood up and looked at the beautiful night sky in the game. The whole sky was filled with stars. I couldn't help but chuckle as I muttered to myself, "Is Chaos Illumination that strong? If my reaction delay was healed, or if only it could be reduced to 0.3 seconds, humph, Chaos Illumination would mean nothing!"

I sighed a little as I thought, damn it, there was a time where I was also the King of MMORPGs, defeating Chaos Illumination more than once. There was once only one person capable of surveying the surroundings with an eagle's view, yet that person was now a disabled person with 0.7 seconds delay in his reaction time. Yeah, with this disadvantage, there would only be death if I encounter Chaos Illumination now.

.....

At this time, another "ding" rung out –

System Announcement: Player Outstanding Expert has invited you to his friend list. Accept/Reject?

I couldn't help but break into laughter. Shi San finally got out from his newbie village.

Choosing "accept", Du Shi San immediately open up a chat window and

laughed out, "Lu Chen, I'm coming! Haha, there are only around three thousand players in the Floating Ice City, my rank should be high enough, right?"

"Oh really? Even I had gotten out from my newbie village after a full day and night..." I replied with an idle tone as I snickered, pouring cold water on his pride.

"Damn you!"

Du Shi San laughed out instead of getting angry, and continued, "At the city gates, I received a quest to go to Frozen Forest to kill some boss monster. Help me out if you have the time, I don't have enough manpower."

"Yeah, show me the quest location, I will go there right now."

"Don't..."

Du Shi San stopped his words in the middle, and only continued after a few seconds, "I'm only level 10, the monsters along the road had almost killed me. Can you bring me there...?"

"Alright."

I was even more speechless at his request. Then, I started striding towards Floating Ice City with big strides.

Before long, I saw Shi San. That brat was a level 10 warrior, wearing a whole body of white-tiered armour. He looked like a geezer ogling at the female players walking past the city gates, drooling as he leered at their snow-white thighs. He looked like he was ready to pounce on them and hug their thighs, shouting, "Big sister, I'm sick, let me lay on your lap please..."

"Shi San!"

I shouted at him from afar. Du Shi San immediately saw me and rushed towards the edge of the forest. Looking at my whole body of equipments, his drool flowed nonstop, "Damn! You are so cool! Black-tier sword with an extra attribute, black-tier chest plate, black-tier boots, and there's also a black-tier wristguard...Dammit..."

While saying this, Du Shi San expression changed into one that deserved a beating as he drooled and continued, "Chen-ge, do you have any extra weapon or heavy and leather armour that you are not using? You can throw it over here..."

"I don't, let's talk about it when I have it."

"Okay!"

In the game, Du Shi San played the part of a minion. He knew his own capabilities very well. Furthermore, he looked like the perfect minion, someone who would help his boss light his cigar. If his boss was dissatisfied, he would be the type who would charge out into the road and make a ruckus with his boss's enemy, shouting, "You arrogant brat, do you think I can't beat you to death?!"

I brought Du Shi San along as I charged into the forest. Fortunately the level of the monsters along the road was not too high. If they were below level 20, I could still defeat them with ease. Du Shi San followed closely as he leeched on the experience.

The quest's target was a level 17 Werewolf. With Shi San's skills, fighting the monster alone is equivalent to seeking death. But I only needed 10 seconds to accomplish the job.

Du Shi San cut the Werewolf's head as he showered me with endless praises, "Lu Chen, you are too powerful, so handsome, so sharp and accurate! My reverence for you, my brother, is like the endless flow of a river..."

"Maybe you can talk about how you plan to raise your levels?" I stopped his bullshit mid-sentence.

"Oh, I will go to the Wild Boar Forest to raise my level. There are level 11 Wild Boar monsters over there. If I have to attack monsters to level up, that would be the best place."

"Alright, I will train myself then. Oh right, have you learnt your profession skill, the level 10 warrior's [Heavy Slash]?"

"Ah? Skills..." Du Shi San stared blankly, "What skills?"

"Damn!" I almost vomited blood as I threw him 10 silvers and said, "Go to the city's Job Institutions and find out yourself, learn a few skills before

going out to train levels. Also, buy some health potion. I'm going to go train now."

"Yeah, alright!"

After receiving the silver, Shi San hopped away with a big grin in his face.

I shook my head and laughed weakly, "He has no future..."

.....

Coming back to Frozen Mound once again, I killed a few skeletons outside the Graveyard and absorbed their Undead Flames to refresh my own Undead body.

Monsters that belonged to the Undead classification had 15% higher attributes than living monsters. Their attacking power and attacking speed were both outstanding, but their experience and item drop-rate were also higher by 15%. As the saying goes, "high risk, high return". I one night, I was able to collect 11 small magic stones and sell them for quite a few silvers.

In the wee hours, around 4 am, Du Shi san suddenly sent me a message. He was too tired and couldn't take it anymore, so he was going to sleep.

I stood at the Frozen Mound, an Undead Alliance's territory, as I looked at my level: Level-18. After a night of toiling, I finally rose to level 18 and managed to enter the top 100 players on the Floating Ice City Player

Ranking Board. My name happen to appear right at the 99th position. There were really too many levelling maniacs in this world!

Actually, I hadn't started levelling with all my strength. Instead I spent my time on checking online resources and maps. This time, I didn't want to be too conspicuous. If I really wanted to, I could rush my levels and enter the top 10 without any problems. This was because the first rank, which was occupied by Wind Fantasy again, was only level 20. It was not a huge gap for me.

However, my equipments were indeed too conspicuous, especially since I had black-tiered items. I believe that in a one-on-one battle, there wouldn't be more than three people who could stand against me in Floating Ice City!

After getting touched and feeling proud of my own accomplishments, it was time for me to log off and rest.

.....

When I took off my helmet, it was past 4.30 a.m. The dark sky had been illuminated by the early sun.

Going to the bathroom, I washed my face and looked in the mirror. My tired reflection stared back at me. Forget it, I'm just going to sleep after a quick bath!

Thinking of this, I took off my shirt. But to my horror, I discovered blotches of blood-red patches on my arms and back. This...What the heck

are these things?!

In that short moment, I froze on the spot. I felt like my whole body was submerged in ice, despair and fear enveloped my heart and mind –

Livor Mortis!

These were livor mortis, a symptom that only a corpse would have!

VW:UUTS Chapter 16 – He Yi's Visit

My mind was in a state of delirium , I felt like I was going to suffocate. This was definitely Livor Mortis!

Leaning my back against the wall, I sat down and stared blankly as I clutched my head with my hands.

What was happening, what was exactly wrong with me? I was obviously alive, so why would I have Livor Mortis? Didn't this meant that my body was slowly rotting away? This...this was definitely impossible, was this all a dream?

"Pa!"

I slapped my cheeks hard.

It was painful, very painful. This was not a dream.

I didn't dare to close my eyes. The moment my eyes were closed, my mind was flooded with images of livor mortis. Yet, if I opened my eyes, I would see those ugly blotches that would definitely be a frightening sight for others, and my heart froze. My whole body felt like it was about to collapse and break down.

.....

"Lu Chen, Lu Chen! Are you okay?"

After a while, Du Shi San knocked on the door and barged in. Seeing me sitting in the corner staring vacantly into space, he worriedly asked, "What happened?"

I didn't try to hide anything from him. With a sinking heart I raised my arms and replied, "Shi San, I'm afraid that I'm already...dead!"

"What?!"

Shi San opened his eyes wide as he grabbed my arms and said with a trembling voice, "Lu Chen, don't scare me, brother. You...What exactly happened to you, how did you end up in such a state? You...surely you are just sick..."

Shi San almost cried out as he saw the rotting flesh on my body. He gritted his teeth as his eyes turned blood-red, "Fuck, how could this have happened..."

I looked helplessly towards the ceiling as I told him the whole story, about being buried alive a few days ago.

After hearing the story, Du Shi San didn't utter any words and immediately turned around. Then, he came back again with a syringe on his hands. He looked at me directly and said, "Brother, I won't let you die!"

Saying that, he took out some of my blood sample and said, "I forgot to tell you that my dad is a specialist at a Biological Research Institute. I'm

going to take your blood sample to Nanjing for a laboratory test. Rest assured that nothing wrong would happen. I will be back by tonight..."

I nodded and replied disappointedly, "Thanks...but I think I remember you saying that your dad was a banker when you were pursuing Tan Xue before..."

"What the heck, why would you remember such useless stuff? Remember, wait for me to come back!"

Du Shi San charged out of the door, but turned around as he warned me again, "Lu Chen, you definitely cannot die. If you really die, I will be very lonely!"

Then, Du Shi San ran out of the door.

The morning sky was still dark. Such a lazy brat like him had actually got on his car to drive to Nanjing for me, this useless friend.

.....

I went up to a small building's rooftop and saw that the sky was a little overcast. I looked up to the sky as countless memories resurfaced in my mind, scene by scene.

I slowly slumped to the ground. I gradually calmed my panicked heart as I lay down on the floor. After a long thought, I realized that I didn't unlock the Undead Swordsman Profession in the game by chance. My body was indeed having problems. Strictly speaking, I might already be

dead. At the moment I was buried underground, I could already have been dead. All because of one woman –

He Yi.

I never regretted anything. I clutched a book covered in blue in my right hand, titled “Encouraging Studies”.

This was He Yi’s present for my birthday that was mailed to me. She said this book was really effective in encouraging others. When her team had failed to kill a BOSS monster and was annihilated, she used this book to encourage and improve her team’s morale.

My mouth curved involuntarily; I couldn’t help but smile faintly.

A montage of a beautiful mountain range, tall grasses and birds flying in the gentle, cool breeze surfaced in my mind. He Yi was picking some herbs while I was following behind her, staring blankly at her beautiful silhouette . He Yi was a very independent woman. When she set her mind on a direction, she would resolutely head forward in that direction without the slightest doubt. Others were impressed with this aspect of her. At the same time, He Yi was also a woman full of charm and charisma. She not only possessed a beautiful face and body that could bring down a nation, she had the courage and wisdom to crush those who opposed her. Otherwise, how could a fragile beauty like her become GGS Asia Vice Chairman?

Slowly closing my eyes, I chuckled a little. If I could die just like that, I would go in peace.

"Papapa..."

It started raining. Droplets of water from the drizzle fell on my face, so gentle and nice.

Amazingly, I had actually fallen asleep until a hot blazing kind of pain racking my whole body awoke me from my slumber.

"Ah..."

Letting out a deep breath, I suddenly sat up and saw an amazing scene right in front of my eyes.

The rain had stopped and the sun was shining down on my body. Those frightening looking blotches seemed to sizzle and evaporate like water, disappearing into thin air. Instead, it was replaced by an agonizing pain, as if my whole body had been thrust into an oven. Such a painful burning sensation was indeed too much for anyone to endure!

I held my fist tight as I saw my black spots disappearing under the sun. There was only one word that could illustrate my feelings right now, a 'Masochist'.

Not even ten minutes afterwards, the livor mortis had completely disappeared. My skin regained its previous tone and lustre. It was white and spotless, like it was brand new. Those painful sensations had also gone completely, just like a weird disease that had been cured by sunlight.

"Pata pata ..."

Rushed steps were heard outside. Du Shi San had returned.

I stood up and came down from the rooftop, bumping right into Du Shi San. He held a small piece of paper in his hands, his face brimming with happiness and smiles, "Lu Chen, the result is out!"

"What's the situation?" I snatched the paper away from his hands, but realized that everything was in English. I didn't understand anything at all.

Shi San breathed heavily and replied, "Methamphetamine, your blood was contaminated with a rare type of Methamphetamine poison. It could also be called a virus. The Research team has analyzed the result. This kind of virus has never been seen before but it's effects were unimaginable. It actually had the ability to revive any cells that was already dead!"

"What?!" I was stunned beyond belief.

Du Shi San nodded, "This was the reason livor mortis appeared on your body. The virus was so strong that it was regenerating your cells faster than the rate of of your cells dying. However, too fast a pace is also not good, because it increases your body's metabolism. However, my dad and his team have already resolved this problematic property of the virus in this short amount of time. I already know a way to inhibit the virus' growth."

"What way?" I asked.

"UV-rays!" Du Shi San replied confidently, "This kind of UV-rays could be harmful to a normal person's body, but it would help to restore your normal appearance in your case!"

I nodded and suddenly realized why the sunlight had cured my livor mortis. The reason was that there are UV-rays in sunlight!

Du Shi San walked forward and patted my shoulders, laughing, "Brother, don't be too worried, your body is fine. Furthermore, <Heaven's end> game helmet also had a little bit of electromagnetic waves radiation, as long as you are playing the game, your body won't get any worse. Also, such a virus would have the effect of strengthening your body in the long term!"

"Strengthening?"

I slowly froze, and then laughed, "It's indeed a good ending from a disaster. Would I be able to fly in the sky like superman?"

"That would be unlikely." Du Shi San laughed out loud, "How could such a good thing happen in this world? What I meant by strengthening was only an increase in the strength of your bones and muscles. With your current standards, If you can knock down a normal person last time, you could probably knock down half a person right now. I think if a random low-levelled monk appeared, he would be able to beat up seven or eight of you..."

"What the heck..." I was at a loss for words. But the dark cloud hanging over my head had now lifted. According to Shi San's explanations, this virus would not threaten my life, then it's all good.

"Oh right." Shi San gulped down his saliva and continued, "Those researchers did some research on the origin of the virus. From the place of accident and the age of the virus, it was determined that this virus came from corpses that had been contaminated with poison. And the place where you had that accident turned out to be an ancient graveyard!"

"Ancient Graveyard?" I couldn't help but froze, "What is an Ancient Graveyard?"

"It was the Han Warriors, the graveyard of the Wu Clan from the Warring States Period. It was levelled afterwards, but it was said that when Guan Yu was killed, though his severed head was sent to the Wei Kingdom, his body was buried here."

(TLN: Guan Yu was said to be the strongest man alive in the history of China)

"Are you serious? Why is the story becoming even more ridiculous now?"

Du Shi San chuckled mischievously, "For all living things under the earth, there is a thing called karma. There is also Fengshui, supernatural beings, Daoist and Confucian ideals. How could we not believe in this? Just be careful, maybe someday you will wake up to find that your body has been possessed by Guan Yu's soul, who will brandish a slaughtering

knife and go around town challenging crime syndicates. That'd be really interesting, haha..."

Looking at Du Shi san who was laughing like a madman, I was at a loss for words. This brat really had no heart in his body, how could he be in the mood to crack a joke at times like this?

At this moment, along with a loud sound, a black racing car pulled to a stop in the street right below. Du Shi San and I saw it by chance.

"Ka!"

The car's door opened, and an ultimate beauty got down from the car. Immediately, Du Shi San and I were shocked.

I was so shocked because this beauty was actually He Yi, while Du Shi San was shocked because this chick was too spectacular. He charged towards He Yi shouting, drooling as he said, "Damn! I saw this super beautiful chick this morning. Tsk, driving a Lamborghini and an ultimate beauty at that. This...I would not marry anyone but her in this life...."

"Stop right there!"

With a slap of my hand, I slapped him back to the sofa, and said in a serious tone, "Shi San, do you know who she is?"

"Who?"

"He Yi, [Ancient Sword Dream]'s guildmaster, my lady boss. I never thought that she would find this place!"

"Ah?" Du Shi San laughed out once again, "Well done, brother. Your taste is really not bad. This He Yi is really too beautiful and rich too. Not one of the ten girlfriends I've dated could stand a chance against her, tsk, you are simply too blessed..."

"Are you joking?" I glared and said, "She can't know that I'm here...."

"Why not?" Shi San asked in confusion.

I pointed to my chest, "You saw it already, my current body is not that of a ghost or a human. If she knew the truth, wouldn't she blame herself for the rest of the her life?"

"Wu...." Shi San muttered to himself, "Then what do we do?"

"I'll hide."

"Then what am I supposed to say?"

I gritted my teeth, "Just say I've already been killed."

"Ok!"

.....

Soon afterwards, He Yi knocked on the door. Her clear, sweet voice rang out, "Excuse me, is there anyone in there?"

Du Shi San hurriedly opened the door. Seeing him, He Yi couldn't help but freeze on the spot, "You...Who are you? Isn't this Lu Chen's residence?"

"Lu Chen?" Du Shi San furrowed his brows and said, "I'm Lu Chen's friend. Why are you looking for him?"

He Yi was a little uneasy as she knitted her beautiful brows. Suddenly she shouted in a commanding tone, "Move over!"

Being the GGS Asia Vice Chairman, she carried a domineering authority in her tone. Du Shi San was immediately frozen as he moved over obediently.

He Yi entered the room. I was hiding in the wardrobe, watching what was happening outside from a crack in the door.

Du Shi San chased after her and said, "Don't bother looking anymore, Lu Chen is already gone."

.....

He Yi's delicate shoulders trembled a little. She turned around to face Du Shi San and her expression was doubtful, "Gone? What does gone mean?"

Du Shi San bit down and said, "Three days ago, someone delivered a

message to me that said Lu Chen was meeting with a friend in the game. However, an unexpected mishap occurred, and he died in the graves at Nanjiao. His body has already been cremated. Who exactly are you, and why are you searching for him?"

"How...how could that be?"

He Yi's pair of beautiful eyes was filled with shock. Her whole person seemed to crumble on the ground, knocking unto the table that's right behind her. A weak "Wu...wu.." sound came out from her as she cried, clear teardrops dropping on her snow white cheeks. She slowly collapsed to the ground, smearing her stunning legs with dirt.

"Pa!"

The "Encouraging Studies" on the table fell right into He Yi's lap. She hazily looked at the book that she had given to me before with her tear-filled eyes, and couldn't help but cry even louder.

Shi San was dumbfounded. He stood awkwardly by her side, unsure of whether to comfort her or not.

.....

He Yi's eyes were red, and her normally bright expression was now grieving and heart-broken. She cried and cried, hugging the "Encouraging Studies" tightly, as if this book was her life's one, true love.

My eyes smarted as well as I watched. I had to keep my face tilted upwards so that the tears wouldn't fall down, and the sorrow wouldn't

spread.

VW:UUTS Chapter 17 – Painful Wound

He Yi knelt on the ground, hugging that “Encouraging Studies” book and sobbed in grief, her tears soaking through her pure white blouse. The brown uniform skirt that she wore emphasize her curves, revealing the undoubtedly perfect physique that she was most proud of. The sight was enough for Shi San to ogle at her, as his mind had long since wandered off to distant places.

“Cough....”

After a while, Shi San finally coughed and said, “This beautiful lady, Lu Chen is no longer here, see?”

“I....I....”

He Yi raised her head to look at Shi San with her swollen, red, tear-filled eyes. “Go away, leave me alone!”

“I!”

Shi San helplessly reached his hand out and said, “But your presence here has a great impact on my life. Please conduct yourself in a more dignified manner?”

He Yi was furious, “Get out!”

Shi San was startled, and didn’t dare to say another word. He Yi’s anger

was definitely not something that Shi San could endure.

.....

After a long time, He Yi finally stood up slowly. Clutching the 'Encouraging Studies' to her heart, she looked at the room with a regretful expression, and then slowly turned around to leave.

Finally relieved from the burden, Shi San knocked on the door, "Lu Chen, you can come out now. She's already left."

My expression was extremely unsightly. Shi San understood my thoughts and he patted my shoulder, "Don't feel sad, it's only a momentary sorrow. After your body has completely recovered, you can go look for her and surprise her. Isn't that better?"

I nodded. Shi San, who normally couldn't comfort anyone at all, was able to say these words to me; this was really breaking news.

"But, He Yi is indeed too gorgeous..." Shi San sighed in sincere admiration.

I couldn't help but smile as I asked, "Gorgeous to what extent?"

Shi San muttered, "Gorgeous to——the point where it could shock the whole world!"

"Not bad, you can even use such fancy descriptions."

"Damn you!"

.....

"Let's go down and eat some fish and pickled vegetables, my treat. We've starved for the whole day." Shi San walked towards the window and looked outside. He suddenly froze involuntarily and snapped his head back inside, "She...she's not gone yet..."

Moving to my bedside, I peeked outside. Indeed, He Yi was sitting inside her car, resting her head on the steering wheel as her shoulders heaved slowly as sobs racked her body.

This scene made my heart twitch. It was like an unspoken burden in my heart. I really wanted to just run out and tell her that I'm not dead yet, I only died once.

While I repressed my emotions with all my might, Shi San went down by himself to buy some takeaway to eat at home.

It was 10 pm at night, however, I still didn't go online. I hid myself behind the curtains as I peeked at He Yi, accompanying her through this period quietly. Because this might be the last time I would be able to see her.

At 11 pm at night, a woman wearing a black coloured office skirt came and consoled He Yi. Then, she helped He Yi drive her Lamborghini and went away.

I recognized that woman. It was Murong Ming Yue, one of the Ancient Sword Dream "Star Moon Star Dust" four elders.

.....

"So Sister Ming Yue's looked like this in real life...." I whispered.

Shi San's eyes lit up, and he wiped away his drool, "She's really well-endowed..."

Nodding, Murong Ming Yue's character was a priest who all along had a signature quote, "I, Murong Ming Yue, possesses well-endowed breasts that is able to milk every single warrior under the earth!"

(TLN: "milk" is a slang in Chinese for heal.)

I looked at him and said, "A brat like you shouldn't let your imagination run wild. No matter whether it's He Yi or Murong Ming Yue, you can't touch either of them!"

"Why?" Shi San asked in confusion.

"I don't know!" I replied without hesitation.

"Che, whatever. Let's eat first!"

"Ok."

The two of us busied ourselves with eating the food. After we were sated, Du Shi San asked, "What should we do now?"

"Go online, level up to 30 and cure my disease. Don't forget that I'm sick now." I laughed mischievously.

Shi San nodded, "Yea, we should hurry up and level more. That way, we can create a super guild and sweep across the whole world. Wahahaha! It's time to go online; I must rush to level 30!"

"First rush to level 15 before saying that...."

"....."

.....

According to <Heaven's End>'s website, level 30 was the first dividing gap. This was because a level 30 player would be able to attain his second job advancement. Furthermore, only level 30 players would have the qualifications to own pets and capture pets. Hence in the first few weeks after the opening of the game, there would be a huge number of players playing like lunatics to rush levels, just to get the the benefits of the second job advancement. The sooner they acquired powerful pets to aid them in battles, the greater advantage they would have.

"Yeah, we should quickly level up to 30 as soon as possible. We'll definitely get much stronger skills after our second job advancement!"

After my solemn proclamation, I went online.

"Shua!"

Sunset light shone down, I came out from the graveyard, everywhere around me was a pitch of darkness. There was only a streak of light shining outside the gravestone. This was a good concealed and hidden place. A Floating Ice City's player would have to use a tent when they logged off; there would be a lot of tents on the training grounds in the city's outskirts. These tents were out in the open; on the other hand, my home would not be found by others.

"Sha sha...."

Opening the door of soil/my tomb, my head popped out of the ground, the me right now had already absorbed large amounts of undead flame, achieving the Bone Spirit Warrior level. My body has now grown sparse amounts of flesh. Never again will I revert to the skeleton I was. But this conversion was even more frightening than my previous body, to the extent that I would even be shocked looking at myself in the mirror; I thought I had met a zombie.

"Pa pa!"

Dusting off the dust and mud on my armour, I was about to leave when suddenly a strong attack was aimed towards me!

It was another Blazing Thrust!

(TLN: I TL-ed the first line in chapter 15 wrongly, Blazing Thrust turned out to be a skill name instead of a sentence. So Ghost Valley had attacked Fallen Hero with Blazing Thrust on chapter 15.)

I didn't even think as I raise my sword and blocked the incoming attack. At the same time, I charged forward, turned my wrist and slashed twice at my opponent's armour. My sword quickly glowed with a green light as I furiously shouted, "Can't you admit your loss already?"

"Ca!"

My Green Forest Blade ruthless pierced into the opponent's chest. Fresh blood poured out as a high damage number flew out – 424!

It was a critical attack!

Maybe Ghost Valley was really unfortunate. He actually had a chance, but when I dealt that critical attack, his current battle challenge came abruptly to an end.

"Eh..."

Moaning weakly, Ghost Valley slowly collapsed to the ground, his level dropped again to 19 from 20. The levels that this brat has trained day and night, did he intend to use them all to receive my teachings?

I held my sword as I stood at one side, waiting for him to be revived.

After a few seconds, Ghost Valley's soul came out from his grave and went back to his body. He jumped and stood up immediately like a shaolin monk and pointed his spear at me, "You...are you really not Chaos Illumination? Why does your technique so similar to his?!"

I smiled amusedly and replied, "Really? Didn't I say before, I'm not Chaos Illumination. If you want to challenge me to another battle, you should get better equipments first, so that I can take you seriously."

"You!"

Ghost Valley glared at me viciously, "Who are you exactly? With your control, unstoppable attacks and battle rhythm, I would definitely know your gamer ID. If you are really not the God of War Chaos Illumination, could you be Grain Dust? Carefree Shadow? Or perhaps... Fallen Dust?"

"No, it can't be..." Ghost Valley shook his head. "Fallen Dust had become disabled a year ago, you can't be him. Aih, it was such a loss!"

I smiled indifferently. Ghost Valley was an expert gamer, he was able to see through my moves correctly. A true expert in reality wasn't someone who had mastered the "18 Palms of Fallen Dragon"; even if they were experts, they were still ordinary people. But these experts would have a grasp of their own battle rhythm, unleashing unstoppable rush of attacks that flowed smoothly like water.

(TLN: "18 Palms of Fallen Dragon" is one of the most powerful martial art style often mentioned in Chinese Classic Wu Xia stories such as Demi-gods and Semi-devils, Legend of Condor Heroes, and return of Condor Heroes)

There was only one sentence in conclusion: Only skills count.

.....

As I strode towards Frozen Mound carrying my sword, I turned around to look at Ghost Valley, "Brother, I want to ask you something. If you were to lose to my sword three times, will you concede defeat?"

"I...." Ghost Valley coldly glared at me, his eyes burning with unyielding flames of determination, "Of course I won't!"

I nodded, "Yea, ok. Actually, switching to another line of thought, we should be friends. I don't recommend that you keep trying to risk your life to fight against me every time. Rather than do that, we might as well become friends. Maybe we can create a guild later, and join hands to sweep Floating Ice City away. Isn't that even better?"

"Ah?!"

Ghost Valley trembled and couldn't resist asking, "You....you're willing to associate yourself with me?"

"Why not?"

"Hmph!" Ghost Valley suddenly sneered in disdain and said, "Real experts definitely wouldn't depend on others!"

"You're not even an expert."

"....."

Ghost Valley muttered to himself for a bit before finally replying, "At the moment, I don't plan on doing anything like that. I'll consider it another time. But my challenge to you hasn't ended yet. Just wait and see, I'll train diligently."

"Yeah, ok!"

I turned around, internally contemplating to myself. Although Ghost Valley said that his current movements were only average, he had quite a strong willpower. His innate talent was also not bad; real experts were originally people like him. If I could successfully win over Ghost Valley, then he could become a crucial player that would play a decisive role in the future guild.

And what was the purpose of creating a guild?

I suddenly thought of Ancient Sword Dream, and the image of the pure, perfect, untarnished beauty He Yi surfaced in my mind. And that previous scene before –

Underneath a green tree, a young couple stood: one warrior and one archer.

He Yi looked at me and asked, "Lu Chen, what are you pursuing in life?"

I said, "Money and beautiful women."

He Yi punched me hard, unsatisfied with my response.

I responded again, "Work and love."

She smiled in admiration, "Now that's the right way!"

VW:UUTS Chapter 18 – Briar Skeletons

Frozen Mound had always looked like an eerie forest from the past. Bronze pillars engraved with figures of demons decorated the gates. The sharp end of the bronze pillars were decorated with skulls drenched in blood; there were human skulls, beastfolk skulls, and also the demon-folk skulls. The demons were a race that was born beauties, and everyone in that race was of the female gender. This was also the reason that only female players could choose the demon race in this game.

I raised my sword and entered Frozen Mound. I approached the Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk, and engaged him in a conversation. This mighty, rough Skeleton Warrior raised his arm and laughed loudly: "Little skeleton, your growth really makes me look at you in admiration. Looks like you are already very strong. Well then, I will give to you a very arduous quest!"

I nodded my head: "Come on! Tell me!"

Falk said: "A couple of days ago, an undead knight arrived from Frozen Mound . He was once a noble human knight. But now he has invaded our territory. Little skeleton, I hope you can kill him. Of course, that undead knight was very powerful. The strongest fencing master Su Lun in camp, will accompany you. Go, you must collect 40 Briar Skeleton fingers and give it to Su Lun. Only then, will he agree to go with you to kill the Undead Knight – Cyan Rain!"

"Ding~!"

System announcement: Accept the task 【Undead Knight•Cyan Rain】!

(Level: E)

Quest Description: Go deep into Frozen Mound, and kill 200 Briar Skeletons and collect 40 Briar Skeleton Fingers to give to Undead Swordmaster Su Lun. He will then agree to help you and accompany you to kill the powerful Undead Knight•Cyan Rain. After completing the task, you will receive very rich rewards!

.....

I was excited and couldn't wait. Hehe, a Level E, middle level quest. This quest's level was very high. It's very likely that this was the highest level quest that has appeared so far in game. Looks like I'm going to make a fortune!

Entering Frozen Mound's cemetery, I bought some potions from an NPC repaired my equipments. After preparing everything, off I go!

Walking along the cemetery path, I could see Ghost Valley killing monsters from afar. He was very efficient while killing monsters. He lured the monsters and then used his weapons to finish them off in 2 or 3 strikes, whilst also using some skills to receive extra experience.

It didn't bother me and I continued to advance further into the depths of the cemetery. Sha sha, after walking for nearly a full 10 minutes, the surrounding suddenly turned darker and more putrid as the cemetery's monsters finally appeared in front of me.

Inside the forest, the figures of the skeleton flickered. I swept a glance

at the surrounding and saw a skeleton soldier that I had never seen before. Its whole skeleton bones had already mutated, with rows of sharp barbs sticking out of the bones. The barbs glowed green, piercing a cold chill into people's hearts. How are these level 21 Skeletons going to be different from the normal ones?

Don't think too much, let's go!

Rushing forward with my Green Forest Blade, I swung down the sharp blade on the shoulder of the Briar Skeletons. "Ka-cha" in one movement, my sharp blades entered into the Briar Skeletons with a deafening sound.

"170!"

My attack was still high like before, cutting off a large portion of the monster's health with just one strike. But my body also began hurting all over; I had actually lost 8 HP!

"Drip!"

Battle Status: You have dealt 170 damage to the Briar Skeleton. However, his thorns caused a rebound effect, -8 HP. You have been hurt!

.....

What! So it was a damage rebound effect?

Fortunately, it was only 5% of the total damage. I could still withstand it. If it was a bit higher, about 20%, then it would have been an altogether

different scenario. I decided to go offline to wash up and rest for a bit.

This monster's level was too high, the Green Forest Blade's attack was indeed too weak. I spent a full half minute on one level 21 Briar Skeleton. This leveling efficiency was somewhat slow for me.

However, the experience gained from killing a single level 21 monster was indeed quite a lot. A single Briar Skeleton could cause my exp bar to increase an amount that naked eyes could see. At this pace I should be able to hit level 20 by the end of this quest. It was one step closer to level 30!

After beheading three Briar Skeletons in a row, I finally found the first quest item: Briar Skeleton Fingers. It was only the length of bone, a quest item, nothing more.

I walked around the forest looking for a lone Briar Skeleton. Their attack power was strangely high; even with my 37 points of defense, the damage dealt was high. Normally, after killing 3 of these skeletons, I would need to drink a health potion to recover. This pace of consumption was truly scary. Though luckily, I had enough silver to support my spending and the spawn rate was not bad!

"Pa-ta!"

Following the death of a skeleton, a stone was dropped. My eyes suddenly widened – a Large Magic Stone! Yes, it really was a Large Magic Stone. I never thought that these ordinary monsters could drop them. Previously, the Large Magic Stone with 77 quality I received was sold for 15 silvers. The stone in front of me had a quality of 51. Calculating

according to proportion, I could get at least 10 silvers, I'm rich! Ha ha!

About 10 minutes after putting the Large Magic Stone into my inventory, another skeleton dropped a Large Magic Stone, with a quality of 67. It was worth even more silver!

After that, not even a single Large Magic Stone was dropped for two hours. But 4 Small Magic Stones were dropped. Though Small Magic Stones couldn't be considered valuable, even a mosquito leg, as small as it is, was still meat. The money was especially tight in the early games phases and there was still no real currency exchange function. The only way to get silver was offline transactions, but we were all currently still beginners. How many people in the game would be able to boast having a full gold coin like me?

It was already late at night. I checked the ranking charts while slaying monsters. Floating Ice City was one of China's nine main cities, where talented gamers from Shanghai, Jiangsu and Zhejiang were gathered. If I were to one day be on the Floating Ice City's experts' list, then I must better understand those players in the rankings.

"Hua!"

Flipping the page, a row of IDs greeted me. It's the Floating Ice City's latest top ten rankings——

1. Wind Fantasy lvl 25 Occupation: Radiant Ranger
2. Domineering Mage lvl 23 Occupation: Mage
3. Domineering Knight lvl 23 Occupation: Magic Knight

4. Domineering Archer lvl 23 Occupation: Archer
5. Domineering Warrior lvl 23 Occupation: Warrior
6. Blazing Sun lvl 22 Occupation: Warrior
7. Ghost Valley lvl 22 Occupation: Death Knight
8. Descent of the Dragon lvl 21 Occupation: Magic Knight

9. Clearwater lvl 21 Occupation: Archer

10. Cloudy Milky Way lvl 21 Occupation: Mage

.....

Ah! I looked dumbstruck at Floating Ice City's current rankings. The top ten actually had similar names, were they related? Looks like this dominating family wanted to monopolise the top ten rankings.

Of course, the mountain would not show the water within.

(TLN: Chinese idiom saying people with real skills would not show off but keep it to themselves)

Ghost Valley, this leveling maniac. Almost everyday, his sleeping time was compressed to three hours. This guy was killed by me N times, yet here he was, ranked in the top ten. He was truly worthy of the title of a leveling maniac.

As for me, the person who grabbed my attention the most was Wind Fantasy, the Ranger. This ranger's profession was not an ordinary one, but a Radiant Ranger. Also his level was the highest, far surpassing those below him. Definitely a peak-level master, whose reputation in the official

forums skyrocketed. Wind Fantasy's rank was first not only in Floating Ice City; he could even contend for the top three in China and all of its nine cities!

This person was truly worthy of attention. He also had a high possibility of becoming the most dominant force in Floating Ice City; Ancient Sword Dream's biggest obstruction!

In the Ranking Board, amongst the Ancient Sword Dream's Four elders, Sun Moon Star Dust, Xu Yang the Blazing Sun was the highest leveled, placed at 6th place of the Ranking Board. This brat seemed to be playing with his life to level up!

My impression towards Xu Yang, Mu Rong Ming Yue and the last member of the four elders were not very good. About half a year ago, during He Yi's birthday, the three of them had agreed with me to send a "Hap-py Birthday" for He Yi, each of us sending one syllable. I was supposed to send a "day", but in the end, those three didn't even send the rest.

You can imagine how He Yi looked at me strangely the next day.

.....

This task's requirement of killing of 200 skeletons was not really that much, but surprisingly the difficult part was collecting the skeleton fingers. After a full 7-8 hours of killing and into the next day, I was still short by 3 skeleton fingers.

All the Briar Skeleton in the cemetery's surroundings were completely annihilated by me. But on a pile of bones stood a mighty Undead Knight, hand on his sword, proud and upright, standing at the center. This must be the Undead Knight, Cyan Rain! The quest's final target!

Right now, I didn't dare to kill him alone. I had already risen to level 20 and entered the top 100 of Floating Ice City again finally. After spending another half an hour, two skeleton fingers were dropped. Only one more to go until I could get reinforcements; my mentor, the Undead Swordmaster Su Lun would help me kill the BOSS together!

Looking at the time, it's 10:30 am. I felt no trace of weariness, so I decided to continue killing!

.....

Shanghai, in the bustling commercial district. A conference room in a unique high-rise office building.

About 7-8 elite people were sitting around the table discussing business matters. Sitting at the very end was a young woman, dressed in a brown suit with a badge saying: "He Yi".

"Eve? It's your turn. What is your view?" Urged a middle aged man to the beauty.

Unfortunately, He Yi was lost in thought, staring out the window at the sky, a hint of sadness in her eyes.

"EVE, what do you think about this month's decreasing performance? "

"EVE?"

.....

As the group of directors watched , He Yi's long eyelashes slowly lowered. A line of tears trickled down her tired snow white face. With her eyes closed, her mouth trembled out: "But Lu Chen.....Lu Chen he...."

VW:UUTS Chapter 19 – Lady Xin Ran

“Pa ta....”

A soft sound echoed as the Briar Skeleton collapsed slowly, dropping an extremely putrid Skeleton Finger at the same time. It was the quest item that I needed.

Picking up the Skeleton Finger and throwing it into my inventory. I checked the amount again and I had 40 indeed!

Sweeping a short glance at my experience bar, I realized I was level 20 with 45% experience. I had been online continuously for 12 hours, this levelling rate was still not that bad.

“Phew! Now there’s only the last BOSS...”

I looked at the Undead Knight Cyan Rain from afar. It was time to go back to get reinforcements and defeat this BOSS!

.....

But it was at this moment, my head started to feel dizzy and my sight blurred. In the next instant, I fell right on the ground, as a bell rung right in my ears –

“Ding~!”

System Announcement: Your satiety has fallen below 20. Please consume some food, otherwise there will be unforeseen consequences.

A red light blinked on my interface, it was like Ultraman when his powers was low. It was only then did I realize that I had neglected one thing: food!

Bread, meat slices and other simple foods that replenished satiety were available with the street peddler in the Floating Ice City. It was a pity that it was not available in Frozen Mound. The Undeads' foods were simple, they only feed on corpses!

That's right, the Undead Race had a natural skill – Devouring Corpses! While Devouring Corpses, not only could you replenish your strength and satiety, you could also replenish your health. This was the Undead's natural ability.

My statistics dropped by 50%. My attack, defense and health was in the slumps. There was a Bloody Pond not far from there, where many rotten corpses floated around. The floating bodies looked like white bun.

"Blergh..."

Brows furrowed, I almost puked. Dammit, I won't use this Devouring Corpse ability even if they beat me to death!

Dragging my weak body, I walked out of the graveyard. Not far, there was a resting place. A few low leveled NPCs were farming near the resting place. As long as I kill one of the NPCs and eat them up, it would

be enough to last me for twenty four hours, preventing me from getting hungry.

"I won't do it!"

I gritted my teeth and continued walking forward. Not far from there, a "ka cha ka cha" sound resounded. Looking over, I could only see an Undead player who was wearing a black armour gnawing on a person's corpse. It was no other than the Ghost Valley that brat!

"How does it taste?"

I moved nearer to him and asked.

Ghost Valley wiped his blood-soaked mouth, smiled and replied with a calm voice, "It tastes quite good. It had not been dead for more than 24 hours, so its flesh is still soft and tender. Wanna eat together?"

"Go away, I won't eat it!"

I frowned as I leave, but Ghost Valley chuckled mischievously as he replied, "Humph, you absolutely won't be able to become a high leveled expert. Your heart is too soft, hahahah!"

I immediately turned around and glared at Ghost Valley. My killing intent rose as I replied him, "My heart isn't soft. It's the limit I won't cross, my limit!"

"Humph, do as you please. Don't die of starvation, otherwise I won't even have a rival!"

Ghost Valley chuckled amusedly as he continued eating with an "Itadakimasu."

.....

Walking unsteadily, I forced myself to drag my body towards Frozen Mound. The worse thing was that my satiety decreased at a much faster pace. 5 points decreased in just 10 minutes, I almost had no energy left to walk!

"Pft!"

My whole body collapsed to the ground as drops of rain started filling the sky. One blast after another blast of angry lightning split the dark sky as thick clouds completely hid the sky from view. It was like a Demon God pledging his curse on the world.

I gasped for breath as I stared at the grass, my face filled with humiliation. Suddenly, unexpectedly, I tore a bunch of grass on the ground, biting on them ferociously.

The taste was unbearable, a bitter flavour spread across my mouth-

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have consumed grass (quality: 1). You have

recovered 0.1 satiety points!

.....

Damn! Only 0.1 point? Are you joking with me?

I'm going to 'moo' soon.

My mind turned completely blank as my body floated in my consciousness.

It was at this moment that I suddenly heard a voice. It was like a ray of moonlight shining upon the darkness-

"Big brother, are you okay?"

.....

I slowly lifted my head, only to see a young girl wearing a purple-coloured long skirt, standing underneath a tree. She had a round, big sapphire eyes framed in a fine, oval face. She carried a basket on her arms that was filled with mushrooms. Oh, so it was a loli-picking mushroom. Damn, that's wrong, it's mushroom-picking loli.

"Uhh..."

I could only groan out in a weak voice, unable to continue. If my satiety went down right to the bottom, I would only die at the most. It's nothing much if I dropped down one level, I only needed to grind harder for a few more hours.

"You..." The little loli looked at me, and suddenly revealed an angel-like smile, "This big brother, are you hungry?"

I nodded my head repeatedly.

The little loli immediately picked up her long skirt, revealing a pair of snow white thighs. When my eyes were about to turn greer, she had actually took out a loaf of bread from her personal bag kept inside her skirt and dropped the bread right in front of me. Chuckling slowly, she said, "There, this is an oat bread that my mom baked. It's very delicious, you're welcome to eat it!"

Because of that, i was really embarrassed with the thoughts I had just now. Quick as lightning, i grabbed the bread!

Oat Bread (quality 100): level 1 cooked food. You have recovered 75 Satiety Points!

.....

What a marvellous stuff!

As I frantically chewed on the oat bread in my mouth, although it had become moist, it still carried the young girl's scent. Legend said that there was a kind of tea leaves that would be dried inside a young girl's chest straight after picking. It was a widespread phenomenon in Anhui. Those leaves were called XXX (Damn I forgot the name). And right now, this oat bread had that a scent similar to that tea leaves. The fragrant was enough to bewitch just about anyone.

In an instant, I recovered a huge part of my strength. Although the level of this oat bread was not that high, but my level was also not high, hence it was enough to replenish a big portion of my strength!

I jumped up, my body all fired up now, as I smiled towards the little loli, "Little girl, what is your name?"

"I'm Xin Ran!" she replied in a sweet voice.

Actually it was a useless thing to ask, as I had already seen her name floating on top of her head: Lady Xin Ran LV-15. This was a naive girl that had not been tarnished by anyone, otherwise she wouldn't lend a helping hand to me, who was the enemy of the Human Race, a skeleton of the Undead Race.

I continued, "Xin Ran, why are you here? This is a place where a lot of Undeads appear, what will you do if something wrong happened?"

Xin Ran blinked her eyes and said, "My mother's eyes had gone blind. According to the witch doctor in my town, my mother's eyes can be healed with a freshly picked mushroom on a rainy day. That's why, I..."

"Oh, so that's how it is. Are you going to come here everyday in the future?"

"Yeah!"

I revealed a smile and moved away from Xin Ran a little, afraid that she would be scared by my appearance. Then, I asked, "Xin Ran, in the future

I will come to find you here everyday. Could you bring me a piece of bread?"

Xin Ran nodded, "Okay, big brother, do you like the bread that my mom baked?"

"Yeah yeah!"

"Ahh...Okay, Xin Ran will remember that!"

I was rather speechless. Such a foolish young girl, she didn't even want anything in return?

Thinking of that, I took out a silver from my inventory and shot it towards Xin Ran. Like a curved baseball ball, the silver fell perfectly right into Xin Ran's basket.

"Bring that home to buy some flour. I can't eat those bread for free."

"Yeah, alright! Then, big brother, I will go home first. Mom will be worried about me if I went out too long."

"Alright!"

.....

Xin Ran carried the basket and hopped across the grassland. She looked like a beautiful butterfly, disappearing quickly from my view. Aih, it was really a pure maiden that was hard to come by!

My stamina recovered, I strode towards Frozen Mound and went to the Undead Camp to find the Undead Swordsman Su Lun. Choosing the option "Learn Skills", a list of available skills for level 20 were immediately listed right in front of me-

[Summon Undead]: Summons an undead that will not be stronger than the summoner as a monster slave.

[Earth Evasion]: Enter the ground to hide. Movement speed will decrease by 90% and concealment could be easily broken.

.....

Every single skill would need 20 silvers to be learnt. Since I had become a millionaire with 92 silvers, I immediately learnt both of the skills.

[Summon Undead]. This skill was naturally very powerful, it had the ability to summon a fighting helper. Regardless of it being summoned to inflict additional damage or to serve as a meat shield, it would still be useful. As for [Earth Evasion], it should be an ability to save one's life. Of course, if one didn't mind a slower movement speed, it could also be used to approach monsters in an ambush.

I tried using [Earth Evasion], and immediately my body turned into countless blood red vines that entered the earth in lightning speed. I could watch the situation above the ground, but my movement speed turned extremely slow. It was so slow that if I had used this kind of speed to walk to the Floating Ice City, my hair would probably turn grey before I managed to reach my destination.

However, having the ability to watch different stuffs above ground when I was hidden underground was really powerful. My mind immediately thought of the snow-white thighs in the Floating Ice City. If I used [Earth Evasion] and hid underneath the main entrance of Floating Ice City, I would be able to see girls of all races, the elves, demoness and human, that passed by. Their short skirt fluttered in the wind as their snow white thighs moved gracefully, it would be an entertainment of the highest quality!

Immediately, [Earth Evasion] became a trump card skill in my subconscious mind.

.....

At this time, my instructor, the Undead Swordmaster Su Lun, looked at me disdainfully as he asked, full of contempt, "Stinky brat, what are you doing? How could you use such a superficial skill, the [Earth Evasion] here?"

I immediately cancelled the [Earth Evasion] skill, and my body transformed from the countless blood red vines into a skeleton once again. I then took out 40 Skeleton Fingers and said, "Master, these are the items that I had collected from our enemies. Only the Undead Knight Cyan Rain is waiting for us in the graveyard now."

Su Lun took the Skeleton Fingers and humped coldly, "This Cyan Rain was really unafraid of death. He actually dared to enter into my territory. I'm going to let him taste the powerful skills of an Undead Swordmaster! Little Skeleton, follow me along. I'll teach you a lesson about the Law of Strength!"

I was filled with admiration, "Master, this way!"

I led Su Lun and arrived at the outskirts of the graveyard once again. Through the journey, all the skeletons that had respawned and crossed our paths were immediately killed by Su Lun in an instant. He held a two handed sword that he could swing easily to kill a level 22 Iron Skeleton with one slash. He was simply too powerful!

.....

Very quickly, we arrived at the edge of the graveyard. Undead Knight Cyan Rain was right in the middle of a graveyard garden, holding a sword, looking grave and stern.

My master – Undead Great Swordmaster Su Lun lifted his sword and walked towards the graveyard garden. Hands akimbo, he faced the Undead Leader Cyan Rain and then shouted arrogantly, "Cyan Rain, you degenerate! Come here and accept your death!"

Chapter 20 – Weeping Fireblade

To the Undead Race, the graveyard's Corpse Pond was a sumptuous feast equivalent to a high class entertainment.

I stood at the corner of the Corpse Pond, reaching out my hand. With a glow, I activated my [Summon Undead] ability. In an instant, a small, shrivelled skeleton crawled out of the Corpse Pond. It stopped at my side, trembling with fear, looking ready to submit to my orders and be a perfect subordinate.

[Monster Slave] (Beginner)

Level: 5

Attack: 15-50

Defense: 20

Health: 150

Special Characteristics: Will disappear if its master logged off.

.....

Little skeleton bowed respectfully to me, but I, unfortunately, could only see the word "Trash" on its forehead. With a defense of 20, attack of 50 and health of 150, could it even survive a punch?

I shook my head helplessly. At this moment, suddenly, the Undead Knight Cyan Rain discovered us, his enemies. Raising his sword, he charged forward, roaring loudly, "Lowly undead, go back to hell!"

Su Lun also shouted loudly as he charged forward with his sword!

"Clang!"

Through the sounds of metal clanging with each other, the two powerful BOSS and NPC met in the middle. It looked like Su Lun, the great swordmaster, had the upperhand. He pushed Cyan Rain far back with just an attack from his sword!

Cyan Rain roared angrily as he slided around ten metres back. Just as he was preparing to charge forward once again, a flash of bronze light appeared from his back!

"Pu!"

"217 ! "

I unleashed a [Death Blade] heavily down on him. Cyan Rain froze for a second, as his health decreased by a significant amount. This was a boss monster, I wouldn't want to miss out an opportunity to get valuable experience and drops!

"Are you seeking death?!"

Cyan Rain turned his sword around, sharp and fast like the wind!

"Cha!"

His sword broke my defense. Blood spurting out, a high damage number appeared on top of my head – 321!

What a bastard! He almost killed me with one attack!

At this moment, my monster slave, the little skeleton, charged forward. It increased its worth in my eyes as it defended me against the BOSS's next attack. In just a moment, it was chopped to eight pieces of bones.

I hurriedly drank a health potion, while Su Lun charged forward once again, engaging Cyan Rain in a death match. The two bosses fought against each other. In the end, Su Lun gained the advantage, depleting Cyan Rain's health to a critical point. And at this moment, my health had went back full. I charged forward once again!

A thread of blood glowed upon my blade, as my [Undead Strength] concentrated on it. Unfortunately [Undead Strength] could only work with living organisms. It did not have any effect on a monster of the Undead Race like Cyan Rain.

Cha!"

Another sword slashed, shaving off 200 points from the BOSS's health. This time I had learnt my lesson. I immediately retreated and let Master Su Lun blocked his attack. When the BOSS missed, I attacked him once again. Raising my sword, [Death Blade] once again penetrated Cyan Rain' face.

"Ao..."

Wailing a miserable cry, Cyan Rain collapsed to the ground and died!

I quickly charged forward with a speed much faster than Su Lun. Sweeping my gaze across, I immediately shoved all of the spoils of war into my inventory.

There were three Large Magic Stone of quality 97, 98, 94 respectively. They were of high quality, so they must be able to fetch a high price.

Furthermore, this Undead Leader had also dropped two pieces of equipment. One was a sword that glowed a blood-red colour, and the other was a cyan coloured cloak. The latter made me extremely happy, because a cloak provided an option for the wearer to cover his or her face. As long as I wanted it, I could cover my face from others, preventing them from finding out that I was a skeleton.

Both of my hands were trembling, excited beyond words as I opened my equipment inventory. I checked out the blood-red coloured sword first. When the sword's item window appeared in front of me, I was so happy that I thought I was going insane!

[Weeping Fireblade] (Bronze-tier equipment)

Attack: 25-40

Strength: +8

Required Level: 25

.....

Bronze-tiered equipment, it was actually a bronze-tiered equipment!
Hahaha, I am going to be big!

What a powerful weapon, it had 40 attack damage! It also added 8 points to strength. This must be one of the most deadly weapons in the current stage of the game. My current Green Forest Blade only had an attack point of 18, it was equivalent to a vegetable knife when compared to the Weeping Fireblade. However, even Green Forest Blade had caused people's jealousy, if others knew that I had this Weeping Fireblade in my hands, wouldn't there be chaos?

Feeling excited, I put back the Weeping Fireblade into my inventory. Its required level was 25, but I was only level 22 after killing the BOSS. I still need three more levels. I will work hard to gain three levels in two days to equip the Weeping Fireblade and increase my power by multiple folds!

Still feeling ecstatic, I checked out the item properties of the cloak. In the next moment, I did a somersault once again-

[Cyan Fire Cloak] (Bronze-tier equipment)

Defense: 22

Stamina: +7

Additional Attribute: Increases the wearer's evasion by 0.5%.

Required level: 25

.....

Damn! It was another bronze-tiered equipment. This time, I really did strike it rich! Its defense reached a frightening 22 points; furthermore, it

adds 7 points to stamina, and also had a special additional attribute, increasing 0.5% evasion rate! Although it wasn't that high, it was still an additional attribute. These two equipments would really make anyone dance with joy!

Constraining my excitement with all my might, I kept the two equipments back into my inventory. Then I spoke to Su Lun to complete the quest!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have finished the quest [Undead Knight – Cyan Rain]. You have received 4000 experience points and 100 fame!

.....

"Shua!"

A golden light glowed again as I rose another level. I had reached level 23, only two levels left before I could equip the bronze-tiered equipments. Next, I opened the Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board once again-

1. Wind Fantasy LV-26 Occupation: Radiant Ranger
2. Domineering Mage lvl 24 Occupation: Mage
3. Domineering Knight lvl 24 Occupation: Magic Knight
4. Domineering Archer lvl 24 Occupation: Archer
5. Domineering Warrior lvl 24 Occupation: Warrior

6. Blazing Sun lvl 23 Occupation: Warrior
7. Ghost Valley lvl 23 Occupation: Death Knight
8. Fallen Hero lvl 23 Occupation: Undead Swordsman
9. Descent of the Dragon lvl 21 Occupation: Magic Knight

10. Clearwater lvl 21 Occupation: Archer

.....

Easy peasy! The Ranking Board was just like an escalator to me, I could just go up the escalator any time if I want to, haha!

The Great Swordmaster Su Lun patted my shoulders and gave me a praising look, "Little one, you are very strong, much stronger than any other newborn undead I've known!"

I nodded my agreement. At this time, could it be that Ghost Valley was sneezing?

Su Lun sheathed his sword and started walking back to Frozen Mound, while I followed him from behind. I planned to check if there were new quests available from Sentinel Guard Leader Falk. The levelling up speed from killing monsters alone couldn't be compared to killing monsters and doing quests at the same time.

Going back to Frozen Mound, I sold the magic stones. My total gold suddenly rose by a large amount! Finally, I had 1 gold and 41 silvers of wealth!

A strong feeling of excitement suddenly welled in my heart. I went over to the Undead Storage NPC and set up a personal storage, in exchange of 5 silvers. Then, I stored my Weeping Fireblade and Cyan Fire Cloak all inside. If I accidentally died and dropped the while hunting outside, I would probably cry tears of blood.

After repairing my equipments, bought some health potions and finished my preparation, I started my levelling to 25!

I ran outside excitedly. Suddenly, someone crawled out of the Corpse Pond, wielding a spear, looking extremely disheveled as he crawled out. It was none other than Ghost Valley, his health bar showing not even 30% of his health left.

.....

Was Ghost Valley attacked by someone?

I couldn't help but froze as I hurriedly took out my sword, shouting, "What's the situation?"

Ghost Valley gritted his teeth as he crawled out. Gulping down a bottle of health potion, he shouted, "There is a group of people from the Floating Ice City that suddenly proclaimed to purge all of the Undead players in Frozen Mound. Damn, here they come...."

"Hua!"

The thick bushes of the forest split open as one person charged out, wielding a spear. A line of words floated on top of his forehead, 'Descent of the Dragon'!

[Mad Dragon]!

I narrowed my eyes. It was a good thing they came. [Mad Dragon] members were simply too reckless and mad. With their trashy skills, how could they have the qualifications to purge Frozen Mound?

Although Ghost Valley didn't count as my friend, but [Mad Dragon] was my enemy, I had to help him in this situation!

"It's you!?"

Descent of the Dragon roared furiously as he saw me. Two warriors came out from his back, wielding white coloured sword as they charged forward. A flicker of light started to glow from their swords, it was the warrior's level 10 skill, [Heavy Slash]!

My face darkened as my feet started to move quickly on the ground. Leaves and blades of grasses flew as my figure turned to shadow, moving in a perfect Z three metres back. The two warrior's Heavy Slash cut into empty air, and both of them could only stared blankly at each other. Surprise filled their faces, "How...How could it be, what skill is that?"

"Cha!"

My Green Forest Blade heavily slashed through one of the warrior's throat. Following a bronze light, my [Death Blade] skill hacked through the other warrior's head.

"274 ! "

"311 ! "

Following an "Ah!" sound, the warrior on the left side slowly collapsed to the ground, while the warrior on the right started to retreat back, his health on the brink of death. However, I followed him quickly and killed him with a stab of my sword.

Behind me, Ghost Valley's voice shouted out, "Fallen Hero, be careful of the assassin's ambush, their assassin is extremely powerful!"

My heart froze. It's coming!

"Shua!"

A sharp blade tip suddenly burst towards me. It was assassin's level 10 skill – [Cold Spike]!

In that instant, my body fluttered to the right, light as a feather. The [Cold Spike] attack stabbed into empty air, a big MISS appearing as I successfully evaded the skill.

"What the heck? How could this happen?!"

[Mad Dragon]'s ace assassin, Arrogant Mad Dragon, shouted in surprise as he retreated back as quick as possible. Seemed like he was experienced enough to know that in a PK between an assassin and swordsman, the moment an assassin failed his ambush, he must retreat

and look for another opportunity. However, in the early stage of this game, low-leveled assassins did not have various skills such as Stealth, Shadow Ambush etc. If his ambush failed, it would mean his whole attack strategy had failed. If he still did not retreat, the only other option for him is death.

I was about to chase to kill Arrogant Mad Dragon, but suddenly a blazing pain seared through my shoulders. I had been shot with an arrow!

Amongst the thick forest, two archers appeared, one level 17 and the other level 18. Although both wielded a white tiered bow, their attack was not to be belittled. The bow in their hands had additional attributes that added to agility, hence their attack speed was extremely fast. In just a moment, four arrows was already shot towards me.

"45 ! "

"41 ! "

"27 ! "

"31 ! "

Damage numbers flooded my view. Although my defense was high, but I wouldn't be able to last so many attacks at once. After all, my health was limited. At this rate, I could only probably last half a minute.

I quickly turned, running like towards the place where the Sentinel Guards were guarding Frozen Mound. I could only survive with the help

of NPCs, as I wouldn't have known how many [Mad Dragon] members had come to attack us. I could probably fight three vs one, but it was really difficult to do more than that, as it was the limit for this current stage.

"That jerk is running away, chase after him!" Descent of the Dragon swung his spear and started to shout violently.

At the same time, the two archers also chased after me, carrying their bows on their hands. The two players who had additional agility attributes were extremely fast, they chased after me in an instant. Ghost Valley, on the other hand, carried his spear as he ran forward, ten metres ahead of me, shouting as he looked back, "What are we gonna do? Are we going to let these bastards destroy our camp?"

"Humph!"

I humped coldly, gulping down a bottle of health potion to recover my health. Then, I abruptly turned around, my body fast as lightning as I charged towards the archers. My Green Forest Blade swung down quickly as I unleashed my [Death Blade] and normal attack combo!

"Cha cha!"

The sound of my sharp blade slashing the leather armour of one of the archers open sounded especially pleasant in my ears. That archer couldn't even defend and could only froze in fear as two high damage numbers appeared on his forehead. He immediately collapsed to the ground.

I didn't even make a sound as I charged towards the other archer. With a slide of my feet, I immediately reached him and unleashed my normal attack+[Death Blade] combo on his chest!

"210 ! "

"224 ! "

It was another instant KO!

"Beautiful!"

Ghost Valley was so surprised that he couldn't help but cheer out loud.

Before he could even finish, a blade of dagger suddenly shot towards him like an arrow, splitting the air as it went. It was the assassin's [Ambush]!

"Cha!"

"247 ! "

[Cold Spike]'s damage was extremely powerful. Ghost Valley lost a bunch of health in an instant, yet he didn't hesitate as he thrusted his spear and unleashed [Flaming Thrust]!

"274 ! "

His skill was an original skill that was especially targeted for leather armoured players.

With just one attack, he managed to kill the ambushing assassin. However, Ghost Valley's health was on the brink. He quickly ran towards the Sentinel NPCs.

I followed him along. Descent of the Dragon brought seven archers, five mages, three priests, one bard, one monk and two knights along. Everyone was from the [Mad Dragon] guild. That jerk, with such a formation he could probably conquer a small kingdom. Or at least, that formation was not something that Ghost Valley and I would be able to counter.

"Forward!"

Descent of the Dragon waved his hands, and all of his subordinates charged forward at the same time.

Chapter 21 – Wind Fantasy

"Quick, Fallen Hero, this way!"

Ghost Valley rushed towards the Sentinel Guards. If I was not mistaken, there were at least seven level 20 Darkness Alliance NPCs. Maybe they could provide us with some protection.

In the darkness of the night, various shadows flew past. After running for around thirty seconds, I finally saw the glowing light from the simple guard post. The mighty, extraordinary Sentinel Guard Leader Falk guffawed when he saw me and Ghost Valley, "Little Skeletons, what brings the two of you here?"

In the next moment, Guard Leader Falk's face darkened, "Heavens, how did humans find this place? Guards, ready your weapons and kill them!"

Immediately, all the Sentinel Guards got fired up. Seven level 20 NPC soldiers charged towards the group of people chasing Ghost Valley and me with weapons in their hands.

Including Descent of the Dragon, the 20 people in [Mad Dragon] forged ahead fearlessly. In reality, they really had no need to feel fear; the stats of level 20 NPCs and level 20 monsters weren't very different. The battle would probably go in the players' favor.

"Charge! First eliminate the NPCs, then slaughter those two demonic bastards!"

Descent of the Dragon raised his spear, and led the group to charge forward. His spear lit up in blazes, and he suddenly unleashed [Blazing Thrust] that pierced through an NPC soldier's chest with a bang. With 3 archers behind him shooting the NPC simultaneously as well, the NPC was instantly killed!

"Damn....the volley of arrows shot by the archers is too frightening..." Ghost Valley and I looked at each other in dismay with shock on our faces. There was no way we could've imagined these circumstances.

"Shua shua shua!"

The level 10 archers' precise arrows flashed with cold glints as they sped through the forest. In less than half a minute, 5 NPC Sentinel Guards had fallen down in pools of blood. On the other hand, [Mad Dragon]'s side had suffered almost zero damage!

Descent of the Dragon was extremely proud of these events, and he laughed out loud, "Did you see that? Our firepower is still a force to behold. Continue to kill! I've already started recording this battle. When we get back, I'll upload the video onto the official forums to raise [Mad Dragon]'s popularity. Hahahaha!"

.....

Gritting my teeth, I said in a heavy voice, "Ghost Valley, we shouldn't just sit here waiting for our deaths. Prepare a surprise attack. We'll first kill off those 7 archers; I'll get rid of the 4 on the right, and you can take the 3 on the left!"

Ghost Valley was shocked, "Heck, aren't you overestimating my abilities?"

"Stop spouting nonsense. At the most, I can only go against 4 people alone. Just do whatever you can. Charge!"

With a bellow, I bent my legs so that my whole body was shaped like a drawn bowstring. Then I suddenly rushed in and appeared next to the archer on my right like a flash of lightning, yelling, "Die!"

"Shua!"

My Green Forest Blade brushed past the archer's neck, inflicting 274 damage, instantly killing the archer!

I swiftly turned around. Before the other archer had even reacted, I had activated [Death Blade], my sword glowing with a bright light. I immediately swung it down on his shoulder. With a miserable cry, he also lost his life.

Quick as lightning, he had managed to kill two people within two seconds. Ghost Valley fought like a mad ghost. Thrusting his spear, he unleashed his [Blazing Thrust]+normal attack combo, then turned around to duel with two other archers.

On the other hand, the two archers wielding longbows that were approaching me, bellowed, "Damn, this bastard is so impudent. Let's kill him!"

Before they manage to put arrows to their bow, a cold wind suddenly blew past them as I ran towards them quickly. I went as close as less than

20 cm in front of the archers and enjoyed the look of fear in theirs eyes.

Under the game system, archers couldn't target or activate their archery skills on anyone within the range of three yards.

"Damn!"

This archer was experienced and wise. He immediately switched the long bow in his hands to a short dagger and slashed it towards me. He created a scar on my armour, causing 17 points of damage to me. Isn't his attack too low?!

"Shua!"

I flung my sword overhead, disappearing from my original position as I swung my sword down on the archer. Receiving my attack, he slowly knelt on the ground, blood seeping out from his neck. This archer had a full-agility build, while I was a warrior with a full-strength build. As long as I did not miss my attack, only death awaits him!

"Brats, forward! It's time to protect our race's dignity. For more wealth and women, let's kill!" In the darkness of the night, battle cries resounded as Sentinel Guard Leader Falk shouted his command, leading the two soldiers left from the earlier attacks to fight a skirmish with Descent of the Dragon and the others. These NPCs were too loyal, they had bought us time to prepare for our sneak attack.

I braved the arrows as I downed two bottles of health potions. Finally, I

reached the fourth archer. With a swing of my sword a slide of my feet, I finished him with a perfect arch slash. My sword swung down unstoppably for a few more times as I immediately killed him on the spot.

Nice! The whole process didn't take more than 30 seconds. Looks like my reaction delay was not even 0.7 seconds any more!

.....

On the other hand, Ghost Valley had also disposed of two archers. He was carrying his spear as he chased after the last archer, who didn't even have 20% of his health left.

"Motherfucker, die!"

Suddenly, while chasing after the archer, Arrogant Mad Dragon appeared out of nowhere, ambushing Ghost Valley as he struck him with a dagger on his back.

"Fuck!"

My feet moved as fast as an arrow as I charged forward, my sharp and cold sword piercing Arrogant Mad Dragon head ruthlessly as I shouted, "Arrogant Mad Dragon!"

My attack attracted his attention as my sword went down on him. Arrogant Mad Dragon skills weren't that bad himself, as he gasped and quickly turned away to retreat, evading my attack on him.

Ghost Valley who received my help, continued to pursue the dying archer.

On the other hand, I pounced on Arrogant Mad Dragon quickly. This time, my speed was unavoidable as my sword glinted a cold flash in the dark night.

"Ah?!"

Arrogant Mad Dragon quickly dodged to the right. I couldn't help but crook a smile as my feet slid away, my figure seemingly disappearing from its original position. In the next moment, I had suddenly appeared on Arrogant Mad Dragon's right. With a perfect arch, I swung my sword twice, fast as lightning, unleashing my [Death Blade]+normal attack combo!

"218 ! "

"311 ! "

Arrogant Mad Dragon could only stare at the damage numbers. He never thought that my speed could increase so much in a short time. He closed his eyes in helplessness as his corpse collapsed on the edge of the Corpse Pond.

.....

The fight had totally went against Descent of the Dragon's expectation. He had even recorded the fight. Seeing his subordinates falling one by one powerlessly, he couldn't help them at all. Facing the Sentinel Guard Leader Falk who turned out to be level 25 gave him a headache, although the NPC's health was not even 25%.

"Ghost Valley, finish the monk!"

I bellowed loudly as I charged towards the mage. At the same time, I received three [Thunder] spell attacks that caused my whole body to be limp and numb. Fortunately this mage's equipment was nothing much and their levels were also still low. Otherwise, two volleys of [Thunder] attacks would have killed me on the spot.

Downing one health potion, I raised my sword and charged towards the first mage. The other two mages quickly retreated backwards, but I didn't care about them at all. I turned my body to finish off Descent of the Dragon.

At this moment, with two miserable cries, the two [Mad Dragon]'s mages met their ends!

"Damn, what's happening?!"

Ghost Valley's eyes opened wide, as if he couldn't believe what was happening in front of him.

A cold look flashed across my eyes. "Careful, there's an expert!"

Shrinking back, Ghost Valley and I both charged at Descent of the Dragon. A nearby tactician and bard screamed as they fell unto the ground, dead. Both had been instantly killed. In the hazy, dim light of the night, we couldn't even see the appearances of the people that had mounted a sneak attack on us.

"Be careful. Replenish your health first, he'll rush over and attack!"

I coldly surveyed my surroundings. Descent of the Dragon was currently in a fierce fight with the NPC Leader Falk, unable to stop halfway.

"Hua!"

Wind rose, and clouds bubbled up.

The grass waved back and forth as a white robe suddenly swept past it. Sparks flew as an attack was activated. This white clad warrior thrust his bright, silver, sharp sword straight through Ghost Valley's chest!

"371 ! "

With a horizontal pull, another damage number flew out — "404!"

(Shiro: Error – next chapter not found)

Damn, instant kill!

My eyes grew round. I hadn't imagined that Ghost Valley would be instantly killed by someone!

When I saw this expert's name, I suddenly understood.

Wind Fantasy!

Floating Ice City's number one player!

.....

The milky white robe was surrounded by a dense silver light, and I was unable to see his face.

"Humph!"

I pulled out my sword and charged forward. So what if he was currently the highest level player?

Wind Fantasy quickly recoiled back, and he turned around to return to where the NPC leader was. Using his sharp sword, he waved it across Falk, immediately depleting a large chunk of Falk's health. Wind Fantasy's might was really terrifying, it was no wonder he had been able to rise to become the highest level player.

My feet swiftly moved away, leaving the NPC's vicinity. I then swept the point of my sword outwards!

"Shua!"

Wind Fantasy let out an exclamation of shock. His reaction time was extremely fast, and he lowered his head to dodge. At the same time, the point of his sword swung in a smooth arc, sending an attack towards my waist!

"What a beautiful movement!"

I couldn't help but inwardly admire the attack. The number of people in Floating Ice City that had movements as skillful as this person's were just a handful. Even though I only had a 0.5 second delay now, I still wasn't necessarily his rival.

"Pu! Pu!"

Two sounds rang out in succession. Neither I nor he could dodge each other's attacks.

"274 ! "

"265 ! "

There wasn't much difference in our attacks; the damage was about the same.

However right at that moment, Descent of the Dragon's cruel face appeared. His spear shot outwards and seemed to swallow me like a viper, [Blazing Thrust]!

I inwardly cried out at my misfortune as my lower back burned in pain. However, it was already too late. Wind Fantasy's blade flashed like lightning, and I suddenly felt an intense pain in my chest as the last of my health disappeared.

"Pa!"

As my body fell the ground, my spirit was released, and my vision turned the color of ash.

The instant I died, a strange scene occurred. Wind Fantasy didn't thank Descent of the Dragon for his help; instead, he quickly slashed [Mad Dragon]'s guildmaster as fast as the wind and fierce as lightning. He then turned around and slashed at the Sentinel Guard Leader Falk a few times, beheading him. It seemed like he was completing some type of specific mission.

My spirit materialized in the cemetery. I was very close to my body; 2 minutes was enough to reach it. Sitting in empty air next to his body was Ghost Valley's spirit. He didn't dare to revive since the white robed Wind Fantasy was lazily leaning against a nearby tree. It didn't look like he had any intention of leaving.

Damn, a person was guarding both my and Ghost Valley's bodies?

"Fallen Hero, what do we do?" Ghost Valley messaged me.

I replied through clenched teeth, "We'll revive together and kill him!"

"Ok!"

I checked the time, then said to Ghost Valley with confidence, "Watch my hand as I count to three. On three, we'll revive at the same time. Keep in mind that we only have 50% health when we revive, so use a potion before you charge!"

"Yea!"

Ghost Valley strongly agreed, his body emitting a grave and serious aura.

Chapter 22 – Guarding Corpses

"3!"

I held up three fingers, though strictly speaking, they were just three bones with pieces of bloody flesh sticking on to them .

Ghost Valley was watching over the strong enemy intently, preparing to stand up straight away the moment he resurrected. On the other hand, Wind Fantasy hardly cared about our bodies as he stood 10 meters away, waiting for our resurrection. He didn't seem to care about us, two Undead players, teaming up together.

"2!"

Breathing in deeply, I prepared to press the resurrection button.

"1!"

Resurrect!

Ghost Valley was an honest person and both of us resurrected at the same time. We both gulped down a health potion each and charged towards Wind Fantasy.

"Ah....?"

Wind Fantasy seemed to sneer at us, and suddenly counterattacked straight towards us. His white robe fluttering in the wind, his glowing weapon that struck fear on people's heart quickly charged towards Ghost Valley!

"Eh, aiming for me? Come—at me!"

Ghost Valley was an arrogant and proud person, therefore he didn't yield under this attack.

Wind Fantasy was also very bold, for he feinted with his sword to bait Ghost Valley into attacking. Then, instead, he turned his body and slid his sword along Ghost Valley's spear, brushing the sharp blade of his sword at Ghost Valley's neck. His entire movement flowed perfectly like flowing water, his demeanour befitting a true expert.

"Cha!"

When the silvery sword cut through Ghost Valley's neck, a large number appeared—558!

It was a critical strike, an instant death!

"Pu Tong!"

Ghost Valley's face was filled with bewilderment as he fell to his knees and died once again!

Instantaneously, Wind Fantasy turned towards me and directed his murderous aura towards me, ready to kill. At the same time, I activated my [Death Blade] and charged towards him, my body fast like a cheetah pouncing, my Green Forest Blade enveloped in a green radiance.

Caught off guard, Wind Fantasy was injured on his shoulder.

"Pu chi!"

Blood splattered, staining his white robes. Without waiting for him to recover, I quickly thrust forward, stabbing his chest, my sharp sword slick like a poisonous snake!

"327 ! "

"221 ! "

These two consecutive attacks were the result of my attack speed and power at their limits.

Thus, with his HP bar empty, Wind Fantasy slowly fell to the ground and dropped a level.

.....

"Ughh, he killed me . . . it was so painful!"

Ghost Valley had revived and walked towards Wind Fantasy's corpse, bitterly kicking it then said: "Fallen Hero, let's guard his corpse. He's currently the first in the Floating Ice City's rankings, even after dropping

to level 25. Let's guard over his body for one whole day and see if he could still be the annoying first ranked player!"

I couldn't help but laugh. Patting his shoulder, I said: "You guard him, I want to keep on levelling. Even if we were to guard over his corpse, I wouldn't be sure I would be able to kill him again once he revives....."

I wasn't being humble at all. I could only barely manage to defeat him after teaming up with Ghost Valley just now. If I were to fight against this person one on one, I'm afraid that my odds of winning is less than 50%!

Looking at the rankings, I found that I had fallen to level 22 while Ghost Valley fell to level 21. Both of us fall out of the top ten Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board. The ground around us were filled with corpses of over ten members of the [Mad Dragon] guild; even the first-ranked player, Wind Fantasy, encountered the same fate and was killed here. Frozen Ice Mound was indeed the territory of the Undead, befitting Mad Dragon then sent some people to find the corpse of Wind Fantasy. For someone or some people to be able to kill the top ranking player in Floating Ice, this news sent waves of terror throughout the city.

.....

Looking at Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk's corpse, Ghost Valley said: "This non-boss NPC needs up to 24 hours to resurrect. We definitely can't receive any missions today."

"Really?"

I smiled and didn't comment any more. Turning my body, I walked into Frozen Mound to replenish my potions and repair my equipments. Then, I

treaded along Frozen Alley, entering the jungle.

Anyway, I need to first rise to LV. 25. If I could equip the Weeping Fireblade and the Cyan Fire Cloak, I wouldn't be inferior to Wind Fantasy even in a direct confrontation.

In the edge of the cemetery, I looked for a leveling ground. LV. 25 Bone Spear Undeads, though weak in power were high in EXP. In the absence of missions, this monsters were still a good source of training.

"Gurgle....."

In front, a neutral creature appeared – Wild Chicken LV. 20. Its attack and health was all low, it died with two of my sword strikes. As its corpse collapsed to the ground, I moved forward and activated my [Corpse Pillage] skill!

"Ding!"

System announcement: Congratulations, you have obtained chicken egg x1! (Quality: 4)

There was nothing else. So I ate that egg raw and recovered 4 points of satiety. Compared to Xin Ran's oat bread, this was much worse.

Using one hand, I summoned an Undead with [Summon Undead]!

"Hiss, hiss....."

Struggling for a while, the dead chicken slowly stood up again, this time as a beautiful, magnificent Skeleton Chicken. It had became an Undead Servant of LV.10, with its attributes receiving great penalty. This [Summon Undead] ability was really "chicken".

(Shiro: real bad joke, i know. Dunno if this makes sense in English context. Chicken = weak/coward for clarification)

Continuing to level, after four hours of killing the skeletons, I finally rose to LV. 24. At this time, Du Shi San sent me a message: "Lu Chen, I just got to LV. 17, isn't that fast? We have already been online for at least ten hours. Isn't it time to go offline to eat and rest a bit?"

"Okay, I'll log out immediately!!"

Rushing back to Frozen Moud, I saw the the players from Mad Dragon guild had already resurrected and left. Wind Fantasy had also disappeared. His level had become LV.27, keeping his wide margin ahead.

Entering the cemetery, I found that Ghost Valley was just entering the grave. With a smile he turned to me: "Finished with work and returning home?"

With a thump, I laughed: "Yeah! Are you returning home too?"

"En, good night and sweet dreams!"

"....."

Logging out, I found that it was already three in the afternoon of the next day. I found that my body still felt refreshed and full of energy, as if I had just taken drugs and became like an Ultraman, my whole body full of energy. Though naturally when I stood up, I felt a wave of dizziness, confirming that this body of mine was indeed still human.

After washing myself up, Du Shi San and I went with to a restaurant downstairs. We asked for a bottle of alcohol and a few dishes. The restaurant served a few Hunan cuisines which were all quite delicious. The boss was a 30 year old woman, with a slim waist and plump butts. She looked enchanting when she walked; in Shi San's words, she was a 'bombshell'. This was one of the reasons why Du Shi San and I frequently visited here.

Du Shi San downed a glass and ate some of the dishes, his brows frowning deeply that it almost formed an JL character. He looked at the boss's ass as he laughed out, "LU=u Chen, through this years, a lot of girls have taken interest in you, yet why didn't you reciprocate them or show interest? Take Tan Xue from the Foreign Language Department in our third year high school for example. She was obviously interested in you."

"Tan Xue, who is Tan Xue?" I asked at a loss, draining my cup.

"F**k....." Du Shi San just glared at me and said: "In your third year of school, there was a heavy snow in Suzhou. Didn't she sent you a message saying: 'Ah, it's snowing outside, isn't it beautiful? Shall we go outside and watch the snow together?' Think about it, how did you answer....."

Muttering: "How did I reply? I have forgotten....."

"Damn....."Banging the table in frustration while he exclaimed in exasperation, "You replied with: 'Why would I go out on such a cold day!'"

"Damn!"I slammed the table: "Such a thing happened?!"

Du Shi San raised a glass towards me and said: "You aren't young anymore, you should find a wife already. Look at me, how happy I am....."

"How are you happy?" I chuckled: "Are you talking about your philandering ways and how every women from Suzhou to Shanghai is calling your name in bed?"

Staring blankly, Du Shi San said: "Shit, you know that too? That's right, that's what happened. How could I go on without girlfriends?"

Shaking my head, I replied: "Forget it, those things don't suit me."

"Not suitable? Don't tell me it's because they don't reach your standards..." Du Shi San helplessly retorted, "Back in the day, Tan Xue was the Madonna of the Foreign Language Department. If she didn't reach your standards, then who can...."

As he was speaking, his eyes lit up, like he remembered something: "Indeed, women like He Yi are simply women of the best quality. Shame... dear brother, can you really be the dominant over those types of women?"

Looking outside the window, I muttered: "I never thought of such matters before....."

Du Shi San just stared at me. After a while he said, shaking his head, "Nevermind, you are still just like how Tan Xue used to say you were, you are a big blockhead, a blockhead that wouldn't mature his whole life!"

I couldn't help but smile: "We can still live comfortably even without women. How about we talk about what course of action we should plan to take in the future now, eh?"

(Erza: Oh my, Lu Chen, Lu Chen. Du Shi San is correct, I'm worried for your future, not thinking about those types of things! Are you planning on becoming an old man alone?)

Then with great interest, Du Shi San chattered: "I'm nearly at LV. 20, and at LV. 25 I can choose a secondary profession. What do you recommend? Pharmaceuticals, wood-cutter, hunter, blacksmith, tailor?"

"Up to you, but don't forget you must be able to earn money."

"Blacksmithing would surely earn lots of money in the later stages of the game. I think I will learn blacksmithing."

"Ok!"

Du Shi San then smiled, eyes full of longing: "Lu Chen, when we are

high level players, we should start to make your own guild and spread our fame!"

"That's right!"

Clenching my fists, I shouted: "We shall establish a brand new guild that ignores all justice, laws and values to focus on our sole purpose of annihilating [Mad Dragon] and other kinds of tyrannising guild. We shall sweep the Floating Ice City clean of any influences!"

"Ha ha, that's my intention exactly!"

Rather excitedly, Du Shi San called spiritedly: "Owner, two more bottles of alcohol!"

Chapter 23 – Wild Bear Hearts

I woke up and checked the time to find that it was already 2:00am. It was indeed an optimal time to grind levels. Most people would be asleep now, thus less competition to kill monsters.

Putting the helmet on, I was soon online again.

"Shua!"

Darkness filled my sight, this was the grave's surroundings.

I clawed my way through the earth, spitting out the dirt in my mouth. It seems that in the future I really should buy a tent, sleeping in this grave isn't a solution. We, the Undead, were not from the Ancient Tomb Sect and would probably never meet Xiao Long Nu, so sleeping in a grave wouldn't be of any use.

(Shiro: Ancient Tomb Sect and Xiao Long Nu are based on The Return of the Condor Heroes. Best classic Wuxia novel in my opinion.)

Looking at my stats, I am level 24 with 3% experience, but my rank had gone down to 247th in the Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board. There were really too many grinding maniacs, but the first place was still held by Wind Fantasy at level 28. Seems that he hasn't logged out for a long time. Second place was level 26, not too far from me. Then from ranks 10-259 players were all around level 24-25. The standards of front-line players were too high.

But it's not that surprising. A lot of gamers from the Yangtze River Delta Region had always been heroes. Since the era of [Moon Monochrome], there were Lin Fan and Mu Rong Shan Shan, and during the era of [Soul Trial], there were Frivolous Scholar and Seven Starlight. It could even be said that the Jiangsu and Zhejiang province were the cradles for Gamer Kings. And now, the players from Jiangsu and Zhejiang province were all gathered in the newbie villages near Floating Ice City. One could only imagine the tension and clash of the superpowers and guilds in this city. It would probably be the most intense in all other nine Level 2 Main Cities.

(Shiro: Moon Monochrome and Soul Trial are the VRMMORPGs from the first and second novels of Virtual World series)

Walking out of Frozen Mound Alley, I found that my hunger was at 54. That's not really good, should I look for some food?

Thinking about it, I should go to the forest and search for Xin Ran, right? That small loli would have most probably bought some oat bread for me. That stuff really fills your hunger, it was like a hard biscuit.

Easily eliminating some wandering skeletons, I didn't forget to absorb their Undead Flame and picked up their drop items. Of course, they only dropped dirty rags, that had no use whatsoever.

Twenty minutes later, when I entered the lush forest, I heard a silvery voice. Ah, I was right, the small lolu Xin Ran had came out to pick mushrooms!

Rushing out of the bush, I was surprised to see two rabbits running

cheerfully around her. Harmless to animals and humans, this loli was indeed special. The rabbits clearly weren't afraid of her. However, as soon as I came, due to my strong undead spirit, I caused the two rabbits to dart away as fast as lightning.

Xin Ran turned around, couldn't help but be surprised as she giggled: "Big brother, you finally came!"

Walking to her with a smile, I replied: "Ah yes, Xin Ran did you bring me my bread?"

"En, I brought it, I brought it!"

Xin Ran then took out a light brown-coloured bread from her embrace, still emitting her body temperature. After eating it, my stamina immediately soared. Not bad, it was enough for me to last at least 12 hours of gaming.

After eating the bread, I looked down at Xin Ran who was still looking at me with her pair of clear eyes, dark as obsidian.

"Is there something wrong, Xin Ran?"

"Yeah."

She nodded her head while pointing to the south and said: "Big brother, I saw a very scary old man over there. It seemed like he was wounded."

"Eh?"

My eyes shined, it was an NPC tip, so there must be a quest. Ha ha, there's work for me to do!

"Xin Ran, will you accompany me over to take a look?" I asked.

"I can't, I need to return home. My mother is waiting for me..."

"Oh, then Xin Ran you should go home quickly!"

"Yeah."

So that small loli gracefully walked away through the grasses, leaving me a picture of her cute back.

Carrying my Green Forest Blade, I opened my world map and went south. I hadn't walked very far when a sudden burst of putrid air hit me. Along with a loud roar, a large shadow suddenly rushed over.

It was a black bear with blood red eyes. It opened his bloody mouth wide and slashed his powerful claws.

【Wild Forest Bear】(normal monster)

Level: 28

.....

A level 28 creature, finally a monster worth killing!

I grasped my Green Forest Blade and concentrated on Undead Strength. Level 1 Undead Strength can increase my critical rate by 5% when killing living targets. Since I could only kill Undead Skeletons in Frozen Mound, this skill had been benched all this while. Since I have met this living beast now, this skill had finally come in handy.

"Screech!"

The sharp blade slashed at the wild bear's eyes, splattering blood and dealing critical damage, -271 HP!

"Heh, isn't my attack power impressive?"

I couldn't help but smile. However, suddenly, the wild bear charged towards me, brandishing its claws and slashed it down my shoulder. A searing pain followed as a shocking damage number appeared in front of me; -154 HP!

Damn it, I only have 410 HP. If this goes on, I would be dead in three strikes!

I quickly dodged away. After the clash just now, I realized that this bear had a slow attack speed, but high attack power. His inertia was also quite bad. With regards to inertia, it was a type of agility based characteristics. To put it plainly, it's your turning speed!

With a slide of my feet, I immediately flew towards the side of the Wild Bear's body and slashed it fiercely. When the wild bear turned, I was already behind him ready to attack again. My [Death Blade] raised high up in the sky before I swung it down with all my might!

"564!"

Phew, critical strike!

"Ding~!"

System announcement: Congratulations, your skill【Death Blade】has risen to level 2. Damage to targets has now increased to 115%, but critical chance is decreased by 15%!

Unconsciously, I smiled: "Haha, my skill had risen!"

Following the death of the Wild Forest Bear, there was also another sound.

System announcement: Congratulations, your innate skill【Undead Strength】has risen to level 2. Any attack on living things will cause an additional 10% damage.

Heh, another skill had risen!

I looked at my skills' mastery levels: Death Blade (0/2000), Undead Strength (0/2000). Looks like I can no longer obtain mastery points, for

level 20 players can only raise their skills to level 2. If I want to raise it to level 10, then I need to be at level 100!

The higher the skill level, the stronger the effect, this is the level advantage. Especially seen in attack skills, such as [Death Blade]. With [Death Blade] at level 10, it could increase my attack by 55%. It was simply too powerful!

After killing the wild bear, I lowered my body and opened my hands wide to activate [Corpse Pillage]. In the next moment –

“Ding!~”

System announcement: You search items and acquired【Bear Leather (quality: 7)】!

【Bear Leather (quality: 7)】: 2 materials obtained, Tailoring skill required: Level 2!

There was a thick pile of bear leather in my hands. This was something that Tailor Players would need, and it was also a level 2 high-grade material. I should keep this, when I have time, I should sell it in Floating Ice City.

Generally, these materials came from monsters, but the drop rate isn't very high, only about 2%. Compared to that, the drop rate from my [Corpse Pillage] was so much higher. It's not a problem if the monsters did not drop items, I could pick it up myself. This powerful skill should really be exploited in the beginning of the game!

Continuing to move forward, there were increasing numbers of Wild Forest Bears in the forest ahead. This forest was a deserted place, players from Floating Ice City would probably take an hour to come here. The average player would be unwilling to spend such a long time walking here to level, it was simply not worthwhile.

Looking at the map, I suddenly realized: Wild Forest, this is where Wild Forest Bears Gather.

I had only walked a few steps when I suddenly heard **. Finally, I found it!

I advanced forward and was surprised to find an old man leaning against a tree. His chest was shredded and his shirt was blood soaked, clearly he was attacked by wild beasts. In the old man's hand was a short bow, a bamboo basket and a long spear. He was obviously dressed like a hunter.

"Ah.....ah, those damn bears, damn....."

I walked up to the elderly man and said, "Senior, is there anything I can help you with?"

It seemed that I scared the old man with my looks, and in his panic he cried: "You.....Are you an Undead?"

That made me realise that humans and undeads belong to different alliances. Knowing that I am an Undead, would he still give me a task?

So, preparing myself, I started talking non-stop, snivelling and crying: "Oh, don't even talk about it. Before, I was living outside Floating Ice City in a small house with a small farm. But that hateful noble casted me out of my home and forced me out of my home. Then, I wandered about and stumbled upon a graveyard. Suddenly, an Undead bit me and turned me into this. But in reality, I am still a pure young man inside....."

As I told the senior of my exaggerated painful history, tears welled in his eyes. He patted my shoulder and earnestly said: "Good boy, whether you are an undead or a human, you have the conscience of a good man. Don't worry, the Silver Moon Faction will definitely save you!"

I nodded and got down to business: "Senior, what's going on?"

"Oh, don't even mention it!" The old man lamented loudly and sobbed: "I was the only hunter in the village. So I came here to hunt some pheasants for the village, to use as rations for the winter. But I didn't expect that there were so many wild bears gathering in this place. I have already been chased by the bears for three whole days, I'm afraid I will die soon."

I shook my head with a smile: "Senior, don't worry. I'll help you get out of this forest!"

"Ah, really?" The old man's face lit up and he said: "Well then young man, if you can help get out, then I will give you an unimaginable reward!"

"Ai ya, you are too polite. Who are we.....so what is the reward?"

The old man looked surprised for a moment, and replied: "I am the best hunter around, and also a great cook. Any ingredients that come to me will turn into an amazing dish. If you help me get out, I will teach you two skills – Hunting and Cooking!"

.....

In that moment, my heart jumped up in joy!

In the days before the official opening, I studied the various side professions available. Hunting could help you obtain all sorts of cooking materials, while Cooking could use these materials to make various dishes. This was wonderful, for the system only allowed each player to learn one side profession. Yet this quest allowed me to learn two, I've hit the jackpot!

Isn't this good? Although I didn't have the amazing luck to win the first prize lottery, at least I still had an unexpected success.

Laughing heartily, I said: "Senior, how should I help you?"

The old man nodded: "I exerted myself too much. I have to replenish my stamina with high grade foods. Go kill those Wild Forest Bears and collect 20 Wild Bear Hearts for me!"

"Ding~!"

System announcement: You have accepted the task【Wild Bear Hearts】! (Level: E, Average)

Quest Description: Help Hunter Huang Huo recover his stamina. Kill at least 200 Wild Forest Bears and collect 20 Wild Bear Hearts to give to Huang Huo. You will then will receive rich rewards!

.....

Standing up, I entered into the jungle and started my killing spree.

Although Wild Forest Bears have high attack and are tough, I hold the advantage in attack and turning speed. A player's turning speed depends on the character's agility (50%) and the individual reactions (50%). My agility isn't that great, but my combat experience was at the absolute pinnacle.

After seven continuous kills, the quest item was finally dropped. It was a fresh, scarlet heart that was still beating strongly. Furthermore, I obtained 5 Grade 2 bear leather. This was indeed a high drop rate. As long as I use [Corpse Pillage], I could basically get a bear leather with every kill.

I wandering through the jungle alone. I had gotten used to this solitude training these past days. This training style was actually not bad.

In an instant, more than three hours have past. I have killed more than 300 hundred bears, and collected more than 250 bear leather. But I was still missing one bear heart.

"Pu!"

The scarlet light from the [Undead Strength] aura could be seen swirling around my blade as I slashed once, and then my [Death Blade]

followed, critically wounding and slicing the bear's neck!

"327!"

This double attack was sharp and acute, killing a bear in just one move. With a "pa ta" sound, it dropped a bear heart and a bear leather. Finally mission accomplished!

Inspecting my character stats, I was only a breadth away from level 25. I almost consumed all of my potions, and my equipments' durability was also quite low. The blade of my Green Forest Blade was also about to break away. But the harvests from this place were quite plentiful. The Wild Forest Bears hunt had dropped a total of 3 large magic stones and 9 small magic stones. My 40 storage spaces had nearly filled up, the drop rate was really too high.

Chapter 24 – Apple Jam

Going back to that old man, I took out the 20 Bear Hearts and gave it him: "Senior, I've brought back the items that you needed!"

The old man looked extremely excited as he received the items: "Young Undead, you really moved me. Come, this is a small token for you!"

"Ding~!"

System announcement: You have completed the task 【Wild Bear Hearts】. You have received 2500 exp and 70 fame. You have also obtained the quest reward: Large Magic Stone x 5!

.....

Damn! What an OP quest, it actually gave me five Large Magic Stones all at once?!

I almost burst into tears, the rewards of this quest were indeed ample and generous. Looking at my inventory, five large magic stones laid peacefully inside, with qualities ranging from 80-100. They could be sold for at least 1 gold coin!

A golden light then shone down upon me as I rose to level 25. I had fulfilled the level requirement to equip the Weeping Fireblade and the Cyan Fire Cloak. Unfortunately, these two items were still in Frozen Mound's storage. I must return there to equip them.

Holding the hearts with trembling hands, the old man said: "Young

man, I still need some fresh ginger!"

A jolt shot through my body, "Ginger?"

"Yes, its one of the ingredients."

"What do I need to do, to obtain the ginger?"

Thinking, he loudly said: "Go south-east. There will be a few wild gingers in the forest 1 km from here. You can go there to pick them, but you must first learn the Hunting skill."

As his words ended, he stretched out his hands and waved it a little. A blue light immediately enveloped my whole body-

"Ding~!"

System announcement: Hunter Huang Huo wants to teach you Hunting Skills. Decline or accept?

.....

Is there any reason to decline?! Quickly accepting, a new hunting skill immediately appeared in my skill window.

"Go, young undead, and savour the joy of hunting!"

"Ding~!"

System announcement: You have accepted the task 【Gathering Gingers】! (Quest level: F, lower class)

Quest description: Go to the Hundred Leaves Forest and gather 15 pieces of ginger to give to Hunter Huang Huo.

.....

In my Hunting skill, there were two different uses. One was Gathering, used to gather plant-based ingredients. The other was Hunting, used to gather animal-based ingredients. This was indeed a good set of skills.

Putting my Green Forest Blade away, this time, I tried avoiding monsters as much as possible. After all, there weren't much potions left in my inventory. If I still tried to kill monsters along the way, I would probably run out of my potion supply in the middle of nowhere. I didn't have a Floating Ice City's Return Scroll in my inventory, so I wouldn't be able to run away even if I want to.

Ten minutes later, I entered the legendary Hundred Leaves Forest. After avoiding the a group of 30 or so wolves, as I entered the forest, I found a few wild gingers sprouting out on the ground. I grew up in a village, thus I was very familiar with the appearance of ginger. Gingers that could be found in supermarkets are usually of the root-type, while wild gingers that grew on the ground have shoots similar to a bamboos'.

Stepping forward, I started to use my skill on a piece of ginger-

"Ding~!"

System announcement: You have acquired ginger x 3. Your hunting skill

proficiency has increased by 3 points!

Ginger, a level 4 ingredient.

Oh, the sense of accomplishment appeared while I threw it into my inventory. A group of five occupied 1 inventory space, and soon three inventory spaces were filled up. I had finished gathering 15 fresh gingers.

Quickly returning back, I gave the gingers to the old man. A red light glowed upon his body as he took out a small bottle of salt and displayed his Cooking skills on the scene. Stuffing the ginger slices into the bear hearts, he then seasoned them a little with salt. He then built a campfire and roasted the hearts for a while. A fragrant barbecue smell immediately appeared.

The old man then took out a small dagger and started to carve the hearts into thin stripes, then tasted a small piece.

I stood at his side without feeling anxious. After a while, the old man turned towards me and said: "Young Undead, your praiseworthy character has touched me greatly. Come and receive your rightful reward."

"Ding~!"

System announcement: You have completed the task 【Gathering Gingers】! You have received 500 exp and 1 fame. Your have also acquired +100 exp in Hunting Skills!

I was ecstatic, for this reward was quite good, especially the 100 exp for my Hunting Skills. Otherwise, if I were to slowly practise, how many level 1 ingredients must I collect to raise my skills?

After eating the hearts, the old man stood up and said: "Now, young man, escort me out of this forest to complete my task!"

I nodded my head and said: "Okay!"

Following the quest's storyline, the old man walked out of the forest slowly while I summoned a lvl 20 Bear Skeleton Guard. Although it couldn't help me much, it was still usable.

Now that I have reached level 25, with the addition of a lvl 20 skeleton meat shield, I have no real fear for these Wild Bears. The journey was smooth-sailing as I killed the bears along the way.

Exiting the jungle, we could see the city from a far distance. The old man laughed happily as if he had been given a new life, "Young man, you are extremely courageous and filled with a good sense of justice. I will pass down my most treasured skills to you!"

"Ding~!"

System announcement: Hunter Huang Huo wants to teach you Cooking skills. Decline or accept?

.....

After accepting the skill, another skill bar appeared on my skill window. I had officially broken the restriction of the system, having two side professions to myself!

Excited beyond words, I escorted the old man back to his village and ran like the wind back to Frozen Mound, ready to re-equip myself!

I took out the two pieces of equipment from my storage. The Weeping Fireblade was surrounded by a touch of a fiery murderous aura, while the Cyan Fire Cloak glowed with a mysterious blue ink-like gloss.

Replacing my Green Forest Blade with the Weeping Fireblade, and donning the Cyan Fire Cloak, I could feel the enhancements they gave—

ID: Fallen Hero

Profession: Undead Swordsman

Level: 25

Health: 490

Attack: 104-188

Defense: 61

Magic Resistance: 0

Fame: 274

Luck: 0

.....

Sure enough, bronze-tier equipment was too powerful. With just two bronze tier equips, my attack had risen to 188. My health had also reached 490. It could probably rival Ghost Valley's health, whose profession was a knight.

My confidence was greatly boosted at once!

At this moment, Du Shi San messaged me: "Lu Chen, how is your training going?"

"So-so, how about you?"

"Not bad, I managed to reach level 20. There is someone selling apple jam in the Floating Ice City's entrance, 4 silvers a jar. What kind of item is that?" Du Shi San asked.

"Is there anyone buying?"

"Yeah. Lots of Priests, Mages and Bards are buying it. The supply couldn't even keep up with the demand!"

"Hm... I understand. You should continue with your training!"

"Okay!"

I desperately tried to suppress my excitement. It was a chance to earn money! Apple jams are one of the products for Level 1 Cooking Skill. It had the ability to replenish mana that had been consumed for skills. In <Heaven's End>, there were no mana potions, only Enchanted Foods. Only 1 food could be consumed per minute, hence these foods were the most important items for the players in the Magic Category!

Opening my cooking recipes, a series of recipes greeted me–

LV 1. Apple Jam – you need: Apple x 5 & Empty bottle x 1. Restore: 100 mana

LV 2. Sticky Rice – you need: Glutinous Rice x 15, Chicken x 5 & Salt x 5. Restore: 200 mana

LV 3. you need – Green Pepper Meatballs: Green Peppers x 10, Rice x 20, Chicken x 10 & Salt x 15. Restore: 300 mana

LV 4. Cold Sliced Chicken – you need: Chicken x 20, Salt x 10 & Ginger x 15. Restore: 400 mana

LV 5. Braised Chicken & Rice – you need: Chicken x 30, Salt x 10, Green Peppers x 15 & Garlic x 10. Restore: 500 mana

LV 6. Stone Bone Fish – you need: Fish x 25, Salt x 10, Green Peppers x 10 & Garlic x 10. Restore: 600 mana

LV 7. Turtle Soup – you need: Fish x 20, Green Peppers x 20, Ginger x 20, & Salt 20. Restore: 800 mana

LV 8. Snow Rabbit Pot – you need: Snow Rabbit x 30, Green Peppers x 20, Garlic x 20 & Salt x 20. Restore: 1200 mana

LV 9. Arowana Pot – you need: Arowana x 20, Green Peppers x 25, Garlic x 25 & Salt x 25. Restore: 1500 mana

LV 10. Dragon Pot – you need: Dragon meat x 20, Green Pepper x 50, Garlic x 50 & Salt x 50. Restore: 2500 mana

.....

Apple Jam was only a LV 1 recipe yet it could be sold at such a high price. This opportunity really showed no bounds!

Well, I need to quickly grind my hunting and cooking skills to LV 2. To fight with two sub professions in the early part of the game, ensures a quick path to money. Thankfully these two skills came to me, otherwise I'm afraid the world will look down on me.

Returning to Frozen Mound, I went to gather the materials. One empty bottle cost 1 copper coin and could be overlapped in my inventory space. Hence, I bought 200 all at once, occupying two storage spaces.

I went to the forums and found a post that provides the coordinates to a fruit forest. Looking at the world map, I discovered that the fruit forest was south of Floating Ice City, around half an hour journey from my position. There was a wild apple forest in there, but the surrounding monster levels were quite high, so not many people dared to go there to pick apples. That was also the reason for the high price of the apple jam. Of course, the main reason was those unscrupulous businessmen who charged exorbitant prices for the apple jams. Otherwise, with a total cost of a few coppers, how could it be worth 4 silvers?

Carrying my Weeping Fireblade that was glowing with flame, I covered my face with my Cyan Fire Cloak. This way, I would look like a swordsman with a red-coloured name, instead of an Undead, the enemy of all humans.

Half an hour along a secluded path through the woods, I finally arrived at the fruit forest.

Going up to an old, burly apple tree, I plucked an apple. + 2 hunting experience. Oh, very good!

Just then, I heard a voice from behind—

"Young man, who allowed you to pick apples here?"

Chapter 25 – Fruit Forest

Startled, I turned around and saw a warrior wielding a green-coloured blade, glaring daggers at me as he coldly claimed, “This Fruit Forest has already been occupied by the Shadow Clan, so it would be sensible to leave now my friend. In this map, there are still many other fruit trees scattered around for picking.”

Shadow Maple LV-23 Warrior

Glancing at them, I couldn’t help but chuckle loudly: “Are you joking? This Fruit Forest is a public map; it’s definitely not your clan’s private map. Furthermore, there are so many fruit trees here, are you guys even able to pick everything up?”

“It’s none of your business!”

Shadow Maple coldly replied: “You will need to leave in three minutes. Otherwise, I will personally send you back to the city!”

My gaze froze. I didn’t expect that harvesting apples would result in provoking a PK. This world is too crazy, was it really hard for people to be satisfied? Do you really have to have everybody bowing at your feet to prove your might?

At that moment, two other players also appeared.

Shadow Volcano LV-22 Knight

Shadow Ocean LV-24 Archer

Obviously, these people were together. They intended to gang up on me, a solo player, with their greater number.

Shadow Ocean looked at me a smiled: " Fallen Hero? Tsk tsk, I think I saw you yesterday in the city's rankings, but you're only LV 25. Alright, I'll give you two choices now; 1. join our family or 2. die. Make your choice now!"

I couldn't help but laugh: "I choose the second opinion, but the ones who are dying are you!"

"So cocky!"

The knight, Shadow Volcano, angrily brandished a long sword and charged towards me. Thinking about it, this black-tier weapon with that shiny green glow, looked very familiar.

"Sha....."

Amongst the scattered grasses, at lightning speed, I disappeared from my position and suddenly re-appeared in front of Shadow Ocean. In the next moment, my Weeping Fireblade stabbing his stomach in one stroke, like a deathly viper. Without pause, I continued to push, the tip of my blade penetrating through his armour. I stabbed him without mercy as a blue glow suddenly enveloped my Weeping Fireblade.

"Death Blade!"

With a "Ca" sound, the sharp end of this bronze-tier sword almost chopped Shadow Volcano's body into two parts. A large damage number flew up — 375!

Too powerful!

"Ah?!"

As Shadow Volcano collapsed to the ground, his face was filled with shock and disbelief. He never thought that such a high leveled knight as he was could be killed with just one attack from another player!

"Fu*k, this brat actually dared to kill Volcano!"

Shadow Ocean shouted loudly as he suddenly raised his bow, releasing an arrow accurately targeted at me!

I stood my ground and received his attack, suffering 71 points of damage. This archer's strength was not weak, I must kill him first. Otherwise, he would cause me lots of trouble!

My body flew forward, splitting the air, as I threw in another ruthless attack.

"298!"

The damage numbers was so high that it left the archer in shock. He didn't even have the time to react before I moved to his side and quickly struck him again!

Archers didn't have much health originally, so I was fairly surprised that he was still alive even when my sword had dealt him around 300 damage. However, with another attack, Shadow Ocean dropped dead on the ground, and dropped a glittering leather wristguard to boot.

"Bang!"

Behind me, Shadow Maple unleashed [Heavy Slash] at my back. A searing pain runned through my back as I saw that I had lost 187 health. Quite obviously, my defense left Shadow Maple in shock: "Damn it! Why are you so hard to kill? Die already!"

I turned around quickly, picking up the leather wristguard that Shadow Ocean dropped on the way while downing a bottle of health potion.

"Shua!"

Clad in a murderous aura, I rushed towards Shadow Maple. Activating Death Blade, my sword, which was glowing with a cyan colour, illuminated Shadow Maple's face. Shock, unresignation and indignation flashed across his face, almost twisting his expressions.

"Pu tong!"

Shadow Maple fell to his knees and died. In just a blink of an eye, the

entire Shadow Clan, who had arrogantly hogged the Fruit Forest Map to themselves, had been destroyed, not a single survivor was left.

I coldly stated: "I already said to not anger me; I only came to pick some fruit."

.....

That wristguard was white-tiered, I would just throw it to the NPC store later.

Walking deeper into the apple orchard, I found that each tree could be harvested once, and each harvest would only yield 1-3 apples. Truth to be told, the yield wasn't very high!

Not far away, I spotted another player picking some apples; it was one of the members of Shadow Clan. But when he saw me approach, he immediately ran away; I did not pursue him, it would just be a waste of time.

After almost half an hour, I had almost emptied the whole forest of apple trees. I could only wait for the next respawn of the fruits, but my inventory was now full of apples. Twenty apples could be grouped in one inventory slot, and I have a total of 21 slots filled with apples.

Walking to edge of the woodland, I took out my empty bottles and activated the cooking interface. Adding 5 apples and a empty bottle into the compounding materials, I started to cook!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have successfully made Apple Jam x 1, and gain +2 exp in cooking!

A bottle of apple jam appeared in my inventory. It gave +1 in satiety and +100 mana. This was a very important consumable to players in the early stages of the game.

I continued to make the apple jam for another ten minutes, making a total of 80 bottles. This made me feel a explosive sense of accomplishment.

At this time, there were lots of people who had come to harvest materials for synthesising already. But there was no sight of the Shadow family, they were probably scared away.

While I walked out, I saw a large amount of people synthesizing. One of the players was a beautiful girl of the human race called "Beauty Raising Her Legs". (Shiro: --) A few lines appeared on my news bar —

System Announcement: Beauty Raising Her Legs has created an Apple Jam!

System Announcement: Beauty Raising Her Legs has created an Apple Jam!

System Announcement: Beauty Raising Her Legs has created an Apple Jam!

(Shiro: doesn't make sense in English but the sentence meant something like "Beauty created an apple jam when she raised her legs" in Chinese)

.....

Wha...t? Looking at this string of messages, I didn't know what to think.

Continuing on my way, I once again found some apple trees. I harvested a few dozens of apples and started to make another batch of apple jam again. Soon afterwards, a "Ding~" sounded and my cooking skill rose to LV 2. Now I could create LV 2 Sticky Rice. With regards to my hunting skill, it had also rose to LV 2 long ago. I was one of the first few players who came here, and after killing a few players, I almost emptied the whole of Fruit Forest by myself. My hunting nearly rose to LV 3!

When I returned to Floating Ice City, although my name was red, but I wore a full set of high quality equipments. As I stepped into the city, the red colour in my name disappeared. Then, I boldly stood in the middle of the city square and started to shout: "Freshly made Apple Jam! 1 silver a bottle! Friends who are mages that needs this, come and buy it, it's cheap!"

My offered price wasn't very high; it didn't even reach half the price of others. I just wanted to earn some money.

Soon after, a bunch of people surrounded me. A level 20 something mage had less than 300 mp, yet their skill, [Fire Dragon], required 20 mp with each cast at level 1. Hence their mp was definitely not enough without consuming mana potions. Even in parties, players would first check if their mages have enough mana potion rations before they set off. This was also one of the main reasons why potions were in high demand.

In just a short ten minutes, I had already earned one gold. Then I shamelessly raised the prices of the last dozens of bottles to 2 silvers, but to my surprise, people kept on buying them clean.

At that moment, someone started to advertise their wares: "Selling LV 10 leather equips with no attributes! 2-8 defense and all are of the best quality. Everyone is welcome to buy. Also buying LV. 1 leather skins, such as the Big-eared Rabbit furs and Goblin Skins, all for 20 copper each!"

Quickly, I walked over to this LV 17 player called "Domineering Little Tailor". He had obviously chosen one of the craftsman's skills; which should be tailoring. Furthermore, he should be part of the Domineering Clan too. This clan was really quite amazing; they practically made up most of the top rankings in Floating Ice City.

"Brother, do you want this bearskin?"

I walked forward and smiled while I showed him a piece of bearskin; these were the spoils of war I received from my [Corpse Pillage] skill earlier. I had accumulated over 250 of these in my inventory.

He just stood in shock as his jaw dropped: "Im...Impossible. Are those LV 2 materials...?"

"Do you want it or not?" I replied, pretending to be annoyed.

"Yes, of course!" Squinting his eyes, the little tailor said: "50 copper each. Brother, how many do you have?"

My lips twitched, "Go away, one for 50 coppers? Who are you trying to cheat? One LV. 1 material can already sell for 30 coppers each, yet a LV. 2 material is only worth 50 coppers? Forget it then, I don't want to sell it

already. I'll just find other buyers."

The little tailor hurriedly stopped me and smiled: "Brother, where are you going to in such a rush? How about you name a price for it then?"

Muttering, I said: "2 silvers per piece....."

The little tailor's complexion paled greatly. Clearly, the price was a bit high for him.

I smiled slightly and added: "It's okay if you don't want it. Anyway, I have over 200 of them. I can always find another buyer!"

"What? Over 200?"

This caused the little tailor to panic. As a game player belonging to a clan, it was important to have a monopoly of the tailoring market early in the game. If another clan were to own more than 200 LV. 2 leather, they would definitely be able to produce a high quality Tailor. If that happened, then the Domineering Clan would fall behind without a doubt.

"Brother, could you please wait for a minute, OK?" The little tailor begged me.

Nodding my head, I moved to the side to wait.

It looked like the little tailor was reporting the news to his superior. Soon after, he walked over towards me and said: "2 silver each, deal! How

many do you have in total?"

I swiftly calculated: "257 pieces, but I'll give it to you for the price of 250 pieces."

"Done!"

The Little Tailor then initiated a trade with me. I inputted 250 bearskins are 2 silvers each, whilst he imputed 500 silvers, making it a full 5 gold!

Trades were instantaneous, and with this, my total fortune was now seven gold. At the present stage, I'm practically a millionaire. You could also say that the Domineering Clan was very rich and powerful. The game had only opened for a few days, and yet they were already monopolizing some markets and could even give out large amounts of money.

Waving my hand, I said: "Farewell, if fate allows it, let us meet again brother!"

In fact I could make enough money just from selling forest bear skins. Currently the exchange rate is more than 1 gold for 50 RMB. Just from these skins, I could earn at least a thousand dollars day!

Unfortunately, my ambition was not limited to bear skins, because I knew that my current strength allowed me to continue to challenge harder tasks. I had no limit!

From behind, the tailor asked: "Brother, if you don't mind me asking, where did you obtain such a large amount of bearskins?"

I turned around and smiled: "No comment. How can I possibly tell you, hahaha....."

I secretly smiled in my heart. Even if I were to tell them the location of the forest, none of them had the [Corpse Pillage] skill. So what's the point?

.....

Afterwards, I went to the Floating Ice City Warehouse to open up an account, but the elf Storage NPC actually said: "Since you are an Undead, the cost of opening a warehouse is doubled. You must pay 2 gold coins to open a 100-slots storage!"

"What? Isn't that too expensive?!"

I glared at the elf, but she just stared coldly back, not saying anything.

Just pay, it's your own bad luck that she's an official.

After opening my warehouse, I once again ran back to the city square and shouted: "Black-tier weapon, Green Forest Blade is for sale right now! Great for melee players, quickly come and get it!"

(Shiro: Those who are confused, Lu Chen had a storage account in Frozen Mound. In this chapter, he's opening a storage account at Floating Ice City.)

Chapter 26 – Corrupt Wolf Card

A stone thrown into the ocean could start a tidal wave. As my words ended, a group of menacing warriors, Knights and Magic Knights suddenly appeared. The equipment drop rates in <Heaven's End> was extremely low, the probability of them being weapons or accessories were even lower. There were a lot of players in their level 20 something still wearing their level 10 white-tiered equipments. Hence their attack was only around 2-7, as low and miserable as it could be.

"Brother, sell it to me please. I'll fork out 70 copper!"

"Brother, give it to me, me. I'll pay you 3 silvers!"

"No, I want it, 1 silver!"

.....

As the whole group of people started making a ruckus, I raised my Green Forest Blade and shouted, "Those who offered less than 50 silvers don't have to speak anymore!"

A lot of people suddenly kept quiet at once.

At this moment, a group of people walked over. The one leading was a level 25 Magic Knight, with an ID called Domineering Vagabond. He should be one of the members of the Domineering Clan. His level was fairly high, and the players behind him were all over level 23. It was obviously one of the Clan's elite team.

"2 Gold."

Domineering Vagabond offered indifferently. This price almost caused everyone present to shut up. Anyone who could gain 2 Gold in such an early stage of the game must be a madman!

I opened the trade interface and placed the Green Forest Blade on my side, while Domineering Vagabond placed 2 gold coins on his side, and the deal was completed. As such, my current total amount of gold was close to 10 gold. Seemed like I had become a millionaire!

Repairing my equipments and stocking up some health potions, I was devastated. The expenses I incurred in the city was twice more than the normal person's. I could only endure it in silence, I was a foreigner in this land after all.

Setting off from the city, my name immediately turned red again. An undead player suddenly appeared in front of everyone, it had definitely caused some shock. Of course, I ran away quickly, slipping away from everyone's gazes like smoke.

I decided to check out the location of level 2 cooking materials. The Level 1 food item, apple jam, could only heal 100 mp. It would be suitable for warriors, magic knights and knights to use their skills. However, for mages, priests and those magic related professions that consumed a lot of mp, it was definitely not enough. If I wanted to strike it rich, I would have to create level 2 food items.

Sticky Rice, Level 2 mp-replenishing food item.

Items needed: Glutinous Rice x 15, Chicken x 5 & Salt x 5.

Restore: 200 mp

.....

That was quite a lot of materials needed. Not only glutinous rice, it also needed chicken and salt. I knew that salt was sold at the main cities, it cost 1 silver for 10 sachet. However, the price was a little expensive, virtually adding the burdens for players that chooses the craftsman profession. As for the glutinous rice, after checking the forums, one player had found that in the Wildfire Plains, located in the east of Floating Ice City. As for chicken, I would have to go to a place that had chickens.

After setting an idea on what to do, I decided to go to Wildfire Plains for a stroll. Maybe I could even get a quest. The monsters there were quite high leveled; the highest one was even more than level 30. It was at the level that the current stage of players would never be able to defeat. However, a great swordsman with high defense and explosive attack such as the great me should be able to stand my ground. I decided to test out the waters.

Along the way, I saw a few other players. However, as I get deeper, the strong, mighty level 30 Feral Wolf finally appeared. This caused 99% of the players to retreat. As for me, who had two high-quality bronze-tier equipments on my body, the wolves weren't a challenge at all. I continued to move forward. My goal was the Wildfire Plains.

After half an hour, the trees in front started to get thinner. The forest was replaced by a lush grassland, blossoming under the scorching hot sun. Overgrown weeds and flowers in full bloom scattered through the plains, covering it with a beautiful colour of red. It almost looked like the plain was on fire. This was the reason that this place was called Wildfire Plains.

Wildfire Plains was originally a neutral area. After walking a short distance, I realized that at the edge of the plains, in between mountains, there was a Silver Moon Alliance camp. I didn't dare to move nearer, who'd knew if these people would attack me?

Going along the edges of the plains, I walked for another 10 minutes. Suddenly, my eyes lighted up as I found a humble Undead Alliance camp up ahead!

An Item Store, a Repair Store and a Skeleton Soldier. These constituted the whole of the Undead Alliance Camp. It was practically simple and crude!

I walked forth and swept my glance over the skeleton soldier. It was the normal kind of skeleton, very skinny and frail. It was a skeleton that was way inferior to me, an undead who had skin and flesh on my body.

"Oh? This little skeleton who had come a long way, is there anything I can help you with?" The soldier looked at me and guffawed loudly, "It's extremely dangerous around here, you must be careful. Our enemies are lurking all around!"

I nodded but did not say anything.

The soldier sat on top of a skull and said, "Recently, the monsters in that Wildfire Plains had become more and more violent. Our Undead Camp was actually attacked three times in three days. Young skeleton, could you help us clear those wild beasts?"

Here comes the quest! I already had a feeling that this will happen beforehand. I quickly nodded my agreement.

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have accepted the quest [Clearing Wild Beasts]! (Quest Level: E, middle class)

Quest Description: In the southern part of the Wildfire Plains up ahead, you would find a lot of Corrupt Wolves with unruly natures. Kill 100 of these Corrupt Wolves and collect 40 Corrupt Wolves Tooth. Give them to the Undead Soldier Da Yi and you will then receive ample rewards!

.....

The quest level was not low, E middle class. Looks like the monsters up ahead were definitely not low-leveled. The number of kills I have to do was also not little. Looks like today will be a long day of prolonged war.

Brandishing my Weeping Fireblade, I step forth into the plains. The fire that enveloped my blade crackled as it started to burn brighter. My bronze-tiered weapon looked dazzling as expected.

Overgrown bushes surrounded me. Seemed like a great fire engulfed the southern part of Wildfire Plains half a year ago, making it a deserted place. Wild beasts' skeletons scattered everywhere around, as wolves' howl resounded around me.

"Sha sha..."

I shot a glance to the slight rustling and found two large wolves with a fiery red head staring at me. Their eyes were blood red, and when they bared their fangs, they looked sharp and numerous. Their drool dripped down from their fangs to the ground.

[Wildfire Corrupt Wolf] (normal monster)

Level: 32

.....

What a monster! It was actually level 32. This quest's difficulty was indeed too much!

I cautiously turned my body, and the two Corrupt wolves suddenly let out a loud roar and charged towards me, quickly and violently!

"Cha cha!"

Sharp fangs gnawed at the armor on my shoulders, inciting a pain that shot right through my bones. Even the bronze-tiered Cyan Fire Cloak couldn't defend against a level 32 monster's attack. The difference in the levels were too high.

"124 ! "

"132 ! "

What a high damage number!

I shouted a gasp of surprise as I quickly滑到了右边。同时，一道绿色的光芒，带有一丝红色，包裹了我的Weeping Fireblade。我将我的剑向下砍去，同时在Corrupt Wolf的头上挥舞。此外，我迅速地发动了我的第二个攻击，[Death Blade]和普通攻击组合。这个强大的攻击立即耗尽了Corrupt Wolf一半的生命值。

“381！”

“312！”

我的[Undead Strength]也提升了。额外的10%伤害真的帮了大忙，它甚至比单独使用时更加强大。事实上，凭借我的天赋技能，我本应该在这里杀死活的生物。这样我就能更快地杀死它们并获得更多的利润。尽管野兽的攻击非常痛苦，但获得的利润使这一切都值得！

继续在我的脚下随机滑行，我包围了Corrupt Wolf，防止它逃跑。然而，另一只Corrupt Wolf跟在我后面。这是同时杀死两只怪物的战术。专注于其中一只怪物，然后围绕着它跑动。这样，另一只怪物就会浪费掉超过50%的攻击！

“Cha!”

又是另一波攻击，终于，第一只Corrupt Wolf倒在地上，发出了一声凄厉的嚎叫。我的目光凝固了，因为我看到我的经验条上升了。好家伙，你给我带来了多少经验啊！

“Gudong!”

Downing a health potion, I continued to brandish my Weeping Fireblade on the second Corrupt Wolf. A one-on-one fight was so much easier. Fortunately too, I had enough health potions with me. Furthermore, my defense was quite high at 61 points. If it were another person, encountering two level 32 Corrupt Wolves at the same time would probably be their death sentence.

My sharp sword fell down hard on the monster, simple and straightforward. After receiving a myriad of attacks, that Corrupt Wolf finally fell down miserably on the ground. But I was not much better, I had only 145 health left. If it wasn’t for my quick and deadly attack, the one falling down to the ground miserably would have been me.

“Plop!”

The second Corrupt Wolf dropped items!

It dropped a bright and shining Large Magic Stone, a blood red Corrupt Wolf tooth, and a fiery red coloured card.

A Card?!

Right, it was a card!

Picking it up, I was shocked to see—

[Corrupt Wolf Card]: Level 1 card. When in use, your attack speed +5% and movement speed +5%. The effect will last for 30 minutes!

.....

What a fellow, it had really dropped some good items!

I was wild with joy. This meant that I could increase my attack speed for 5% for 30 minutes. Just the right item for me to use in my levelling. Furthermore, it couldn't be denied that this Corrupt Wolf Card would be extremely effective in a PK. Of course, my purpose in the early stage of the game was to level, get good equips and refrain from PK. This was because the current stage was valuable, only fools like that Mad Dragon guild would attack people blindly.

Clasping the Corrupt Wolf Card in my palms, I chanted,"Corrupt Wolf!"

"Shua!"

The card disappeared and turned into a red glow on the back of my name, that was shown on top of my forehead. It morphed into a wolf head figure. Such was the effects of using the Corrupt Wolf Card. Every player could only enjoy one effect from such a card at one time. After a while, I realised that I was really wasteful. Corrupt Wolf Card was a magnificent level 1 card, other players would have only used it to kill BOSSes or PK, yet I had foolishly used it to level.

With the effect of the Corrupt Wolf Card, my levelling speed had become sharper. With the exception of encountering three Corrupt Wolves at the same time, I could defeat the wolves fairly easily.

Time flew past and I had already trained for two hours in a blink of an eye. I had almost finished using up the health potions in my inventory, and my level had rise to level 26 with 89% experience. If nothing went wrong, I should be able to rise to level 27 in half an hour. I couldn't help but be really proud of myself. I should quickly level to 30 and catch a pet. I couldn't be relying on that Corrupt Wolf Skeleton behind me. This [Summon Undead] skill was really useless, it could only be used when I'm already high leveled.

"Kacha!"

My Weeping Fireblade drew a beautiful arc amongst the plains like a meteor, and a miserable cry resounded. Another Corrupt Wolf dropped dead on the ground.

"Plop!"

Something dropped!

A Corrupt Wolf Tooth and, an item that made my heart leap with joy — a red coloured card! I swear, this red-coloured card was definitely not RMB!

(Shiro: RMB – Chinese currency. RMB\$100, the most used denominator, is red-coloured.)

Quickly picking up the card, its attribute appeared to me in a bright light —

[Fire Wolf Card]: Level 1 card, could be used to activate a skill [Inferno] once.

.....

I involuntarily laughed out. This was a skill card. There were two types of cards in <Heaven's End>, one was Skill Card and the other was Effect Card. My fortune was not that bad, I hadn't came to Wildfire Plains long and I had gotten two cards.

A lush valley appeared at the end of the plains. I stepped on the soft grasses as I entered the valley and a surge of fragrant scent floated to my nose. The whole valley was overgrown with wild plants, and...and over there, it was the glutinous rice!

It was a low-lying valley that had sufficient sunlight. There was also ample rain that flowed into a fresh, clear stream of water. All of these physical condition became the best condition for the glutinous rice to grow!

Walking forward, i used my skill on a bunch of glutinous rice. As the rice stalk wobbled, level 2 food material, required level 2 Hunting skill to harvest. It wasn't a big problem to me. Very quickly, I finished harvesting

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have acquired Glutinous Rice x3, your Hunting Skill gained +3 exp!

.....

Nice!

I continued on, for the sake of level 2 mp-replenishing food item, for the sake of gold and... Ahem, forget about it, I should be more civilised.

Chapter 27 – Army Pouch

Under the moonlight, a happy little skeleton was skipping along the valley, stopping every now and then, as he depleted the number of glutinous rice in the valley. The whole scene looked so peaceful, so serene.

“Ding~!”

System Announcement: Congratulations, your Hunting Skill has risen a level!

.....

Seeing this message, an indescribable feeling of pride burst forth from my heart. Heck, the Ultimate Hunter and Ultimate Cook will finally be unleashed!

Turning around, I observed that there were still one third of the glutinous rice left in the valley. But the 37 slots of my inventory was already filled to the brim. Each slot could contain 50 glutinous rice, and there were 37×50 patties of glutinous rice in my inventory. Without question, I was already at full capacity!

If I go now, would I leave one third of the glutinous rice to other players to harvest?

Nah, that's not my style. Walking on my own path, and leaving others

with no way out. That's the way I dominate!

Wait...Forget it. Whatever I just said was nonsense. I should just go back to report the quest first. I already gathered so many glutinous rice that I had to throw away some potions. This was definitely a waste of resources.

Speeding through the Wildfire Plains towards the Undead Alliance Camp, I handed my quest items to the soldier. He examined me closely before suddenly bursting into a loud laugh, "Oh mighty Asura, have you sent me a brave and courageous Undead to my rescue? Young one, I'm beginning to see your abilities in a different light. Come and take your rightful reward!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have finished the quest [Clearing Wild Beasts], You have received 5000 experience, 50 fame and a quest reward [Army Pouch]!

.....

"Shua!"

A golden pillar of light falls upon me as I rose to level 27. Once again, my name rose on the Floating Ice City Player Ranking. I even managed to enter the top three, ranking second on the board. Not only that, first place was still the level 28 Wind Fantasy!

Furthermore, the quest had also rewarded me with an item. Army Pouch?

Opening my inventory, there was a grey-coloured pouch sitting in the only empty slot in my inventory. Taking it out, I was immediately overjoyed. I examined it—

[Army Pouch]: Gives an additional 20 inventory slots when equipped.

.....

In the darkness of night, a lone skeleton suddenly howled loudly. The roar sounded like he was crying yet laughing at the same time. Of course, I was actually laughing. This was simply an item that was tailor-made for me!

This pouch didn't even affect movement speed. I immediately equipped the Army Pouch on my waist then quickly went back to the valley. I spent another hour harvesting the rest of the glutinous rice. This way, it would take at least two to three days before this place was filled with glutinous rice again.

I then retraced my path to return back to the city. It was finally time for me to create a level 2 mp-replenishing food item.

I arrived back at Floating Ice City. Although things here were a little bit more expensive, there were a lot of players, so the market was bigger.

[Sticky Rice] Level 2 food item. Materials required: Glutinous Rice x 15, Chicken x 5 & Salt x 5. Restores 200 mana

.....

I had almost gotten all the requirements needed. I had enough

glutinous rice, and I could buy salt in the Item Store. Only chicken meat was left. Sigh, I still need to run about, trying to find it. However, for the sake of gold, for the sake of XX, let's go!

I stored all of my glutinous rice into the vault, then I forked out another two gold to open another 100-slot vault. There was no other way. I just had too many food materials with me, and it wasn't realistic if I didn't open another account.

Repairing my equipment and buying a few dozen health potions, I set off once again.

Outside the city, I opened the forums while journeying onward. There was no hope of finding information on the game's website, so I could only rely on other players for information.

I searched for chicken meat and found a few hundred results, but every link was asking for the location of the chicken meat, instead of providing the answer.

This was a headache. Truly the plight of the pioneer.

After searching for a while, my eyes lit up. Finally, a worthy post had appeared.

"Pets are going to be released soon, what kind of pet would you want?"

Following that, the forum post elaborated on the different kind of pets that would be popular. For example the Wasp that lived in the Poison

Wasp Forest, and the Green Praying Mantis from the Breaking Dawn Forest. These were all good choices. Furthermore, there was also the Pheasant that lived in the Wild Pheasants Ridge that could also be one of the more popular choices.

Right! It's here. it's the pheasants!

Everyone knows that pheasants are just wild chickens, and wild chicken meat is most certainly chicken meat. But the quality of the meat would probably be of higher quality than normal chicken meat.

I was excited beyond words. Wild Pheasant Ridge was definitely the place!

Opening the search function once again, I searched for the Wild Pheasant Ridge. The search results showed that the Wild Pheasant Ridge was located west of Floating Ice City, and it would take about 20 minutes to get there by foot. These pheasants were also LV 30 monsters, so mostly likely in the near future they would become the main leveling opponent for the majority of players. You could train and collect chicken meat at the same time. It would be a very fruitful process.

With a goal in mind, I departed for the Wild Pheasant Ridge!

As I passed through the mist-filled Frozen Forest, LV 25-30 monsters started to spawn. Unfortunately for them, they no longer posed any threat to me. Soon, a green patch of land appeared on the map. This was exactly the place I wanted to go, Wild Pheasant Ridge!

"Chirp, chirp!"

Hearing the pheasants chirping, I excitedly rushed forward, brandishing my sword. Brushing away the bushes in front of me, I was shocked by the scene that greeted me. I saw four pheasants huddled together, like they were having a meeting, with all their levels being around 28.

I was already at LV 27 currently, and though I was a level lower than these creatures, I was equipped with two bronze-tier equips. So I was fearless and simply charged forward brandishing my sword, swiftly killing the pheasants.

In a flash, a bunch of pheasants dropped dead on the ground. I started to use my Hunting Skill on them one by one —

System Announcement: You have acquired Pheasant Meat x2, your Hunting Skill gains +2 exp!

System Announcement: You have acquired Pheasant Meat x3, your Hunting Skill gains +2 exp!

System Announcement: You have acquired Pheasant Meat x2, your Hunting Skill gains +2 exp!

System Announcement: You have acquired Pheasant Meat x3, your Hunting Skill gains +2 exp!

.....

This gave me a very satisfying feeling. Not only could you level, you could also increase your crafting skills and earn money from selling the

mp-replenishing food items you produced. Doing this simple task alone could serve multiple uses!

Energized, I cruised through the ridge like a madman. Since I was the only player here, I went on a rampage, killing everything in sight.

"Pa-ta!"

Another pheasant died, and it dropped a thin axe. I picked it up and looked at the stats. It was black-tier-

【Pheasant Battle Axe】(Black-tier)

Attack: 12-24

Stamina: +4

Required Level: 20

.....

This was a very good weapon. Its attack, although not as high as my Weeping Fireblade, could still be counted as a godly weapon to players in the early stages of this game. If anyone owned such a weapon, their leveling efficiency would need half the effort to yield the same results.

Happily, I threw the weapon into my inventory. When I got back, I should ask Shi San if he had a good weapon. If he didn't, I would give it to him. As for why I didn't give the Green Forest Blade to him, there was no other way, I needed the money. Everything, from leveling up and training my skills, needed money.

.....

Three hours later, I was 43% away from LV 28. Killing LV 28 monsters didn't really give bountiful experience. Had I been training in Wildfire Plains instead, I would probably be level 28 by now.

Stuffing the chicken meat into my bulging inventory, I looked at the time and saw that it was already three a.m. But I didn't feel sleepy at all. In fact, I feel my blood boiling in my body. When I thought about the money shower that was going to happen, I couldn't help but want to laugh out loud!

With my materials gathered, I started to head back towards Floating Ice City. At the same time, I sent Du Shi San a message, "Shi San, do you have time?"

"Yeah, what happened?"

"Meet me at Floating Ice City's east square."

"好！"

"Okay!"

.....

As entered Floating Ice City, I could see Du Shi San standing in the distance. He was a LV 23 warrior. That wasn't so bad.

Walking up, I inspected the iron sword in his hand: "What are the stats for your weapon?"

"Eh?" Du Shi San stared blankly then replied, "LV 5 White-tier, attack 4-7. Why?"

Casually, I took out the Pheasant Battle Axe and gave it to him. "Use this one instead. The one you have is far too crappy."

"Eeh?!"

Receiving the axe, Shi San's face immediately turned ecstatic, and he suddenly hugged me, shouting, "Lu Chen, I love you! I love you! Ha ha ha....."

"Scram, I already have someone that I liked," I said while mercilessly kicking his face, leaving a footprint there.

"Right, why did you come to find me," Shi San energetically asked.

I gave him 2 pieces of gold and said, "Go buy me 20 sachets of salt. You can get it from the NPC Grocery. After you buy it, meet me at the warehouse."

"Oh, ok then!"

As Shi San eagerly went to buy the salt , I went to the warehouse to deposit half of my obtained chicken meat inside then filled the empty space with glutinous rice. To make the mp-replenishing LV 2 sticky rice food item, you needed 15 units of glutinous rice, 5 units of salt and 5 pieces of chicken. Furthermore, every time one produced a sticky rice, it would consume 10 mp. As for level 1 food items, the materials needed

were different. When I made apple jam, I also didn't consume any mp at all. I only relied on my agile hands.

Soon after, Shi San returned with the salt. I said, "Just give me 10 portions for now."

"Okay!"

When he gave me the 10 portions of salt, I immediately called out the cooking interface and placed 15 portions of glutinous rice, 5 chicken pieces and 5 salt. Then the system sounded —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have produced Sticky Rice x1, your Cooking Skill gained +3 exp!

.....

Hey, this was really was worthy of being called a high-grade food item!

Sticky Rice: LV 2 Food, instantly restores 200 mana.

Tsk tsk, this must become the most sought out of all mana potions.

I continued to make the sticky rice. Since I was in no shortage of glutinous rice, I worked for a full hour, and, finally, all my resources were consumed. In my inventory were 190 sets of sticky rice. Each was stacked in groups of 10. Making it a total of 19 slots filled.

The Cooking skill was really hard to raise. After all that effort, only 45 percent exp was filled. Ah, I still had such a long way to go!

I happily looked at my new mana potions, and laughed out, "Shi San, when you are levelling, do feel as if you don't have enough mana?"

Shi San just blankly asked, "Huh? What's mana?"

"Eh, don't worry then. You can go level grinding now."

"Never mind, I'm too tired, so I'll go to sleep now."

"Okay."

.....

After Shi San logged out, I went to the city square and started to shout, "LV 2 Sticky Rice. One sale costs 10 silvers, but if you buy 10, you'll get it at 90 silvers! Those of you leveling will need it. This item will be very useful, for each one recovers 200 mana. Hurry, while stocks last!"

Immediately all the surrounding players were dumbstruck—

"LV 2 mana potion? Fu*k, did we mishear it? There's already someone who can make a LV 2 potion?"

"It's definitely a swindler!"

"Let's buy one to see if it's true!"

.....

After a few seconds, someone had initiated a trade to buy one. Immediately I accepted and received 10 silvers, while they cried in horror, "Damn! It really is a LV 2 potion. Amazing, who made it?!"

Following this, players all started transactions. I was very happy at the prospect of earning money, and, in less than 10 minutes, all my stock was sold out. Meanwhile, I had earned more than 9 gold! Mwha ha ha, I really am rich now!

.....

Just then I heard a voice from behind me, "Brother Fallen Hero, can we talk for a bit?"

Chapter 28 – Let's Meet Up!

Under the city walls of Floating Ice City, a level 25 knight, wearing a blue-coloured full body armour stood. He looked at me calmly, wielding a long, glowing blade in his hands. His equips were unconventional. They might even be on par with mine.

A line of words floated on top of his head, Domineering Heaven Blade LV-25.

Seeing this, I couldn't help but be startled. This Domineering Heaven Blade was definitely not a simple person. There were even two warriors standing guard at his back; a level 26 warrior, Domineering War God and a level 26 Magic Knight, Domineering Knight God. They were the players from the top 10 Player Ranking Board!

Was he the Domineering Clan Leader?

I wrinkled my brows. The identity of this Domineering Heaven Blade was obvious. He was the Domineering Clan Leader, and would be the future Domineering Guild Leader!

.....

"Something wrong, brothers?" I asked, with a lazy smile on my face. Who cares if you own the whole earth, or if you are a super strong player. In my eyes, you are simply just an ordinary person, because my purpose here is only to sell sticky rice.

Domineering Heaven Blade looked at me and suddenly laughed out,

"Brother, I saw you selling the mp-replenishing level 2 food item, sticky rice, just now. Is that right?"

"Yeah, do you want to buy it?" I asked.

"Yes, of course!" Domineering Heaven Blade laughed out loud, "I can see that brother, you are indeed a straightforward person. That's right, soon our clan would probably be doing something, and we would need a lot level 2 mp-replenishing food items. How many sticky rice do you still have with you, brother?"

"100 divided into 10 portions. It should be enough for 10 mages or priests to use."

"Ah? So many..."

Domineering Heaven Blade's eyes immediately lighted up, "I am willing to buy everything. Could you give us a discount?"

I nodded, "Then please pay 11 gold!"

"Ah?!" Domineering Heaven Blade was immediately confused.

Of course I would want to squeeze the milk of a fat cow dry. If this Domineering Clan wanted to dominate Floating Ice City, they would probably clash with Ancient Sword Dream in the future. I need to weaken them whenever I can now!

"11 gold" Domineering Heaven Blade mumbled weakly, "Then it's 11, let's start the deal!"

"Alright!"

Opening the trade interface, I placed 10 bundles of sticky rice while Domineering Heaven Blade placed 11 gold on his side. Tsk tsk, he was indeed a rich person, a rich and overbearing person!

The deal was completed.

Domineering Heaven Blade then continued, "This brother, would you be interested in partnering with us?"

"Nope."

I rejected them indifferently, then turned around and went out of Floating Ice City. In a few days time, these kinds of level 2 food item would definitely be an ordinary good, and I would not be willing to compete in training my Cooking Skill with other players.

Domineering Knight God chased me in anger, his spear brandished as he bellowed, "Our boss is talking to you, so aren't you too arrogant, you brat? Don't think you are good just because you are ranked second in the player ranking board!"

I had already walked outside the city and my name had turned red. I turned to glare at Domineering Knight God and said icily, "What, are you going to attack me?"

"I..."

Domineering Knight God was speechless, and Domineering War God suddenly charged forward and shouted, "Stop spouting nonsense. Let's fight if you want to! Did you think we'd be afraid of you?"

As he said that, Domineering War God suddenly raised his sword and charged straight towards me. His sword was straight and fluid like flowing water. Unexpectedly, this top player belonging to a big organisation was actually quite capable and original.

"Sha sha..."

Unexpectedly, my feet slid away, and my whole body seemed to shift from its original position, cleverly dodging Domineering War God's attack. I then lightly raised my right hand, a red glow enveloping my palm as I lightly chopped down right on the nape of the Domineering War God's neck.

"Pa!"

"118!"

My single attack completely broke through his defense!

Domineering War God stared at me in shock, his eyes wide opened as he stared at me, "You...you, this...how could this be?"

At this moment, Domineering Heaven Blade slowly walked towards me from behind. He lightly said without a single trace of anger in his voice, "Third brother, don't be so reckless. Fallen Hero is our friend, what the heck are you doing!"

"Boss? I..."

Domineering War God couldn't say anything else as embarrassment filled his face. There were a lot of other Floating Ice City players around, and most of them had already recognised us as they whispered to themselves, pointing at us—

"Did you see it? It's the top players from the ranking board! That's Fallen Hero, who had risen up to the second place today, and the others are the Domineering Clan experts!"

"Haha, that's really interesting. Did you see Domineering War God getting beat up by Fallen Hero with just one attack?"

"Fallen Hero was clearly looking down on Domineering War God. Had he used his weapon instead, Domineering War God would definitely have died!"

"Ha, Domineering Clan finally found their match!"

.....

The crowd started to chatter noisily, and Domineering War God's expression darkened even more.

Domineering Heaven Blade immediately rounded up the scene and laughed out loud, "It was only a small misunderstanding, a friendly spar. Brother Fallen Hero's skills are indeed top-notch, like a Great Master's!"

I nodded and smiled, "You were going easy on me."

Then, I turned around and left. Through the whole scene, nobody saw my real appearance, they only saw me as someone wearing a Cyan coloured cloak.

Quickly leaving the dangerous area, as I entered the Frozen Forest, I couldn't help but be relieved. Fortunately there was no one who tried to incite killing a red-named player, otherwise I would be in grave danger.

Next, I should go back to Frozen Mound and take a few quest from Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk. I should rush to level 30 quickly and get a pet!

I didn't even bother to kill the monsters on the way, running straight towards Frozen Mound.

Alas, I realized the atmosphere was a little different, when I entered Frozen Mound. Normally, there would be a few skeletons walking around aimlessly in the surrounding, but there wasn't any now. Even... Even Ghost Valley was nowhere to be found!

"Shashasha..."

Following a path on the icy road, I walked towards the Corpse Pond. Suddenly, a "di" sounded; someone sent me a message —

Ghost Valley, "Careful! Wind Fantasy has come..."

I froze and quickly looked around. Then, I saw Ghost Valley's corpse lying on the ground and Wind Fantasy, wearing a white cloak covering his whole body, standing right by his side. He was playing with a little green dagger in his hands.

"Ah? Didn't Wind Fantasy use a sword?"

I quietly thought, why did he use dagger now?

But one thing was certain, Ghost Valley was in a miserable state. His corpse showed that his level had dropped to level 17. How many times was he killed by Wind Fantasy, that he dropped from one of the top players of the ranking board to level 17?

What a shame. Ghost Valley really had a strong pride; he didn't even try to message me after getting beaten up so much.

.....

Suddenly, Wind Fantasy discovered me. As he turned around and locked gazes with me. Under that white coloured cloak, a cold pair of eyes almost made me shiver from head to toe.

"Hua!"

Changing to a long sword, he immediately pointed it at me, as if he was saying, "You, you finally came back. I waited for you for a long time."

There was nothing else to say. Kill!

I immediately pulled out a skeleton from the Corpse Pond, my [Summon Undead] skill activated successfully. I ordered the little skeleton to charge forward, while I also charged forward in one fluid movement.

"Ji ji!"

The little skeleton was brave beyond compare. Wind Fantasy flew towards me as fast as lightning, a silver glow enveloping his sword. It almost looked like the red glow of my [Undead Strength] skill that enveloped my sword too.

"Pa!"

"415 ! "

A shocking amount of damage flew out, my little skeleton died in a single attack!

I tried to maintain my calm and changed the direction of my body. I made a short zigzag before suddenly pouncing on my opponent. My Weeping Fireblade spewed fire as a green light was emitted from it — [Death Blade]!

"Keng!"

I didn't know when, but Wind Fantasy had already equipped his dagger on his left hand. He blocked my attack with an accurate position, hence he only received around 50% of the damage. His movements were quick and violent, he was suddenly waving his sword at me in a blink of an eye. He attacked me from an extremely tricky angle that I couldn't dodge. I could only receive his attack.

"Puchi!"

"287 ! "

His sword pierced right through my chest. He's too ruthless!

In the same way, I took an advantage and shoved my sword towards his neck. With a woosh, a 311 damage number flew out. Pulling my sword and shoving it again, I unleashed a normal attack again. In just a moment, the opponent's health went down to less than 20%!

Seeing that things weren't going well, Wind Fantasy hurriedly retreated, while I pursued him quickly!

It was at this moment, the situation suddenly changed —

Wind Fantasy took out a blue-coloured card from his pocket. It suddenly flew out and burst into countless snowflakes in the air. A thick

layer of ice immediately formed on the ground!

"Not good!"

I thought inwardly, it was a skill card!

"Gugugu!"

Three icicles suddenly burst forth underneath my legs. A sharp pain followed as I fell to the ground, in one swift moment!

"Di!"

Battle Announcement: Player Wind Fantasy has used Snow Card!

.....

I dropped back down to level 26, my spirit released from my body.

I didn't hesitate at all and quickly ran back to my corpse and resurrect!

"Shua!"

Once again, I charged towards my opponent, raising my sword against Wind Fantasy. "Keng!" our swords clashed, but right at this moment, I suddenly opened my palm. A red coloured card immediately flew out!

Firewolf Card, [Inferno]!

"Hong!"

Scorching hot fire started around the whole area. Wind Fantasy gave a shocked cry as his body was engulfed in fire, and died. It seemed as if I had resurrected too quickly, so he hadn't had the time to recover his health.

.....

"Pa!"

I plopped down on the ground, picking up a few health potions that Wind Fantasy dropped. He was really lucky; if only he dropped equipment instead.

At this time, Ghost Valley also resurrected. He said determinedly, "Guard his corpse?!"

I nodded, "Guard. Guard it till his corpse turn into bones, guard it till the world ends!"

"Alright!"

Ghost Valley clenched his fist, his fury apparent.

.....

Wind Fantasy's soul resurrected at a place in Frozen Mound that was a little far from his corpse's position. However, even after about ten minutes, he still had not resurrected. He must have thought he didn't have a chance if Ghost Valley and I teamed up against him.

After an hour, Ghost Valley yawned, "Damn it, I'm freaking tired. I think I'll sleep first..."

"You!"

I glared at him angrily. Such an ambitionless brat! Somebody killed you until you dropped to level 17, how could you still have the heart to sleep?

However, it seemed that Ghost Valley was indeed very tired. Go to sleep if you want then, I shall guard his corpse on my own!

Ghost Valley crawled into his tomb and went to sleep.

After a while, a shadow suddenly moved. Wind Fantasy had finally resurrected himself!

I immediately charged over, brandishing my sword, unleashing my [Death Blade]!

Immediately, Wind Fantasy died again. Very good, Wind Fantasy finally dropped to level 26, dropping off from his first place position, hahah!

After a while, Wind Fantasy resurrected again, but this time his speed

was much faster than mine. Like lightning, he attacked me continuously. It all boils down to my 0.5 reaction delay, dammit, I couldn't react fast enough and was killed on the spot.

I dropped back to level 25. I was so furious that my brain almost exploded. I immediately resurrected and charged back at Wind Fantasy, unleashing my [Death Blade] and normal attack combo, killing him again on the spot.

And so, we continued to kill each other. The first and second rank of the Player Ranking Board was not even in the top 10 any more.

.....

As I was guarding his corpse, a "di" sounded —

System Announcement: Player Wind Fantasy wanted to add you as friend, accept or reject?

I was astonished at first, but in the end I accepted it.

A few minutes later, he sent me a message—

"Let's not kill each other anymore, it's not beneficial for both of us if we both dropped back to level 0."

I thought for a while and agreed with his words. Then, I replied him, "We can stop killing, but there must be a compensation. You came repeatedly to Frozen Mound; was it to pick a fight with me?"

After a few seconds, Wind Fantasy replied, "No, why would I pick a fight with a nobody like you?"

Furious, I prepared to shout out some curse words to dissipate my anger. However, at this time, Wind Fantasy suddenly sent me another message, "Do you live in Jiang Su? Let's log off and meet up!"

(Shiro: Jiang Su is a province in China)

I immediately replied, "I live in Su Zhou, you?"

(Shiro: Su Zhou is a city in Jiang Su Province in China)

"Same. Tomorrow afternoon at three o'clock, Yin Shan cafe in front of Suzhou University of Science, first floor."

And at this moment, Wind Fantasy resurrected. This time, we did not clash our swords.

I snickered, "We can meet up, but you have to let me see how you look, otherwise there's no place for talk!"

Wind Fantasy looked a little helpless and replied, "Alright!"

I opened my eyes wide, observing him closely.

Wind Fantasy stood under the fir tree, as he slowly raised his hands to take off the hood of his cloak. Immediately, a silky bundle of hair flowed down like a waterfall. In the darkness of the night, a beautiful pair of purple eyes looked at me, filled with hostility.

Chapter 29 – Lin Yi Xin

In that moment, I was immediately petrified.

What kind of girl was this? A pair of exquisite, beautiful eyes, clear and calm like a lake. Such a pure and pristine pair of eyes was looking at me. The purity made me think that she wouldn't be able to see even if there was dirt or danger directly in front of her. However, those bewitching eyes also showed the girl's wisdom and astuteness. They were really an intoxicating sight to behold.

Who would ever guessed that Wind Fantasy was actually a girl, and not only that, a beauty that could make you choke at that!?

.....

"Can I see your appearance now?"

Wind Fantasy looked straight at me. Her beautiful pair of eyes still bearing reproach. We had killed each other n times, what kind of fate was this?

I shook my head, "No need to see. I'm an undead, I don't look like a normal person."

"Take off your damn cloak, and stop spouting nonsense!" Her tone was hostile and unaccepting.

I helplessly nodded my head, then slowly took off the my cloak's hood.

Immediately, a “skinny-to-the-bones” face appeared in front of her.

Wind Fantasy immediately jumped in shock, but she controlled her fear almost instantaneously and asked, “You don’t look like this in reality, right?”

“Nope, I am a little more handsome than this.”

“Humph. Remember, tomorrow 3 pm at Yin Shan Cafe first floor. Seating area near the right side.”

“Do you look like your in-game character in reality?” I asked back. It’s something that mattered a lot to me. In my life, I had only met in-game friends in reality twice. The first one was He Yi, and I got the shock of my life. Since this was the second time, I wanted to avoid getting shocked.

Wind Fantasy pursed her lips, then revealed a little smile, “This... actually I adjusted my character’s look a little, so you might be disappointed to see me in reality. But it definitely won’t be very shocking...”

“Alright, let’s meet tomorrow afternoon.”

Waving her hands, Wind Fantasy went back to Floating Ice City, and I turned around and went inside my tomb.

I took off my helmet. Playing continuously for n number of hours, I was exhausted to the bone. I cooked a cup of instant noodles and went to sleep straight away after eating it.

.....

The next day, it was already 1pm by the time I woke up. Du Shi San was bathing in the bathroom, humming various types of vulgar songs.

I crawled over to the bathroom, thinking of bathing first.

When Du Shi San came out, we went out to eat.

Sitting on the restaurant's table, Shi San asked, "Are you going to rush to level 30 in the afternoon?"

"Nope, I'm meeting someone."

"Someone?" Shi San was suddenly interested, "A girl?"

I nodded

"Who? Is it He Yi? You must bring me along, haha!"

"Stop it, it's not He Yi. It's Wind Fantasy."

"What-the first ranked player on the Player Ranking Board...turns out to be a...girl?"

"Yeah." I nodded. My next sentence was like a bucket of cold water that extinguished Shi San's fire of interest, "But she said she wasn't some beauty in real life, and asked me to prepare myself."

Shi San understood clearly. Patting my shoulders, he asked, "What time are you guys meeting?"

"3 pm."

"Ok. I will give you a call at 3.10 pm and say that our house is on fire. You can escape and take refuge at any time."

A smile blossomed in my face. This brother was indeed considerate, and had a lot of experience!

.....

A little after 2pm, I went to the post office, and sent the bank card that He Yi gave me in a package and mailed it to my dad. The sun shone

down upon me along the way. That kind of burning sensation was so painful that dying seemed like a better choice. I didn't know how much longer I could live. There were a few hundred thousands yuan inside this card. I decided to give these to my dad for his retirement, and told him the password was my birthday.

My heart felt deeply guilty, but I had no other choice.

I sat under the small bridge for quite a while, thinking about a lot of things. Not long after, it was almost 3pm. I should set off now!

The distance from my house to the University of Science was not that far. Strictly saying, it was actually very close. This was because just one year ago, I was a student from the University of Science. After I graduated, I rented a small apartment near the area.

回到母校，很有感觉，怀念那群牲口们。

Coming back to my alma mater brought about a feeling of nostalgia.

.....

At the Yin Shan teahouse. It was a small, elegant tea house that had just opened. The decorations were of a high quality, suitable for couples to flirt with each other. Of course, the flirting was not the groaning kind.

As I stepped into the tea house, a lot of girls suddenly stole a glance towards me. Yeah, this ascertained me. After getting up and dressing up a little, I had suddenly become handsome...

"First floor, near the right seating area..."

I mumbled as I walked over. Suddenly, my body froze on the spot.
Damn!

There was only one person in the rows of tables on the right side of the tea house. It was a female student, who looked like she weighed almost 120 kgs. She was sitting on a chair that looked like it was howling in pain from the weight. She looked at me sincerely, her gaze pure and innocent, without any ill will...

I gritted my teeth. Damn! Is this what you meant when you said you changed your in-game looks a little? This...This is practically a plastic surgery with a tank slimming your body!

Bitterness filled me as I cursed everyone who lied in this world to die!

I took out my phone. It was 3.02 pm, there was still 8 more minutes. Let me get this done quick!

Pretending to be calm, I smiled as I sat in front of the female student. I raised my head and said, "Little sister, are you having a good afternoon?"

The female student revealed a splendid smile. Her fats jiggled as she replied, "Hey handsome, how are you? Are you alone?"

(Shiro: handsome (shuai ge) and beauty (mei nu) are the common, casual way of talking to strangers in China. I'm not joking. Basically if you go to a store/restaurant in China, the waitress will probably call you shuai ge or mei nu if you are young (even if you look like shit), and lao ban (boss) if you are middle-aged.)

Through our conversation, I felt that the atmosphere was a little wrong. This girl was not Wind Fantasy!

At this moment, a fragrant smell floated to my nose. Beside me, a head of silky hair flowed fluidly like flowing water. When I looked up, I was frozen on the spot. A clear-eyed, white-teethed little beauty stood behind me, looking at me with her hair fluttering lightly. An incomparably beautiful pair of eyes looked at me with ridicule.

I immediately shot up, "What...what's going on?"

"Are you Fallen Hero?"

She held a cup of afternoon tea in her hands as she looked at me, then looked at the female student in front of me, then suddenly she burst out laughing. That bewitching sound of laughter was like the clear autumn waters, "You have quite a unique taste, don't you?"

I was a little ashamed and awkward, but I didn't know what to say. I wished a hole could swallow me whole.

She laughed out again, then pointed at the seats beside her. "Come and sit. Do you want to drink anything?"

I shook my head. I shouldn't drink, I need to save money. Since I gave dad my card, I was only left with around RMB2000. I still need to provide for Shi San, that good-for-nothing.

She nodded and said, "Then, let's talk. How do we solve this problem

between us?"

"It's very simple. We don't hurt each other in future." I spoke flatly.

"Don't hurt each other?" She revealed a reproaching look and said, "You destroyed the quest that I had prepared for more than 10 hours, and you still want us to not hurt each other?"

"Ah?" I was slightly shocked, "Destroyed your quest?"

"Yeah."

Wind Fantasy nodded, "When I killed that Sentinel Skeleton Leader, he would have resurrected again. I had to kill him again within 10 hours, and it had to have been within 10 minutes of his resurrection, otherwise my quest would fail. However...you and Ghost Valley, had actually destroyed this plan of mine!"

"Just because of this, you guarded Ghost Valley's corpse the whole night?"

"Yeah." She nodded seriously, her beautiful, bright eyes looking sincere.

I gritted my teeth as my body started to tremble. I shouldn't become enemies with this girl, otherwise I would probably suffer in the future.

.....

At just this very moment, a silver-bell-like laughter suddenly rang out

from the tea house entrance. Three beautiful girls had entered and were striding towards Wind Fantasy. Straight away, one of them said, "Yiyi, you skipped afternoon class and instead came here for...a date?"

She instantly looked towards me. A "misunderstanding" could clearly be seen in her expression.

Wind Fantasy looked a little anxious as she immediately explained, "Qing Qing, no! That... I... that..."

It seemed like her tongue had become tangled up into a knot. In an instant, she had become unable to explain properly.

I laughed softly at her predicament and then asked, "Beauties, what's Yiyi's full name?"

The other girls revealed a shocked expression, "Are you joking? How could you not know of her? You are too dense! She's our University of Science's magnificent flower, that never failed to clinch the school's beauty contest each year, Lin Yi Xin. Oh, and her in-game name is Wind Fantasy..."

I froze. Lin Yi Xin. Seemed like I had really never heard of this name before.

Then, I suddenly realized something. Right before I graduated, Shi San was always mentioning someone to me. He always talked about this girl that was supposedly as beautiful as a fairy, so beautiful that heavens and earth moved for her. Could this be her?

Observing her closer, it was indeed true. Lin Yi Xin's beauty was indeed beyond compare. If He Yi's beauty could be described as universally shocking, then Lin Yi Xin's beauty could be described as heaven and earth moving.

After seeing me frozen, Li Yi Xin responded by saying, "Don't listen to them spouting nonsense. Who's a school flower? I am only a geeky girl who likes to get gold."

I laughed and nodded, "Me too..."

"You are a geeky girl too?"

"Dammit, I am saying I also like to get gold!"

Li Yi Xin covered her mouth as she giggled, "Okay, okay. Let me tell you something seriously!"

"Okay, say it."

Li Yi Xin sipped on her tea a little, then licked her red lips with her lithe tongue. This intoxicating beauty's demeanour was truly soothing to the spirit. Then, she smiled towards me, "The thing is... in the future, I would like to create a guild. I want to invite you into the guild!"

I thought about it, then rejected her determinedly. "No thanks."

"Then forget about it."

Lin Yi Xin didn't bother asking me again as she giggled, "Then, can we at least be guild allies?"

"Yeah, that's possible." I nodded.

At this moment, Lin Yi Xin's friend, a girl with a ponytail, asked, "Yiyi, who is this person exactly? Is he a player from <Heaven's End>?"

Lin Yi Xin nodded, "Yeah, that's right, Qing Qing."

This girl called Qing Qing then reached out her hands and smiled towards me, "Hey handsome, how do you do! What's your in-game name?"

I reached out my hands and shook hers as I said, "Fallen Hero."

"Ah?"

Qing Qing suddenly gaped, "You...so you are the person who is second-ranked on the Player Ranking Board, Fallen Hero? Hoho, I didn't know that you were actually this handsome in reality. I thought all guy gamers are all dirty, geeky guys!"

I felt so awkward now. Dammit, luckily I spent half an hour dressing up before I left the house.

Lin Yi Xin then said, "Okay, enough already. Anyway we are already friends in game. Let's be half-friends in the future."

"Why half?" I asked.

"That's because I still can't fully trust you." She said frankly and straightforwardly, "In Floating Ice City, the current of the struggle for power has moved quickly and violently. We should band together and discern who's our most threatening enemy."

"Who? Mad Dragon?"

"Tsk..." Lin Yi Xin snorted disdainfully, "Don't even mention those sardines anymore. In Floating Ice City, they are not fit to be my opponents yet."

"The who would you consider?"

"You... and Domineering Heaven Blade."

I felt a little proud of myself. I continued to ask, "Domineering Clan Leader?"

"That's right!" Lin Yi Xin smiled as she said, "It's them. The Domineering Clan is a clan that have their members unite together with different professions. They are extremely strong, so we all should be careful of them~"

.....

It was at this moment, my phone suddenly rang. When I received it, Shi San's voice resounded, "Lu Chen, not good, our house is on fire! Come back home quickly!"

I looked towards Lin Yi Xin in front of me. Feasting my eyes on such a beautiful girl, who would care if their house was on fire or destroyed in an earthquake. So I replied, "Call 119 yourself!"

"Fuck!"

I didn't wait for Shi San to finish and turned off my phone.

Hearing that clearly, Lin Yi Xin looked a little disdainful as she said, "Do you not have confidence in my looks?"

I was a little embarrassed as I answered, "Of course."

After a few seconds, Shi San called me once again, and I rejected it again.

After a few minutes, an anxious and flustered person suddenly barged into the tea house. It was, in fact, Shi San, who was shouting at me from a distance, "Lu Chen, you brat..."

He stopped halfway before he froze on the spot, as if he was petrified. The reason for this was that he had seen Lin Yi Xin, someone that could only be seen in legends, a matchless beauty that could move the heaven

and earth.

Chapter 30 – Blockhead

"Lu Chen, you are too insincere!"

On the way home, Du Shi San grumbled on, "Aih, Lin Yi Xin is so beautiful. When she was a freshman, she was a flower bud, but now she had fully blossomed into a beautiful woman. If only I could feel her up a little, no, kiss her a little, I could rest in peace..."

I gave him a disdainful look and grimaced, "So immature! Couldn't you try to be cooler a little?"

"Did you at least get her phone number?"

"No."

"Damn! You are such a blockhead!"

.....

Shi San was so disappointed with me failing to meet up with his expectations. He really wished he could change my personality, because he felt that I was not that sensitive to woman compared to him. However, when he saw Lin Yi Xin in the teahouse just now, he had tried to pose elegantly on the table's side. That memory was still vivid in my mind.

Shi San was actually a devil in disguise. Legend said that his father was so shocked when he was born that he tried to push him back in into his mother's womb without hesitation. Shi San could only live because he had crawled out of his mother's womb himself. And thus, Shi San came

into this world and brought calamity to many girls around him.

"Lu Chen, what were you talking about with Lin Beauty?" Shi San asked.

"Working together"

"Working together in what?"

"How do I know? She was the one who asked."

"Damn..."

.....

At night when I logged in, the Player Ranking Board was not Lin Yi Xin's and my stage anymore. Being level 25s, we both had dropped out of the top 10. But thinking about it, I was actually a little thankful. Wind Fantasy had always occupied the position of the strongest player all this while; who would ever guessed that she was actually a beauty that could move the heaven and the earth?

In Frozen Mound, I repaired my equipment and bought a few potions. I am a millionaire now, let alone buying one cart of potions, buying two carts of potions are not even a problem to me.

When I reached the sentinel camp, the sentry guard leader NPC had already resurrected, his smile friendly as always. He happily greeted me as soon as he saw me, "Little skeleton, here you are again! Seems like you have gotten stronger in these few days!"

I walked forward to him, "It's all thanks to your teachings!"

(TLN: MC is using a complicated chinese idiom)

The NPC Leader didn't understand what I said, but sighed a little and said, "Recently, in the west of Frozen Mound, a bunch of green-coloured creatures appeared. They wreck havoc day and night; they even tried to attack our camp. We must fight back immediately! Young little skeleton, go! Go to the west side of Frozen Mound and find those goblins wearing green-coloured hat. Kill 100 goblins and bring back twenty of their green hats to me!"

Goblins, green-coloured creatures. They were both nimble and strong. In the beginning stages of the game, they should be amongst one of the strongest monsters around. At least, they were much stronger than those Big-eared rabbits.

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have received the quest [Goblin's Green Hat]! (Quest Level: F, average)

Quest Description: Go to the west side of Frozen Mound, kill 100 goblins and collect twenty of their green hats. Give it to Sentinel Skeleton Leader Falk and you will receive great rewards!

.....

As I accepted the quest, I rejoiced in my heart as I didn't have to kill skeletons anymore. My [Undead Strength] had already leveled up to Lv. 2,

it would be better for me to kill a living creature now.

Opening the map, I threaded through the forest. Before long, I entered into an open area. Not far into the distance, I noticed a small goblin wearing a green hat, carrying a rusty hammer. It was spouting unintelligible language as it ran, wobbling to the right and left, like he was acting in a play.

[Green Hat Goblin] (normal monster)

Level: 33

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

.....

Tsk, it was another high leveled monster. I had already dropped to level 25, so the goblin was eight levels higher than me. No wonder the quest difficulty was F average!

I shouldn't care that much, let's just try it first!

"Hua!"

I charged straight up like a spear, a crimson red glow enveloping my Weeping Fireblade. As I reached the monster, a green light suddenly illuminated my sharp blade. My favourite skill was up — [Death Blade] Lv.2!

My Lv. 2 [Death Blade] struck into the goblin's forehead ruthlessly. However, there was only a "clang" sound before my sword tip滑ed away, skewed. My attack did not cause a significant damage.

"187!"

I calmly and quickly unleash my second attack. I swung my sword from down up, right into the goblin's face.

"Pu Chi!"

"312!"

Indeed, I shouldn't attack the hat in its forehead. It has a high defense there, so it wouldn't receive much damage.

Thus, I lowered my body and continuously pulled a combo. The goblin cried miserably as it tried to raise its hammer to attack me, but unfortunately its attack speed was too slow. It has only attacked me once before dying from my rain of attacks.

"Pa da!"

I have quite the good luck. The first monster I killed had dropped a hat and a Large Magic Stone with a quality of 76. I made a huge profit! Let's continue on!

After killing for a while, a familiar figure suddenly appeared. It was

Ghost Valley. Seemed like he had woken up early to train, as he was already wearing an equipment for level 20 and above. His levelling efficiency was really high; he had reached level 23 already. It was difficult for his level to fight against a level 33 goblin, however, after dodging multiple times and drinking tons of health potions, he finally won pitifully.

"Did you also get the Goblin's Hat Quest?" I asked.

Ghost Valley only nodded. On the other hand, I also did not send him a party invite.

Both of us started to kill goblins in the open space. After a while, I turned around and said, "Ghost Valley, how many times did Wind Fantasy kill you yesterday?"

"11 times I guess, I don't remember it anymore..."

"Did you hate her?"

Ghost Valley gritted his teeth and clenched his fist, hissing, "I can't wait to skin him alive and crush his bones!"

(Shiro: she(她 ta) and he(他 ta) sounded the same in Chinese, but they are different characters.)

"She is a girl, you know." I commented, simply.

Ghost Valley froze, "How did she look?"

"...Go away!"

"Hahaha..."

By night, my inventory was filled with Green Hats. I ran back towards Frozen Mound to report my quest —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have finished the quest [Goblin's Green Hats]. You have received 4500 exp and 30 Fame!"

.....

"Shua!"

A pillar of light shone down upon me as I rose to level 27. The profit of killing a monster with a big difference in levels was indeed fulfilling. But the consumption of potions were too much, I had finished a whole inventory of potions within three hours of hunting. I can't go on like this!

Sentinel Skeleton Leader didn't have any more quests to give me, and my hunger had went down to 37 points. Hence, I went to the Mushroom Forest to find the young lady Xin Ran who was picking up mushrooms. She looked very happy to see me and she quickly ran up to me the moment she saw me. She smiled, "Big brother, you have finally come. I thought you wouldn't come here again today!"

Saying that, Xin Ran took out an oat bread from her basket and smiled,

"Here, this is for you!"

I nodded and received it. My hunger was filled to the brim when I finished it. Yeah, this would be enough for me to last for the next 24 hours.

Then, I took out a Large Magic Stone with Quality of 99 and gave it to the young lady, saying, "Xin Ran, here, this is my gift for you!"

"Ah?!"

The young lady opened her eyes wide, her clear, bright pair of eyes were filled with shock. She opened her mouth wide, and mumbled, "It's... it's a magic stone! The witch in my village said that only strong warriors could kill monsters and take away their magic stones. Big brother, are you a strong, powerful Radiance Warrior?"

"Uhm..." I froze a little, then raised my Weeping Fireblade and rest it on my shoulders, grinning widely, "Yup, I am the strongest Radiance Warrior out there, fighting for justice!"

Chapter 31 – Promise

The girl's face was filled with respect, "Awesome! Brother, when Xin Ran grows up, she wants to be an outstanding priest. Will you take me out of this village to see the world?"

I nodded, "Yeah, no problem!"

When he finished his words, suddenly a beautiful sound of bell resounded —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have received a quest – [Promise]! (Quest level: SSS upper)

Quest Description: Fulfil your promise and help young lady Xin Ran to be an outstanding Silver Moon Alliance's magician.

.....

My whole body turned into stone. How could this be? It was just a small promise, but it turned out to be an SSS-ranked quest. It was the quest of the utmost difficulty, almost equivalent to a godly quest?! Could it be the game system made a mistake? It definitely did, dammit, those game programmers definitely drunk two carts of beer before coding this game!

But anyway this SSS-ranked mission's reward would definitely be huge. Yeah, let's just wait and see. The growth of an NPC in game was extremely

fast, maybe Xin Ran would be an adult in just a few weeks time. Then she would be able to go to Floating Ice City to report with the Church University over there, and start her brand new fantasy journey of a priest.

As for me, what role should I play now?

Thinking about this, I couldn't help but laugh a little and told the little girl, "Xin Ran, next time when you go to the Grand Church to proclaim your priest's oath to enter the Church University, you must definitely tell me if anyone tried to bully you. I'll teach them a lesson for you!"

A giggle burst out from Xin ran's mouth, as she smiled prettily like an angel, "Brother, we have a promise!"

"Yeah!"

After a while more, Xin Ran rambled on about the things happening in her village. How there was one hunter who was bitten by a wild boar, how there were five tone-deaf wandering minstrel who came to their village. In any case, there wasn't anything that might trigger a quest, it was only a side story in the storyline.

Although spending the time with the pure-hearted and innocent Xin Ran made me feel very comfortable, I am still a gamer by profession. I did not play this game to chit chat with a loli NPC, so we said our farewells.

I went to the Wild Pheasants Ridge for a while and swept away countless turkeys there, acquiring more than n number of chicken meats.

Then, after I went back to the Floating Ice City to store my inventory, I made a detour to the far away Wildfire Plains. After searching for quite a while, I finally found the valley that I found the previous day, where there were many glutinous rice plants. Relying on the space provided by the Army Pouch, I picked every single glutinous rice that was there before finally returning back to the Floating Ice City.

.....

"Shi San, come over here. Help me buy salt please!"

I sent a message to my good brother. Not long after, the 'Outstanding Expert' Du Shi San rushed to my side after completing his task. He had bought a whole inventory full of salt for me.

Starting my cooking process, a magical sticky riceball magically appeared in my hands. Du Shi San sighed in awe at the beautiful sticky rice and said, "Lu Chen, this sticky rice's price would be so much more expensive than the pancake rolls selling on those street stalls..."

I gave him a glare, "What joke are you making? This is a food that can replenish mana!"

"..." This brat's gaze was actually pointing towards the beautiful girls tending to the street stalls in the Floating Ice City Plaza. He completely didn't think it was worth it to listen to me.

"Tsk tsk, that priestess is really not bad, her boobs should produce a lot of milk!" Shi San drooled on, looking at the beautiful girls in the far distance as he mumbled on.

I glanced towards the priestess he had mentioned, and my heart twitched suddenly — That...that was Mu Rong Ming Yue!

.....

Mu Rong Ming Yue was one of the main members of Ancient Sword Dream Guild. She was the second of the four great generals under He Yi, the "Sun Moon Star Dust". I never thought that I would see her here.

(Shiro: Yue means Moon, taken from Mu Rong Ming Yue.)

Bathing in the moonlight, Mu Rong Ming Yue wore a simple grey western gown. Seems like it was a white-tiered equipment, but the simple clothes couldn't hide Mu Rong Ming Yue's beauty. Her kind, virtuous expression was enough to make one intoxicated. She also had a pure, innocent beauty; but the most important aspect was the high mountain ridges on her chest that was practically as high as the Everest. It seemed like it was on the verge of spilling out of the western gown. The feeling of seeing those boobs that looked like they were about to burst out from the gown anytime was simply suffocating!

Shi San continued drooling as he ogled at her, looking like he was almost suffocated. Shi San only revealed this kind of expression three times before. The first one was when he first saw the natural, unrestrained and magnificent He Yi. The second time was when he saw the quiet and refined, bright-eyed and white-teethed Lin Yi Xin. And now, the third time, right, it was when he saw the amply endowed, shocking beauty Mu Rong Ming Yue.

I glared at Shi San and said in a low voice, "What the heck! Get a hold of yourself more, will you? Damn you, stop being so obvious, I don't want Ming Yue-jie to recognise me!"

"Eh..."

Shi San wiped off his drool and asked, "Lu Chen, I want to chase after Mu Rong Ming Yue!"

I strictly rejected him, "Stop, you don't even stand a chance!"

"Why?"

"Because... Damn, how would I know? In any case, no means no. Didn't you say that you wanted to pursue He Yi previously? How could you change your target so soon?!"

She San helplessly replied, "I read the newspaper afterwards and found out that He Yi was the Vice President of the Asia Region in GGS Corporation... She might even be promoted to President in the near future. Her status is simply too high above mine. I am not a toad who wish to eat swan meat, I still have some self-awareness in me..."

Saying that, Shi San's eyes seemed to glow as he stared at me, "Lu Chen, what relation did you actually have with the great beauty Lin Yi Xin?"

"No relationship at all."

""Wuwu..." Shi San replied, aggrieved, "How could you know so many beauties, Lin Yi Xin, He Yi, and now Mu Rong Ming Yue..."

Saying that, he grabbed my neck and shook it with all his might, turning my head into a rattle drum. He asked aloud as he shook me hard, "Say it quickly, Lin Yi Xin must have been interested in you, right?"

"Interested in your dreams!"

I shoved his hands away and said, "Lin Yi Xin and I only planned to work together in-game, our relationship was not as complicated as you think. The relationship between He Yi and I was merely guildmaster and her subordinate; it had always been that way. As for Ming Yue-jie and I, we are only close in game..."

At this point of time, a clear and sweet voice resounded from behind me—

"Was our relationship that....complicated?"

Turning around, I was so shocked that my soul almost flew out of my body. Unknowingly, Wind Fantasy, also known as Lin Yi Xin, was standing right behind us. She had already put her cloak away; That white cloak she was wearing previously had changed into a cape that rested on her back. This allowed her pitch black hair to flow down flawlessly like waterfall. Her snow-white face was now revealed, igniting desires of several men, and her pair of mesmerizing purple-coloured eyes made it hard for others to keep an eye contact on her. She was simply beautiful beyond compare.

Lin Yi Xin's equipment was of high quality. She wore a silver-coloured armour, graceful and dignified. Her armour accentuated her beautiful

curves, especially the two round mounds on her chest, those shockingly beautiful ridges practically made every single guy's blood boil with desire. Looking down, below her skirt armour, was a pair of snow white, long legs protected by a metal runic armour, followed by a coffee-brown Barbarian Boots. Only three words could describe the current Lin Yi Xin today: Goddess of War!

.....

"Gulp."

"Gulp."

I swallowed my saliva, and following me, Shi San also swallowed his saliva. Both of us looked at each other, disdain coloured our expressions.

Lin Yi Xin giggled a little, "Lu Chen, you... Forget it, I'm going to do my quest. See you later!"

Saying that, Lin Yi Xin brushed past me and walked out of the City Gate. She didn't turn around but raised her hands and waved, saying bye.

Shi San and I were frozen for quite a while. Lin Yi Xin's beauty was simply too attractive, so much that there were many players staring at her back for a full three minutes with their mouths agape even after she walked away. There were many good things in life that should be chased after, but unfortunately, Wind Fantasy's name was so renowned in Floating Ice City. Who would dare to chase after such a strong girl? Let's get back to making rice balls instead.

Before long, a bell resounded in my ears —

"Ding~!"

System announcement: Congratulations, your cooking skill levelled up by +1!

.....

Phew! Finally, my cooking skill reached level 3, I could now collect the materials for level 3 food item. Even level 2 food items could already be sold for such a high price, let alone level 3 food items. The current average level for players now is not even at lvl. 30 yet, so level 2 food items should be enough for their use. But when others have reached level 30 and thinking of Boss killing or PK-ing, they would need lvl.3 food items.

Right at this time, my heart started to jump wildly suddenly, "thump thump", as I saw two familiar faces walking towards us!

In the potions store, two players were buying health potions, and the ID on top of their heads could be clearly read—

Burning Sun LV-26 warrior

Mu Rong Ming Yue LV-25 priest

.....

It was indeed Xu Yang and Mu Rong Ming Yue!

I didn't even dare to breathe as I watched those two brushed past me, hearing their conversation in my ears —

Xu Yang: "Aih, boss only created an account, she had never logged in ever since this game opened a week ago, not even once..."

Mu Rong Ming Yue: "That's because Lu Chen is gone..."

Xu Yang: "Did you ask the boss when would she finally log in? Ancient Sword Dream is like a guild without a dream whenever she's not here."

Mu Rong Ming Yue sighed and replied, "Let's wait awhile more. I've been trying to console Eve everyday for these past few days, and I don't even know how long it would take... She only just started to be able to walk out from her dark place after losing Lu Chen..."

.....

The two people continued to walk further away, and finally disappeared into the forest.

Du Shi San patted my shoulders, saying, "Bro, be strong!"

I smiled, "I'm alright, shall we sell sticky rice balls?"

"Alright!"

Chapter 32 – Forest Python

Over two hundred sticky rice balls sold for 10 silvers each or 1 gold per set, were immediately sold out within half an hour. In reality, our selling price was actually quite high, it was just that the supply did not meet the demand in the current situation. As a result, we have struck it rich!

The number of experts in Floating Ice City is very high. A lot of player wanted to set up a strong, powerful guild and studio, and in order to occupy a stable position in the early stage of the game, this kind of supplies must always be in stock. But most of the players couldn't find the glutinous rice and pheasants, the materials needed for the sticky riceball. Even when they find it, they couldn't defeat it. Hence the market was monopolised by me, a person that have both talents to find and defeat things.

Looking at my inventory, I had secured 34 gold already. I thought that this amount should be able to top the Floating Ice City's Wealth Ranking if it had existed. I gave 10 gold to Du Shi San and smiled, "Take it to learn skills!"

"So much?!" Du Shi San was a little shocked.

"It's okay, you can also use it to buy potions."

"Okay."

.....

After Du Shi San bought some potions, he formed a party with other

players and went to train. As for me, I walked out of the city with my sword in hand. It was time for me to choose my next training spot to power-level to level 30!

Level 30 was definitely <Heaven's End> separation gap. Players who have reached level 30 would be able to learn more skills and even own three different type of pets. Bringing pets in battle would increase their productivity twofold.

First of all, I opened the Floating Ice City Ranking board, and surprisingly, I found that the board had gone through a thorough change—

1. Domineering Heaven Blade Lv.29 Occupation: Warrior
2. Rainy Clouds Lv.29 Occupation: Magic Knight
3. Red Iron Tablet Lv.29 Occupation: Warrior
4. Domineering Warrior God Lv.29 Occupation: Magic Knight
5. Domineering Archer God lvl 28 Occupation: Archer
6. Wind Fantasy lvl 28 Occupation: Radiant Ranger
7. Domineering Mage God lvl 28 Occupation: Mage
8. Domineering Warrior God lvl 28 Occupation: Warrior
9. Fallen Hero Lv.27 Occupation: Undead Swordsman
10. Clearwater Lv.27 Occupation: Archer

.....

I had forced my way in and ended with rank 9. The battle between Lin Yi Xin and I had left both of us heavily injured, she could only rank sixth. The first place was now occupied by Domineering Heaven Blade. This

person was indeed not an easy one. He was able to level up to level 29 in such a short time. He definitely had a trick up his sleeves.

Furthermore, other than Domineering Heaven Blade in the Domineering clan, there are four other people from the clan that occupied the top ten positions. Hence, amongst the 10 players in the top 10 ranking, five of them were Domineering clan members, it was simply a prestige overkill!

On the other hand, there are two new experts, Rainy Clouds and Red Iron Tablet who were the latecomers to game. It was unmistakable that these two are definitely not ordinary players!

As I was preparing to leave, suddenly a 'di' sounded —

System Announcement: Player Red Iron Tablet invited you to his friend list, Accept/Reject?

.....

I was frozen on the spot. Did he actually befriended me?

Approving the friend request, after a few seconds, Red Iron Tablet sent me a message, "Fallen Brother, your cooking skill, has it reached level 3?"

"Yes, what's up?" I replied him straight without pleasantries.

"It's like this. I want to buy 50 level 3 food items, the ones that adds 300 mana in 60 seconds. I'll leave the price to you. I need it in one day. Can you do it?"

I muttered to myself, a customer have come on his own, I shouldn't reject him. Furthermore, this Red Iron Tablet looks like a good person, worth to be a friend with.

Hence, I replied, "Alright, I will find you again in 24 hours. 50 level 3 food items, priced at 50 silvers each. Would that be a problem?"

After around two minutes, I reckoned he had been stunned speechless. I had asked for a sky-high price after all. Nowadays players could not even cough up 10 silvers, but I had actually asked for 50 silvers an item, it was practically asking a mouthful! However, I have my own perspective. A person who asked for so many level 3 food items, would definitely be going to fight a BOSS. Priests level 2 Heals required a lot of mana, it wouldn't be possible to support the others without using a level 3 food item. If the priest's mana was depleted, the whole group couldn't be healed. The loss will be very great that way. Hence, the money spent buying mana potions early was merely an investment for the future.

As expected, a few minutes afterwards, Red Iron Tablet replied, "No problem. 50 silvers each, but it's not limited to 50 portions. The more, the better!"

"OK, it's a deal. See you later!"

"See you later."

.....

I thought, I should look for food resources and level at the same time.

There is definitely no harm in levelling and earning money at the same time. Yesterday I found out from Shi San that we only have a few hundred yuans left, if we don't try to earn money now, we would probably have to eat air and drink from the rain soon.

Opening my cooking skill, I looked for the level 3 food cooking recipe —

Green Pepper Meatballs: Green Peppers x 10, Glutinous Rice x 20, Chicken x 10 & Salt x 15. Restore: 300 mana

I had plenty of stocks for Glutinous Rice and Chicken, the only thing I was missing was Green Peppers. But Green Pepper was a level 4 food item and it require a level 4 Hunting Skill. Coincidentally, after sweeping almost all of the Wildfire Plains' glutinous rice, which was half a day ago, my Hunting Skill had rose up to level 4!

Actually, my Hunting Skill was not the highest among other players, but I was within the upper ranks of those who had Hunting Skills, and on the top 10 ranks in the overall level. Hence I had the highest Hunting Skill amongst the top ranking players, I was one of the few who was an expert in military and handicraft skills, haha!

Opening the forums, I searched for Green Pepper. It was already announced in the Inventory List, the whole of Floating Ice City area, there were only one place that had Green Peppers — Frostwind Canyon!

Frostwind Canyon was situated within the south of Frozen Forest frontier zone. The distance of this place from Floating Ice City was extremely far, it was around one hour by foot. Along the way, there were various poisonous snake and ferocious beasts. Most players wouldn't

even think of going there, because they would not even reach Frostwind Canyon before being sent back to Floating Ice City by the monsters on the way.

How do you catch the tiger cub without entering the tiger's lair? Since I was already determined to do this, I turned back towards Floating Ice City and spent 2 Gold to buy Return City Scroll. Dammit, the price was marked up by another 1 gold again!

At the present stage, Return City Scrolls were considered as luxury goods, normal players wouldn't even be able to afford it. Only people like me who've had a windfall would buy these stuff.

Exiting Floating Ice City, I killed my way through Frostwind Canyon.

On the way, I encountered level 30 Goblins, level 32 Slime, level 27 Wild Wolves, level 31 Cynocephalus. None of them was a challenge to me, I almost created a bloody pathway towards Frostwind Canyon. On the way, I could still see some groups of players training, but as I entered deeper, there were no more players to be seen. There was only me, alone, carrying my sword walking through the forest.

My Weeping Fireblade glowed lightly with fire. This high attack, bronze-tiered weapon with a physical attack of 40 had invited the jealousy of several other players' eyes. But my player ID was displayed dignifiedly on my forehead, Fallen Hero, a player on the Player Ranking Board. Why would a person with a pair of eyes come looking for trouble with me?

Opening the world map, I saw that the distance to Frostwind Canyon

was coming near. It was as most a 10 minutes walk.

At this moment, the scenery in front started to turned into a boundless, dark-looking forest. Far into the distance, the sound of ghosts' wails and wolves' howls could be heard. It seemed like a high-leveled training ground!

My heart wavered for a moment. Frankly, with the abilities of my level 27, I shouldn't be entering this place. However, if I didn't go to the Frostwind Canyon to pick Green Peppers, I would probably have some regrets. In the end, taking the risk out of desperation, for wealth and for girls, I bravely stepped forward.

"Ding~!

System Announcement: You have entered a neutral map — Black Forest!

.....

Indeed, this was a high-levelled map!

I wielded my Weeping Fireblade, and carefully advanced forward. Suddenly, I felt a bloodthirst aiming towards me. Something was coming!

"Hiss..."

Bathed in moonlight, I suddenly saw a python appearing in between tree branches. It lifted its head, its pair of brown eyes was filled with a cold flash. Its body was extremely long, that it give off a nauseating

feeling.

[Forest Python] (Ordinary Monster)

Level: 35

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

.....

Its attributes wasn't shown, our level difference was simply too high! It's too late to run away, I could only brace myself and attack!

"Hua!"

I advanced to it in a straight line and brought down my sword heavily on its forehead. There was only a "Cha" sound as my sharp blade collided with its hard snake armour, producing sparks of fire. A low damage number flew out — 146!

Damn! It only accounts to 10% of its health?

The Forest Python hissed angrily and its head suddenly charged forward ferociously. Its speed was too fast that there wasn't enough time for me to dodge!

"Ka cha!"

A sharp pain jolted down my shoulders, I was attacked —

"Di!"

Battle Announcement: Forest Python had attacked you and caused 217 damage!

.....

Terrifying, this monster's defense was almost comparable to a BOSS!

I hurriedly retreated far away, and drank a bottle of health potion. At the same time, I hastily glanced at the Forest Python who was covered with a green armour from head to tail. Only a part of its body, 7 inch in size, was glowing with a faint silver colour!

That 7 inch part was definitely its weakness!

Not waiting to regain my full health, I immediately charged forward. My Weeping Fireblade was enveloped in a green glow. My [Death Blade] skill came down hard, splitting the air!

"414 ! "

Forest Python let out a miserable cry as its health fell by a huge margin.

Very good, this kind of attack had really worked!

My feet quickly drifted away and moved in a beautiful arch to the Forest Python's side. The reason I was doing this was because the Forest Python's head could only attack a target that was directly in front of it. But its turning speed was slow. Now that's an opportunity.

"Papa!"

"224 ! "

"219 ! "

I was attacked by the Python twice once again. As I was going to drop dead on the ground, the Forest Python received four slashes of my sword at its weak point, and finally, it died!

"Hua la!"

It dropped two different things, one was a Large Magic Stone with a quality of 79, and the other was a green coloured small pouch. As I picked it up to inspect it, it seemed useless—

[Forest Python's Poison Sac]: Level 3 item, contains poison.

.....

Apparently it was a special material to create medicine. Since it was useless to me, I just threw it into my inventory. I would see if I could sell it in stores back in the city.

Extending my hands, I used [Corpse Pillage] over the python's corpse!

With a "Ding", a black-coloured item appeared in my hands. It turned out to be a spear, a spear that was of a high quality!

[Forest Spear] (Black-tier Equipment)

Attack: 15-24

Strength: +3

Required Level: 24

.....

Seeing that, I couldn't help but laugh out loud. Whoever thought that killing monster would not give you equipments, I actually found it while searching the corpse!

I threw the Forest Spear into my inventory. I should sell it when I got back to Floating Ice City. This plaything's attack was actually not that bad. I could probably sell it for a high price!

When my feelings had calmed down, I looked towards the front once again. There were already level 35 monsters appraring in the putskirts of the Black Forest. Wouldn't the monsters appearing deeper in the forest be even more terrifying?

No wonder no one could make the level 3 food item. The food material was right behind this Black Forest, but this forest was practically impregnable!

Chapter 33 – Golden-scaled Python King

The forest was quiet and the land was still. Brightly coloured fireflies flew around the grasslands, fluttering and chasing each other.

A faint fiery light glowed from my Weeping Fireblade, a few stains of blood dyed the edge of the blade red. On the ground, a python that I just killed lay lifeless. I didn't know how many pythons I had already killed, I only knew that my experience had increased by a whole lot. I had already reached level 29. The experience from Forest Pythons was indeed bountiful.

"Phew..."

Taking a deep breath, I looked inside my inventory. I had already collected 45 sacks of poison, and I still didn't know what use this plaything would have.

Originally, I had wanted to go through the Dark Forest as a shortcut to go to my destination and draw out Forest Pythons and kill them one by one. However, I had miscalculated. I had been stuck in the Dark Forest for four hours full. A cruel reality posed in front of me — I was lost!

The map was blurred, so I was unable to scout the area. I could only roughly estimate the direction of the Frostwind Canyon.

Carrying my Weeping Fireblade, I brought along my footman, a 'fierce-looking' skeleton. It was a level 25 fossil which looked like a t-rex, and it could already serve as a meat shield for me. This was also one of the

secret weapons that allowed me to survive through the dangerous Dark Forest until now. The slave from [Summon Undead] couldn't be kept. It's gone if it dies, it's not that regretful.

Right at this moment, a bell suddenly rang through the air —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Player Domineering Heaven Blade has successfully reached Lv.30. As the first player reaching Lvl.30 in Floating Ice City, he received 3000 exp points and 200 fame!

.....

What a fellow, Domineering Heaven's Blade levelling up speed is really fast!

I slowly sighed. But then I thought again, if not for Lin Yi Xin and I killing each other so many times and dropping levels, how could the first player reaching level 30 be Domineering Heaven blade?

"Di!"

A message from Lin Yi Xin: "See? You have seen it right? Both of us dropped so many levels and allowed Domineering Heaven Blade and his Domineering Clan to take advantage of it. They won easily and we both lost out in the end!"

I was a little speechless as I replied, "This is not the responsibility of just one of us you know?"

She quickly replied, "As a guy, you should bravely accept responsibility!"

I couldn't help but laugh and replied, "Alright, I'll take responsibility of you."

After around half a minute, when I thought that Lin Yi Xin was too angry to reply, she finally replied, "I haven't even eaten breakfast yet..."

"What's that got to do with me?"

"I don't have the strength to beat you up..."

"....."

After our exchange, Lin Yi Xin was pleased with herself and sent me a cute laughing emoji.

I continued to force myself onward. I must find the location of the Green Peppers before daybreak today, otherwise I wouldn't be able to get Red Iron Tablet's gold!

After walking a little, I suddenly noticed that the environment had started to change a little. Observing closely, I saw that the grasses on the ground had all mostly withered, their leaves pitch black. From the looks of it... It seemed like it had been poisoned?

I raised my head and gripped my Weeping Fireblade tight. I had a

feeling in my heart that I had met a strong opponent!

"Hua!"

The night wind blew, rustling the leaves. In the darkness of the night, a pair of red eyes was intently glaring at me. When I saw it through the limited light from the moon, I was so scared that my whole body started to tremble. It turned out to be a giant python, a truly giant python. Its body that glowed with a golden light was as thick as a tree trunk, and it was at least 15m long. The scarier thing was its enormous head; it was baring its fangs, full of killing intent. It let out a hiss that was reeking of bloodthirst as its pair of expressionless, savagewild beast's eyes glared at me intently!

[Golden-scaled Python King] (E-upper ranked BOSS)

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Abilities: ???

.....

I couldn't see its stats at all, but I was sure that this BOSS wouldn't be easily defeated. His level might even be more than lv.40!

I secretly cried in my heart. My house was already leaking, yet it was raining the whole night (chinese idiom). I was just a little skeleton trying to pick some Green Peppers, but I actually met this Golden-scaled Python King, a frightening BOSS monster. This joke must be the guardian of this Dark Forest. Being able to meet it, was it my fortune or misfortune?

Gripping the Weeping Fireblade tightly, I stared intently at the Golden-scaled Python King. I must fight it! Since I had already met it, I couldn't run away like a coward. That's not this hero's style!

Behind me, my Green Fire Cloak fluttered with the wind. The 22 defense points from my Green Fire Cloak was also one of the things I could rely on. The additional 22 defense and 7 stamina increased my health to 610 points, so there should be a glimmer of hope.

"Hisss!"

The Golden-scaled Python King filled its fangs with venom as it glared intently at me. Then, its body suddenly moved towards me, mouth open wide, scary as hell!

I found the perfect timing and slid away with my foot, perfectly avoiding the BOSS's attack. At the same time, a green glow enveloped my Weeping Fireblade as [Death Blade] swung down, splitting the air.

"Cha!"

Right at the BOSS' heart, a damage number that simply made me excited flew out—376!

Not bad. Since I could break its defense already, then killing this BOSS shouldn't be a problem.

But right at this moment, the Golden-scaled Python King quickly spit venom towards me. My whole body was immediately stunned, as my health quickly depleted–

“Di!”

Battle Announcement: You have been poisoned, you will lose 5% of your health every 10 seconds!

.....

“Pa!”

The hard scales of the python’s tail crashed onto my armour, and that black stone armour’s durability immediately depleted. This BOSS’ attack was simply too powerful!

I downed a bottle of health potion. I couldn’t simply charge in blindly now. I moved my feet at lightning speed, 45 degrees to the right, then passed through a gap between two large trees away from the Boss.

“Boom!”

Golden-scaled Python King charged forward, opening its mouth wide. With a ‘Pu Chi’ sound, it actually bit on a big tree, its poisonous fangs boring through the tree trunk. The python king struggled with all of its might, it was a pity that its fangs were so long that it almost tore the whole tree trunk off. In the end, with a thundering sound, the two large trees were torn off and fell to the ground.

My eyes lighted up. Here's my chance! I never thought that even BOSS monsters could make mistakes, this was practically a blessing bestowed to me by the heavens!

I quickly moved closer to the BOSS' body, avoiding the BOSS' tail with my agile feet. At the same time, I stabbed the BOSS' heart repeatedly.

"Cha cha cha!"

After continuously slashing countless times, finally two gold-coloured scales flew out with a "gu dong". I had finally broken through the python king's defense, after its scales fell, its defense went down by a lot!

"Boom!"

Suddenly, a big tree was unearthed to its roots as the Golden-scaled Python King swung its head and tore the tree to shreds. It then looked at me viciously, seemingly thinking that this irritating skeleton was as annoying as a poisonous thorn, making its life miserable. As the guardian of the forest, the Golden-scaled Python King suddenly charged towards me violently.

"Puchi!"

"447!"

A shot of pain ran through my waist. I was bitten by the BOSS, but

luckily I wasn't swallowed up.

Gulping down a bottle of health potion hurriedly, I thought, if I was bitten once again I would probably die!

The situation was urgent. It was a matter of life and death now, so I decided to give it my all and quickly unleashed my [Earth Evasion] ability.

"Shua!"

My whole person suddenly turned into a crimson light as I disappeared into the earth, in the form of a crimson light.

I did not dare to make a sound, and prayed to god that the Golden-scaled Python King's seeing ability was not strong. Otherwise he would see through my [Earth Evasion], and I would die a heroic death right here.

My heart kept thumping loudly. But what made me happy was that the Golden-scaled Python King lingered for a while then actually MISSED its aggro on me.

"Chance!"

Hurriedly gulping down a few health potions, when I was back to full health, I slowly moved my [Earth Evasion] to the right place, in between the dense forest and the Golden-scaled Python King.

Humph, aren't you the mighty Guardian of the Forest? Then, I will let the

whole forest know that you have become a corpse today!

"Shua!"

A crimson light spread out as I suddenly charged out of the earth. The BOSS' aggro immediately returned to me as the Golden-scaled Python King charged quickly towards me. As for me, I immediately charged towards the dense forest.

My body was only 30 centimetres wide, and the Golden-scales Python King's body was at least 50-cm wide. I had observed it clearly that the distance between trees in the dense patch of forest ahead of me is less than 50 centimeters. Since that was the case, I would definitely have an advantage.

"Sousou..."

Passing through a few big trees with the speed of lightning, although the Golden-scaled Python King was a BOSS, its intelligence wasn't that high. It followed my movement route as it chased after me.

As a result, the python's long body wriggled around in the dense forest, hitting trees at every turn. As for me, I was like a dragonfly touching the waters, effortlessly passing through every single gap in the trees.

The whole Black Forest was resounding with the Golden-scaled Python King's roars. Snakes have scales, and at our previous battle, I had actually peeled off all of the Golden-scaled Python King's scales. It would be weird if it wasn't furious.

"Pu Chi... Pu Chi..."

The sharp edges of tree branches cut through the Golden-scaled Python King's injuries. My previous attacks was taking effect. The thistles and thorns tore the BOSS' injuries even wider. Not long after, the Golden-scaled Python King was injured all over as its health continued to drop drastically.

Seeing the miserable Golden-scaled Python King, I couldn't help but laugh, so a thousand miles dragon dance actually looked like this!

(Shiro: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dragon_dance)

.....

Time passed by the seconds and the Black Forest was turned upside down.

Trails of the python's blood remained on the conical thistles and thorns, leaving a potent fishy smell in the air, making others had the urge to vomit.

I walked a few more steps forward and took out a health potion to heal the health that was depleted by the BOSS. This poison really would have been the death of me. If it were not for my ample stock of health potion, I would already be poisoned to death!

Closely observing the BOSS' health, it was getting lower and lower. Under my opportunistic attacks, the Golden-scaled Python King's health had been reduced from 80% to around 15%. Seems like it is going to be

over soon.

I felt an excitement surge through my heart. If this Python BOSS died, it would definitely be the first fallen higher ranked BOSS in <Heaven's End>. Even its terrifying attack strength itself was unbearable for an ordinary person. Fortunately I had two Bronze-tier equipments on my body that allowed me to deal with it. If it were an ordinary party instead, even a Magic Knight would probably be killed on the spot!

"Hiss..."

After a few minutes, the Golden-scaled Python King who was already on its deathbed let out its last cry. Its might as the king of the forest had long gone; at this point of time, it looked extremely miserable. The armored scales on its head had been hacked away by my sword, and its long formidable body became its burden in the end, being complicatedly tangled in the forest. The dense forest finally became its burial ground.

Seeing that the BOSS' health was down to the last thread, I didn't hesitate for a moment and swung my sword down!

"Shua!"

A green light enveloped my Weeping Fireblade as a [Death Blade] was unleashed. Furthermore, my figure was slightly tilted forward as I unleashed a formidable strike, not giving my target the opportunity to dodge. It didn't matter if using [Death Blade] was an overkill.

"Pu Chi!"

Fresh blood spilled over as a huge number of damage flew out – 724!

It was a fatal blow!

"Ao...ao..."

The Golden-scaled Python King let out a miserable cry as its last thread of health disappeared. Its giant body slowly slumped to the ground, finally dying!

"Shua shua!"

A golden light appeared as I immediately gained two levels, rising to level 31. However, my vision was locked at the place beneath the Golden-scaled Python King's body, there were some item drops!

A glowing fluorescent dagger was lying in the bushes, in addition, there was skill book glowing in a purple light!

Chapter 34 – Moon Blade

Unable to hold back the violent joy that was bubbling in my heart, I flew forward quickly and grabbed the dagger and skillbook from the ground. The Golden Python King was a high levelled BOSS, wouldn't its equipment and item drops be awesome?

The dagger that was glowing in a silver light had a magnificent, sharp blade. There was a moon sign on the handle of the dagger, and it looked extremely beautiful. When I looked at the weapon's stats, I was utterly dumbstruck-

[Moon Blade] (Iron-tier)

Physical Attack: 40-75

Strength: +9

Additional Attribute: Increase the user's physical skill by 1%

Required Level: 30

.....

Iron-tier, it turns out to be iron-tier!

This dagger was indeed a high quality item, an absolutely high quality item!

Ever since I played <Heaven's End>, I had never seen an equipment stronger than this one. Its attack was an amazing 75 points, it was almost double of the Weeping Fireblade!

Unfortunately, my profession right now was a swordsman. If I used daggers instead of swords, I wouldn't get the bonus attributes for swords. My attack potential and speed had declined by 35%. On the contrary, it wasn't worth it to use the dagger.

Forget it, such a high quality dagger, I should just sell it when I got back to the city. It should be able to sell for an extremely high price!

Throwing the Moon Blade into my inventory, I took the other war prize, a purple skill book. The book was shining in a purple glow, seemingly as if a powerful strength was hidden inside-

[Vindicate]: Execute a fake attack on a target. The first attack wouldn't be able to cause any damage, but the next attack would ignore 50% of the target's defense and increase your attack by 35%. Required Level: 30, Required profession: close combat professions.

.....

That moment, I became petrified on the spot.

[Vindicate]?!

The first attack was a feign and the second didn't leave any mercy, ignoring 50% defense and increasing 35% attack. This second attack could even be called the God of all attacks!

"Shua!"

A flash of lights burst out, and [Vindicate] suddenly appeared in one of my skill slots. The effects at level 1 was to ignore 50% defense and increase 35% physical attack. When the level rise, the effects should increase even more. This skill would definitely be my trump card in the future when I'm PK-ing. It would increase my odds of success when fighting against strong opponents like Domineering Heaven Blade.

I should try it on some monsters first.

I shot a glance to the surrounding area. Not far from me, there was an unlucky level 35 python that I had spotted.

Charging forward quickly, I ran like a straight arrow towards the monster. My Weeping Fireblade drew a purple light across the air, landing right on the python's head!

[Vindicate]!

MISS !

It was a MISS as expected. The python was immediately locked in as my [Vindicate] target, and my next attack landed down like a roaring thunder. A green glow enveloped my Weeping Fireblade as I unleashed my strongest attack skill – [Death Blade]!

"Pu Chi!"

My sharp sword penetrate deeply into the monster's body, and a shocking damage number flew out–

"1149 ! "

With just one quick attack, it was an instant kill!

I looked at the monster's corpse and couldn't help but laugh aloud. Powerful killing move, this [Vindicate] was definitely a powerful killing move! I should increase it quickly to level 3, the effect should even be more powerful than this current one!

This time, I definitely had obtained a large haul. Not only did I get an iron-tier dagger, I had also learnt an extremely domineering skillbook. Today's profits was really amazing!

Happily, I walked over to the Golden-scaled Python King's body and extended my hands towards its corpse, saying, "Corpse Pillage!"

"Shua!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have found Giant Python Scales x25!

.....

25 Giant Python Scales appeared on my inventory. It was a level 3 metal armour material. Its quality was all a full 100. This should definitely be an extremely good armor material. Using this material to create metal armors or leather armors would probably add a lot of additional attributes, just like how there was an additional attribute of 1% increase in physical attack in the Moon Blade dagger. Don't belittle this small 1%

increase, these kinds of attributes would decide the standards of whether an equipment is good or bad in the later stage of the game. A weapon without an additional attribute wouldn't interest anyone's eyes even if their physical attack was high.

The BOSS's corpse quickly disappeared, but a brightly shining crystal stone was instead left in its place. Damn, I actually forgot to get the magic stone. The stone dropped from a BOSS must definitely be of a high quality!

Three stones lie on the grass. I bent my body and picked them up, and the stones shone brightly in my hands. A magical feeling seem to seep into my hands –

Dream Magic Stone: Level 3 Magic Stone, contains powerful magic power, quality: 97

Dream Magic Stone: Level 3 Magic Stone, contains powerful magic power, quality: 100

Dream Magic Stone: Level 3 Magic Stone, contains powerful magic power, quality: 99

I was a little dumbstruck when I saw these. What high quality Magic Stones! Items dropped by kings were indeed different. These three stones all had qualities that could be sold for more than 5 gold each, that was for sure!

Feeling extremely smug for my success, I thought, I am RICH! This time, I had really reaped a huge profit. Right now, it was still the early stage of the game. The price of one gold had been inflated to around RMB100. The gold value of these three stones in my inventory could even be

comparable to a white collar employee's monthly salary!

Hauling off an inventory of good items, I continued to move forward. It could be said that after defeating the Golden-scaled Python King, my abilities had completely risen to a whole new level, especially after gaining the [Vindicate] skill. That skill was practically the ultimate killing skill for PK!

.....

Brushing away the branches of trees in the forest, a bright light suddenly shone in front of me. I finally came out of the Dark Forest!

Not far into the distance, I saw something that started to ignite my greed. On the outskirts of the forest, a large canyon appeared. It was obviously the Frostwind Canyon, the only place that had Green Peppers in the whole domain of Floating Ice City!

Carrying my Weeping Fireblade, I quickly entered the canyon. Avoiding the monsters home to the canyon – level 37 Bloodthirsty Porcupines, I walked towards the edge of the forest in the canyon. A plant as tall as half of a person with an appearance that made me feel overjoyed appeared. What else could it be if it's not Green Peppers?

"HAHAHA..."

I laughed like a maniac as I quickly reached out and activated my Gathering skill in my Hunting Set Skill–

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have gathered Green Peppers x3, your Hunting skill has gained 4 exp!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have gathered Green Peppers x3, your Hunting skill has gained 4 exp!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have gathered Green Peppers x3, your Hunting skill has gained 4 exp!

.....

This is really too good to be true! There wasn't that much Green Peppers in the whole of Frostwind Canyon, it could even be said that it was a rare plant. However, the area that I was located in turned out to be the hidden haven of Green Peppers!!

As I continuously gathered food materials, without realising, four hours had passed. All the Green Peppers in the Frostwind Canyon had almost been completely picked up by me. My hunting Skill had also rose to level 4, 56%. As a pioneer in the Hunting skill, don't these materials come by easily? If I had waited until thousands of other players to raise their Hunting Skill and come to this place, I would probably not be able to snatch this much Green Peppers; I would only be sitting on the side waiting for the plant to re-grow. That would be an extremely torturing course of events.

Looking at my inventory, it was almost completely full. Other than equipments, stones and other important items, every other slot was stuffed with Green Peppers. There were 50 Green Peppers in one slot, and there were 47 slots in total. It couldn't be denied that all these Green Peppers were enough for me to use for quite a long time. After all, the level 3 food item only needed 10 green peppers each; the required amount wasn't that much.

Happily taking out my return scroll, I prepared to return and become a rich person!

Leisurely opening the Floating Ice City's Player Ranking Board, to my rage, I realised that I didn't rank first, I was only third —

1. Domineering Heaven Blade lv. 32 Profession: Warrior
2. Wind Fantasy lv.31 profession: Radiant Knight
3. Fallen Hero lv.31 Profession: Undead Swordsman
4. Rainy Clouds Lv.30 Occupation: Magic Knight
5. Red Iron Tablet Lv.30 Occupation: Warrior
6. Domineering Warrior God Lv.30 Occupation: Magic Knight
7. Domineering Mage God lv. 30 Occupation: Mage
8. Domineering Warrior God lv. 29 Occupation: Warrior
9. Domineering Archer God lv. 29 Occupation: Archer
10. Clearwater Lv.29 Occupation: Archer

.....

Gasp! Lin Yi Xin's levelling pace was really no joke! In just a blink of an

eye, she was already level 31, maintaining the same level as me. Seems like she had also met and killed a BOSS within these few hours. Otherwise, the levelling speed of killing ordinary monsters would definitely not be that fast.

Then, I proceeded to use the return scroll!

"Shua!"

I suddenly appeared in Floating Ice City. This main city was still as lively as usual. Thousands of players were either trading or forming parties in the city square. All these endless streams of crowd was indeed a huge business potential for merchants!

Arriving at the storehouse, I stored the majority of Green Peppers and took out a few glutinous rice, chicken meat and salt. Summoning the Cooking window, I put in 10 Green Peppers, 20 portions of Glutinous Rice, 10 portion of chicken meat and 15 portions of salt. Then, I started the mixing process–

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have created Green Pepper Meatballs x1. Your gain +5 experience for your cooking skill!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have created Green Pepper Meatballs x1. Your gain +5 experience for your cooking skill!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have created Green Pepper Meatballs x1. Your gain +5 experience for your cooking skill!

.....

Looking at the level 3 food item in my hands, I feel that this was definitely an extremely satisfying outcome. After all, it seemed that currently in the Floating Ice City, or even in the whole of China server, I was the only one who could create a level 3 food item!

Healing 300 mp in 60 seconds, this was definitely a compulsory item for high levelled mages. This was because a level 1 mage skill would consume 10 mp, level 2 20mp and level 3 30mp. Furthermore, a level 30 mage would be able to shoot an [Ice Blade] once in every 3 seconds. That would have consumed 600mp in a minute. It would be impossible to maintain their attack without eating a high levelled mp recovery food item. If a mage couldn't execute his skills, he would be equivalent to trash, and no team needed a trash in their party.

In the current stage, the majority of mages were buying the cheap level 1 food item, Apple Jam, to consume. Only high levelled mages would buy the level 2 or level 3 food items.

After half an hour, 100 portions of Green Pepper Meatball appeared on my inventory. All these were actually gold ingots that were shining brightly!

Opening my Friends Window, I searched for Red Iron Tablet and sent him a message. "100 portions of level 3 mp recovery food items Green Pepper Meatballs, 50 silvers each. That would be 50 gold in total. When you have finished preparing the money, come and find me. I am in the Floating Ice City Eastern Plaza. I will only wait for you for 10 minutes, quick!"

Red Iron Tablet quickly replied, "Please wait for a while, give me 5 minutes!"

After a few minutes, a warrior wearing a set of black-tier equipments in his whole body appeared. It was indeed one of the players in the Player Ranking Board, Red Iron Tablet, a dark horse and an expert player!

"That's really fast. You finished creating level 3 food items before half a day even passed!" Red Iron Tablet laughed aloud, "Brother Fallen Hero, you must be a studio member too right? It would be impossible to collect all these food materials within such a short time and create so many level 3 food items without a partner!"

I didn't comment but smiled instead, "Let's trade!"

"Alright!"

Opening the trade interface, I placed 100 portions of Green Pepper Meatballs, while Red Iron Tablet took out 50 gold and used it extravagantly. This trade was simply too advantageous for me!

Once the trade was done, Red Iron Tablet nodded his head and walked

away.

.....

Meanwhile, I walked around the city square and stood in the middle of the plaza, shouting, "Selling lv.30 iron-tier dagger with a physical attack of 75 and +9 strength. It's a must-have godly weapon for training or PK. Any assassin friends who need it please come and buy it, the highest bidder wins!"

Setting up a vendor stall, I placed the Moon Blade in front of me without setting the price.

Immediately, a crowd of people rushed over. Everyone was shocked, "Damn! We haven't even finished collecting our black-tier equipments, let alone seeing a bronze-tier weapon, and this person had actually gotten an iron-tier weapon?"

I was secretly pleased with myself in my heart. What a joke, I fought a BOSS monster that was over level 35 and it really took a toll on both my body and my mind. I strived to do my utmost to kill the BOSS, so it was actually fair that it dropped this equipment.

At this moment, a level 29 assassin squatted down and looked at me full of sincerity, "Brother, I will pay 20 gold for this dagger, but you'll have to wait an hour before I can gather the money. Will you sell it to me?"

20 gold, if you exchange it to RMB, it was RMB2000. The price was high enough, but I still wasn't satisfied. This iron-tier dagger was simply too powerful, the price I was looking for was at least 50 gold!

In a blink of an eye, a huge number of assassin and archer players drooled as they looked at the Moon Blade. However, none of them tried to offer a price. After all, at the present stage, this weapon belonged to the godly weapon category, hence the price must be really expensive!

"Damn, such a good weapon... If only I had such a dagger, my wife would level up more quickly..."

"Yeah, such a good weapon, it must be really expensive!"

"I reckoned that the price must be at least ten thousand RMB, otherwise the seller wouldn't want to sell it..."

As the crowd was discussing about the weapon, a sweet voice suddenly resounded from behind me —

"I want this dagger!"

.....

Sitting on the stall, I turned my body and saw an impressively beautiful snow white thighs, covered with an elegant metal armour. With her long robes fluttering in the wind, an extremely beautiful female warrior stood right behind me. She was someone familiar.

Lin Yi Xin, why would she need this dagger?

Chapter 35 – Little Liar

Lin Yi Xin's appearance was like a stone that had been dropped into a calm lake. It immediately set off a wave of ripples. The surrounding players showed an extremely surprised expression; it was obvious that Lin Yi Xin's beauty had already reached the level where it could be fatal to onlookers. Even though she did not smile, the surrounding male players were already drunk at her sight like a fool. There were even some players who were wiping their drools as they ogled at Lin Yi Xin's ample breasts hidden beneath her armour.

I turned around, grabbed my dagger and stood up. I still couldn't believe what she said and asked, "You wanted this dagger?"

"Yeah, can't I?"

Lin Yi Xin's beautiful eyes observed my expression before her gaze shifted to the Moon Blade, as if my appeal was far lower than a dagger's.

Alright, I admit. A school flower like Lin Yi Xin who had so many pursuers would have seen handsome guys as much as fishes in the ocean. It was normal for her not to take interest in someone like me.

"Sure, why not?"

I nodded and said, "It's just that, this dagger's price is extremely high. Can you afford it?"

Lin Yi Xin's beautiful eyes lighted up like a beam of light as she couldn't help but smile, "Did I say I would buy this dagger?"

"You are not buying?"

I dragged my hand down my face, "If you are not buying, then why did you even come here asking for it. I'm really busy, you know..."

"Really?" Lin Yi Xin glared at me as she stuck out her chest with pride, saying, "I'm not buying, but I can exchange it with something that is more or less equally expensive!"

"Oh?"

I was a little interested, and I couldn't help but smile as I asked, "What are you going to exchange it with?"

Lin Yi Xin shot a glance at me and replied, "Follow me!"

Not afraid of her killing me to rob my item, I followed her along. When Lin Yi Xin turned around, her white cape fluttered in the wind, revealing a pair of snow white legs. Her beauty was simply breath-taking!

I put a hand on my chest as I warned myself to be careful while dealing with these kinds of beautiful girls. Otherwise, I would probably lose all my life's savings. I still need the money from selling this dagger for my expenses, I shouldn't let it be easily taken away by beauties.

Lin Yi Xin passed through a small forest inside the city. I couldn't help but think that her name that was floating above her person was as beautiful as the real person. Wind Fantasy, lv. 31. Not so long ago, she was a famous figure that no one in Floating Ice City dared to approach.

Arriving in a secluded place, Lin Yi Xin finally stopped and turned around to look at me. Suddenly, she raised her hands and showed me something on her palm, saying, "See, don't you think this thing worth more than your Moon Blade?"

In her snow-white, soft palms, there was an impressive-looking ring. It was enveloped in a crimson red colour, and a picture of a crimson shield was carved on the ring. It was clear that it was a high quality item!

Lin Yi Xin hooked her fingers, and immediately a bunch of numbers flew up. A screen suddenly appeared floating in the air like a slide show. It was the ring's attributes –

[Crimson Guard Ring] (rune-tier)

Strength: +18

Additional Attribute: Increase the attack of Dark-attribute players by 3%

Required level:30

My body immediately petrified into a stone. This, this is rune-tier? Where did this beautiful girl get a rune-tier equipment? Even after the Golden-scaled Python King wasted my whole day and took my utmost

effort to kill, it only dropped an iron-tier weapon. Yet she had actually managed to get a rune-tier equipment, which was a tier above the iron-tier?

"You... This ring of yours, where did you swindle it from?" I couldn't stop myself and asked.

"Humph!" Lin Yi Xin rolled her beautiful eyes, "What do you mean by swindle? The way you say things is really unpleasant. I only managed to get this ring after spending 2 hours cautiously and conscientiously killing a difficult and troublesome BOSS. Irritatingly, it only added the physical attack of dark-attribute players, so it was completely useless for me."

I nodded as I swallowed my saliva. That 3% additional attack, in the current stage and even in the later stage, a ring that can add 3% additional attack could even be called a Godly ring. Furthermore, accessory equipments were already hard to drop. An accessory with a special attribute like this was even harder to drop; it was almost as rare as a phoenix feather or a unicorn horn.

"Haha, so, do you want this ring?" Lin Yi Xin tilted her head prettily and looked at me, unconsciously revealing her beauty that made my heart tremble. I immediately whispered to myself in my heart, "Don't look at her, don't look at her. She is a sly fox, your heart won't ever recover if you fall for her!"

Hence, I assumed the air of an aloof person and said, "The ring? It was just a mere ring, how could it be as useful as a weapon? Humph, I don't want it, there are a lot of people who wanted this weapon of mine!"

Lin Yi Xin was so angry that she started stomping her feet, "You! Don't you know that this ring's attribute growth would be so much stronger than your dagger!"

I replied, "This ring's requirement is simply too weird; it is only useful to dark-attribute players. It would probably not be able to sell for a lot of money when I sell it second-hand. Don't talk about attribute growth with me. Furthermore, there aren't that many dark-attribute players to begin with..."

Lin Yi Xin gritted her teeth, looking at me as she growled in anger, "Then what do you want?"

I laughed, "I can exchange my Moon Blade with your Crimson Guard Ring, but you'll have to pay me some gold. Otherwise, there's no deal here..."

"Ah?!"

Lin Yi Xin revealed an aura of killing intent, "You...you bully people too much!"

"Don't be angry, you'll get wrinkles," I joked lightheartedly.

"Bastard..."

Lin Yi Xin gritted her teeth as hesitation started to shroud her beautiful face. In the end, she couldn't bear to give up on that Moon Blade, and asked, "Alright, how much do you need me to add on?"

Seeing that the beautiful girl had compromised on the deal, I was secretly very happy. I raised two fingers to her.

"2 gold?"

Lin Yi Xin revealed a beautiful smile and cheered, "Deal, let's trade!"

"Heck!" I glared at her, "Can you not jump to conclusions? It's 20 gold, who told you it's 2 gold?"

"20 gold?"

Lin Yi Xin was extremely shocked. She couldn't help but to puff her chest out and shouted angrily, "Are you a robber? Humph, you should just kill me instead! That's not right... you..."

She entered into a confused mode again.

It was actually quite refreshing to see the figure of an ultimate beauty in confusion. I smiled quietly as I watched her, as Lin Yi Xin's beautiful face changed into various kinds of cute expressions. There was reluctance, unresigned, and also annoyance.

Finally, she looked up and said, "I only have 17 gold with me. I don't have any more than that, so I can only give you 15 gold. You should leave me with some money to buy potions, right?"

I nodded happily, "No problem, I'll give you a 5 gold discount. I'll take it as building a friendship with you!"

Lin Yi Xin gritted her teeth again, looking at me furiously. It was as if she was extremely displeased with me, this 'friend' of hers. She had actually already prepared to cut all relations with me.

We then proceeded to the trade. I placed my Moon Blade while Lin Yi Xin placed her Crimson Guard Ring and 12 gold.

I immediately cancelled the trade, glaring at her, "15 gold, don't joke around!"

Lin Yi Xin looked at me full of grievance and unresignment. Her doe-eyes were a little red, making me feel a little guilt and pity towards her.

I understood clearly in my heart that this girl was an extremely tough opponent. I could never be soft-hearted!

Lin Yi Xin initiated a new trade again full of unresignment in her face. She placed the Crimson Guard Ring and also 15... Damn it! 15 copper?!

I glared at her until my eyes almost popped out of their sockets, as I cancelled the trade once again.

"15 gold, don't put 15 silver or 15 copper again! As a decent person, you should be honest..." I advised her patiently.

Lin Yi Xin nodded, and we traded once again. This time, she had placed 15 gold.

Trade complete!

I wore the Crimson Guard Ring happily, perfectly satisfied. What a nice feeling! This rune-tier equipment had added 18 strength just like that, it was really powerful. Furthermore, there were still an additional 3% physical attack. It was indeed unmatchable!

Looking at my status, it had now changed. My physical attack had reached a shocking 132-246 points. I could probably plan to conquer the whole of Floating Ice City with my current attack right now. One reason for my high attack was the high attack growth rate of an Undead Swordsman, and another reason was that my equipments were top-notch.

Lin Yi Xin still held a sharp sword in her hands, but she had placed the Moon blade dagger on her waist. She looked at me and said lightly, "Little Liar..."

I was speechless.

Lin Yi Xin turned around as she waved her hands with her back to me. She disappeared into the city, seems like she was going to get her class advancement.

Right, class advancement!

I hurriedly bought two return scrolls as I quickly ran out of the city towards the Frozen Mound.

In the cold and icy Frozen Mound, my teacher, the majestic Undead Swordsman Su Lun was looking up at the stars above, as if he was observing them.

I walked forward and said, "Teacher, I'd like to have my class advancement!"

Su Lun looked down at me and laughed, "Little skeleton, you have indeed became strong. Alright, give me 10 gold and I will let you have your class advancement!"

"Damn!"

I couldn't help but be shocked. 10 gold? Other players in the Floating Ice City only needed to complete a simple quest to have their class advancement. Why do I need to pay 10 gold?

But I had no other choice. I couldn't not give him the money, I had to have my class advancement no matter what, right?

Class advancement was a very important enhancement. Only high levelled players of a certain profession could learn strong class skills. Furthermore, only by having a class advancement that one could train their class skills to lv.4 and higher!

Looking at my inventory, I already had 142 gold. After extorting 15 gold

from Lin Beauty, I had a total of 157 gold. 10 gold was nothing much to me!

I passed him the money!

Su Lun was overjoyed as he reached his hands out to pat me on my head, laughing heartily, "Brat, in the name of Queen Sophie, I am now officially awarding you the honor and glory of being a high levelled Undead Swordsman!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have completed your class advancement quest. You have now been officially promoted to a Bronze Swordsman!

A line of words appeared behind my name. Bronze Swordsman, this was my current profession name. There should be silver, gold and the others above bronze. In any case, I would be more powerful the higher levelled I get.

I continued to talk to Su Lun and found the new skill list window. Indeed, after advancing to a Bronze Swordsman, I could learn three new skills –

[Awaken]: Passive skill. Additional 5% experience received.

[Undead Regeneration]: Passive Skill. Recovers 0.1% health every second.

[Ghost Armour]: Summons Undead Strength to condense into an armour. Adds 5% defense.

Although they were all level 1 skills, they were all extremely OP skills. Especially the [Ghost Armour] and [Undead Regeneration]. One adds to defense, while the other adds to health. They were already so effective at level 1, how awesome would it be when they were at level 10? Furthermore, [Ghost Armour], this skill's name sounded so cool!

I spent 1 gold for each skill and learned them all without hesitation. Three new skills immediately appeared in my skill window. [Awaken] and [Undead Regeneration] couldn't be activated since they were passive skills, but [Ghost Armour] was an active skill.

Activating the skill, the moment I waved my hands, a banshee scream could be heard immediately. Terrifying looking Undead Strength surrounded me and wrapped around me. In just a blink of an eye, a formidable, extraordinary armour appeared, covering my whole body. It looked extremely stern and sombre. However, after a few seconds, the armor form started to disappear slowly. It became faintly discernable, as if it was protecting me.

Awesome!

I brandished my Weeping Fireblade. I could clearly feel how my battle power had increased by leaps and bounds!

At this time, a 'di' sounded as Du Shi San sent me a message, "Damn! The Landlord just came to ask for our rent, what do we do?"

"Damn!"

I replied with a message, "Wait a while, I'll make the money,"

"Make money?" Shi San asked skeptically.

"Yeah, make money. You should continue to level!"

"Alright."

I took out a return scroll, and returned to the Floating Ice City after pinching it. I stood in the middle of the plaza as I shouted loudly, "Urgent, selling gold now! Exchanging 1 gold for RMB80, any players who needed gold please contact me. I have a total of 150 gold and bills overdue!"

Chapter 36 – Broken Spear

There were quite a few people selling gold in Floating Ice City, but I would probably be the only person selling 150 gold all at once.

A lot of people shook their heads slowly, as if thinking that no one in their right mind would buy 150 gold all at once. This was not a small amount, even if you exchange 1 gold to 80RMB, it would total up to 12,000RMB. Even with a normal white collar employee's salary, most people wouldn't be able to afford it.

At this moment, a sound from the front came suddenly, "150 gold? I'll take it!"

I lifted my head and to my surprise, I saw a high-leveled knight player amongst the crowd. He wore a heroic, elite-looking armor all over his body. Even the lowest tier equipment that he was wearing was a black-tier. He held an even more magnificent glowing Crescent Blade in his hands, and a line of words floated on top of his head — Domineering Heaven Blade LV.32 Bronze Knight!

How could it be him?!

I stared blankly for a moment. The Domineering Clan really had big ambitions. Seems like this Clan Leader had wanted the whole of Floating Ice City to know them all by heart. Even now, Domineering Heaven Blade had actually came personally to ask for the gold. Tsk tsk, this guildmaster was really taking care of everything well.

Two thoughts immediately sprung in my mind. This Domineering Heaven Blade was certainly going to be my opponent in the future. Should I sell him my gold?

After thinking for quite a while, I decided to sell in the end! What reason are there for not selling? I could use his money to expand my opportunity for growth in the future, and moreover, this person, who had more money than sense, had served himself on a silver platter for me. Why wouldn't I take the chance to slaughter him?

Hence, I raised my brows and laughed, "This friend over here, how do you intend to pay for this gold? Right now, you cannot do a bank transfer in-game."

Domineering Heaven Blade shrugged his shoulders and smiled, "That's easy. Tell me your bank account number, and I will ask someone to transfer you the money immediately. It would be 5 minutes at the most. After you confirmed that you have received the money, then you can trade your gold with me. Wouldn't the problem be solved with that?"

I nodded. This person was really liberal with money; moreover, he had a more outspoken and loyal character. He was indeed someone that had the qualities to be successful. Lin Yi Xin's thoughts were right on the spot; in Floating Ice City, Domineering Heaven Blade and the Domineering Clan were certainly going to be our strongest enemy.

"Listen well, my account number is 662700200873*****^{*}, China Construction Bank. You can transfer the money right now, I will check it online."

"OK, no problem!"

Domineering Heaven Blade laughed cheerfully, "Please wait a moment, it will be completed immediately!"

After around 4 minutes, Domineering Heaven Blade said, "It's done, you can now check your bank account if the money has already been transferred!"

"Ok!"

I called out the web explorer function and went to my bank's website. After checking the balance on my bank account, I found that the account that had a balance of only 0.47RMB just a few moments ago had already magically turned into 12000.47RMB. Domineering Heaven Blade, this fellow, was indeed a really fat lamb to be slaughtered!

"Is the money transferred?" Domineering Heaven Blade asked.

I nodded, "Ok, let's trade the gold!"

"Alright!"

Giving Domineering Heaven Blade 150 gold, I hesitated a little and asked him, "Why did you trust me so much? What happens if I simply ran away after taking your money, and did not give you even a single gold? Won't you suffer heavy losses?"

Domineering Heaven Blade couldn't help but laughed out loud, "What a joke, that's a really low possibility. As for running away... I wouldn't even care so much about this little amount of money. Furthermore, I trust you. It was not because of the amount of gold, but it's the..."

"What is it?"

"It's just because, you are Fallen Hero! Hahah, a reputable player on the Player Ranking Board would treasure their ID as much as they treasure their lives. Looking through the China Servers, take a look at Chaos Illumination and Fallen Dust. They are all like that, aren't they?"

I nodded, smiling indifferently, "That makes sense. Let's work together again in the future. I've got to go now!"

"Alright!"

Looking at the time, it was almost 8am in the morning. However, I wasn't a little bit sleepy in the least. Instead, I sent a message to Du Shi San, "Shi San, log out. I want to discuss something with you for a while!"

"Oh? Ok!"

Du Shi San had almost finished his levelling and was about to sleep. He had intended to log out hurriedly and quickly go to sleep afterwards.

He came to the living room and sat on the sofa. Shi San looked at me with a tired expression and asked, "What did you want to discuss?"

"That..." I muttered to myself a little and said, "We... Should we create our own game studio?"

"What?! Game Studio?!" Shi San was astonished beyond words.

"Yeah." I explained, "<Heaven's End> had a large base of players. It wouldn't be possible to be successful with just one person's efforts himself; even killing BOSS would be extremely dangerous. That's why, we would probably need to attract heroes from all over the place in order to establish our position in the Floating Ice City!"

Shi San became even more excited at my words, his face red as he clenched his fist and smiled, "Brother, just say the word. What do you want me to do? I had always intend to be powerful and well-known in game. Say it quickly, which expert players should we attract for this game studio we are making?"

I replied solemnly, "You, me."

"What! Only the two of us?"

"It could only be like this in the meanwhile. We can expand in the future, but right now, we would need to find a new place to live first." Looking at my miserable one-room-flat, I could neither cry nor laugh as I said, "It's too small here, we should look for a four-room-flat for us to live in. How's that?"

Shi San said, "Sure, but it's too expensive. In the city, even if it's in the

New District, a four-room-flat's monthly rent would probably be at least 3000 RMB. With the addition of mortgage, deposit and so on, we would need at least 12000 RMB."

I nodded and smiled, "Money is not the problem. We can earn it back if we continued to play the game. Right now, could you accompany me to find a house? Let's take the first step of setting up our game studio together, ok?"

"Sure, no problem!"

Du Shi San immediately stood up, an unyielding expression filled his face. What a hot-blooded young man... However, he immediately said something that made me almost vomit blood, "In the future when our game studio is established, can we invite a few beauties to join our guild? Then...heheh, completing quests wouldn't be so hard when you are partnered with a girl!"

I looked down on him in disdain and glared, "And it would be best if these few beauties stayed in the same room as you, right?"

"Damn, what kind of person did you take me as? I, Du Shi San, am... am an honest and upright person! But, how about this, you and I can each take one beauty, you can even take the more beautiful one to your room..."

"Go away!"

In the morning, the crisp morning sunlight shone brightly. The two hot-

blooded youth who had not slept for the whole night ran through the roads and alleys, full of energy. It was only in the afternoon before everything was finally settled.

Shi San was curious as to how I managed to get 12,000 RMB, such a large amount of money, and asked, "Brother, were you selling your body last night?"

"Of course not, I'm such a pure and innocent person, why would I be involved with such a shady business? However, if you said that you were selling your body instead, I would probably believe it. It's just that I think your business wouldn't be that popular," I replied leisurely.

Du Shi San almost vomited blood.

Our game studio's location had been fixed. It was located in Suzhou's New District, quite a walking distance to China Resources Vanguard Supermarket. It was built in 2022, so it was still quite new. There were four rooms and 1 living room, and the unit was completely furnished. It cost RMB 2950 every month, which was also quite worth it. It would be really difficult to get such a cheap, high quality house in the current times.

Shi San said, "What are we going to do after this?"

"Let's get our first studio member!"

"Who?" Shi San's eyes suddenly shone, "Wind Fantasy...Lin Yi Xin is actually quite a good player. Should we invite her to our studio?"

I couldn't help but laugh and patted his shoulder, "Save it, brother. A girl like Lin Yi Xin is beyond your reach. She would also definitely not be interested in joining our studio."

"Really?" Shi San was a little dejected as he asked, "Then who should we get for our studio? We couldn't be getting some random noob players... Right?"

I nodded and said, "Yeah, a game studio should only have one noob!"

"What?!" Shi San was so angry that he started to attack me, but I kicked him back. He squeaked pitifully, "So who are you getting exactly?"

"Ghost Valley!"

"Ah?!"

Shi San immediately froze, " Ghost Valley has always been one of the top players in the Player Ranking Board, how could we even attract him to join our studio?"

"Yeah." I nodded. "Don't worry, I have confidence in it. We should move our stuff to the new studio in the late afternoon then sleep a little. We can plan and prepare for our next step later at night."

"Okay!"

We spent the whole afternoon busily moving our stuff, and after a meal

and a nap, we finally woke up again at 3am. I went out from my room which was facing the east, and went to Shi San's room to wake him up. We ate some stuff and immediately logged online afterwards!

"Shua!"

Appearing at the graveyard in Frozen Mound, I digged out of the mud that I was buried in and crawled out. I opened my friend's chat window and found that Ghost Valley was online.

I immediately sent him a message, "If you are not busy, can you come to Frozen Mound?"

"What's up?"

"Something good."

"Okay, i'll come in a second."

Ghost Valley was an expert player that was hard to come by. Although his fighting style was that he must win every battle and kill every opponent, he had unfortunately met an opponent like Lin Yi Xin and myself. Lin Yi Xin's equipment and playing style were all top-notch; her skills might even be on par with Chaos Illumination. As for me, once I had gotten over my 0.5 seconds delay, my capabilities would definitely be greatly increased. I could probably defeat a player like Ghost Valley easily.

Although Ghost Valley was an expert player, Lin Yi Xin, Chaos Illumination and I belonged to the super-expert players category.

Although it might be difficult for a player on Ghost Valley's level to defeat Lin Yi Xin and I, it would be very easy for him to defeat an ordinary player like Du Shi San.

Not long afterwards, an Undead Knight wearing a black cape came out from the forest. It was Ghost Valley!

"Broken Spear, what's up?" Ghost Valley asked.

(Shiro: MC's full ID name is She Ji Chen Sha – 折戟沉沙, it is an idiom that meant a great defeat, but could be literally translated as broken spear buried in sands. Ghost Valley is calling him She Ji – which meant broken spear)

I replied, "Little Ghost, have you ever thought of joining a guild in the future?"

(Shiro: Little Ghost (Xiao Gui – 小鬼) can also mean imp, naughty kid)

Ghost Valley was furious, "Fuck! I hate people calling me Little Ghost the most..."

I was furious too, "Damn you! I also hate people calling me Broken Spear the most..."

Broken Spear, it sounded like my little brother was broken. This name was not very auspicious.

Ghost Valley said, "So why are you asking this?"

I laughed, "I'm setting up a game studio, and I'd like to invite you to join our guild. Come and join us if you don't mind, our studio is located at Suzhou New District. Single room, food and lodging provided,"

"Oh?"

Ghost Valley's eyes lighted up, but his expression turned into distaste immediately, "Why would I join your studio?"

I spread my arms and smiled, "Easy. Do you want to become a top player?"

"Of course!" Ghost Valley's gaze was full of passion.

"Then that's it. As long as you join our studio, I will 'teach' you every day."

"Okay!" Ghost Valley cracked his knuckles and said, "I will definitely surpass you one day and trample you beneath my feet!"

"My foot! You can dream about it in your mind. Don't say it out loud, idiot!"

The first person to join our studio was an expert player who only joined for the sole purpose of defeating me. I really didn't know if this was a good or a bad thing.

I sighed a little as I asked Ghost Valley how would he come to Su Zhou.

Ghost Valley came from Wu Xi, and the distance from there to Su Zhou was only 20 minutes by car. He said that he would be able to move tomorrow after packing up his stuff.

Very well, our studio's line up is getting stronger now!

Chapter 37 – Crimson Mercenaries

In the afternoon, Ghost Valley arrived at Suzhou. Du Shi San and I went to the train station to welcome him and show our sincerity. We ate at dinner at a nearby place afterwards. We ate Dry Spicy Chicken in a Wok, a meal that gave us a lot of energy!

Ghost Valley was a 23 year old youth, whose real name was Gong Sun Gu. He looked delicate, refined and beautiful. He looked more pleasant to the eyes than Shi San.

Shi San was an over-friendly person, he hugged Ghost Valley's shoulders minutes after they met and said, "Little Ghost, we are brothers from now on!"

Ghost Valley's expression changed a little as he said, "Okay, Brother B..."

Du Shi San asked amazedly, "Why did you call me Brother B?"

Ghost Valley replied leisurely, "Du Shi San, if you joined 1 and 3 together..."

(Shiro: Shi San means 13)

"Dammit!"

Du Shi San was extremely depressed as he secretly scolded his dad's naming sense in his heart.

Entering the apartment building, Ghost Valley carried his bag and said thankfully, "It's been a long time since I lived in a dormitory..."

Shi San replied angrily, "Dormitory your head! You have a single room to yourself and treated as if you are a professor. What else do you want?"

"Haha!"

Ghost Valley set up the numerous cables for the game and installed his helmet. Then, he shot a glance to the game helmet in my room, and couldn't help but gasp in surprise and said, "That...Is that a VIP helmet?"

I nodded.

Ghost Valley walked into my room and observed the helmet more closely. To his surprise, he saw that the name written on the helmet was one of the well-known player from CGL Hall of Fame – Fallen Dust. Immediately, Ghost Valley petrified into stone. After a while he looked at me unbelievably and muttered, "Impossible... That's definitely impossible. Boss Broken Spear, how could you be...how could you be that genius Fallen Dust?"

I clasped my cup and laughed, "Calm down..."

Du Shi San also laughed, "Little Ghost, don't be so surprised. He is indeed Fallen Dust, and his real name is Lu Chen. He's been my brother for many years, so he couldn't be fake! Oh, right, do you admire him a lot?"

Ghost Valley shook his head, "No, it's not Fallen Dust I admired, I admired Night_chen, the legendary player who defeated Chaos Illumination on the Interstellar Competition!"

Du Shi San was surprised, "You knew too much!"

I sat on the sofa and licked my lips. Thousands of different feelings mixed up in my heart. My thoughts travelled back to three years ago, when I was still on my peak-

Chaos Illumination was my old enemy in my four years of playing . With regards to the matter of Chaos Illumination killing me and Ancient Sword Dream's guild members to death, there was a reason for that. Why did Chaos Illumination hated me so much, the reason could be traced back to three years ago.

Year 2021, in the WCG Interstellar Competition Finals, a Korean player called Chaos Illumination had broken records by defeating three top Chinese players and obtained the title of King. At that moment, Chaos Illumination was extremely arrogant and condescending, saying that he was unbeatable in the whole of China. He even begged for the Chinese players present in that moment to come up the arena and challenge him to battle.

Right at this moment, a Chinese youth appeared and massacred Chaos Illumination with five different skills. Furthermore, all his skills were unique and unknown. In this battle, Chaos Illumination had suffered the greatest loss in his life, hence he had remembered this youth's ID: Night_chen.

This ID was a username that I used five years ago to bully noobs on the Grand Arena.

During the WCG battle, I used this account to kill the Korean Star Player Chaos Illumination. I became really widely known after this battle, but this had also become the reason I was chased after and assassinated many times online afterwards.

That year, I had politely rejected an invitation from a well-known game studio, EM, and entered into the newly opened game by Yue Heng Corporation, . In just a year, I fulfilled the requirements to enter CGL Hall of Fame. However, in the second year, a car accident had injured my head severely. What happened next were a series of unfortunate events that I could not bear to look back upon...

Chaos Illumination was someone who harbours hatred for even the simplest things. He had always kept the humiliation he suffered from that night close to his heart. He even went to Su Zhou University of Science and massacred the entire school team. The ID, Night_chen had originated from this place. Before I graduated, I was the school's main force. I was basically an unbeatable, great figure, who very rarely suffered defeat.

After knowing that I was Fallen Dust, Ghost Valley's attitude towards me changed completely. He walked towards me and stood right in front of me, speaking loudly, "Lu Chen, I know that you have suffered a lot in . Don't worry, today, as we become comrades, I will put my utmost effort to help you fulfil your dream of revenge."

I couldn't help but smile, "I do have a dream, but it's not a dream of

revenge. I have a dream for us to become the best in the whole of Floating Ice City, or even the whole of China servers."

As I said that, I also looked at Du Shi San and said, "Since we already had three players for our game studio, should we decide on our studio's name and rules?"

Ghost Valley said, "The studio's name would also be our guild's name in the future. Have you thought of a name?"

I nodded, "I do have one in mind, it's Crimson Mercenaries. Since we are both undeads, we wouldn't be able to shake off our relations with bloody stuff. On the other hand, we are currently in quite a short supply of funds in this beginning stage of our studio. We would have to receive quests as mercenaries in game to save up money. Hence the name Crimson Mercenaries. What do you guys think?"

"Crimson Mercenaries...Crimson..." Ghost Valley's eyes sparkled and laughed: "That is actually a pretty good name. This name gives me the impression of a massacre on a battleground. That's really good!"

Du Shi San also nodded his head: "I agree. Three votes passed. Our studio shall be called the Crimson Mercenaries Studio!"

"Yeah!"

We decided the name of our studio with the drop of a hammer and planned on how to publicize our studio in the future. Du Shi San posted a post on the forums, titled, "Crimson Mercenaries studio had started

business. We accept requests such as killing BOSS, PK for revenge, finishing quests, help to get chicks and so on. Please contact Du Shi San directly for more information."

I am a busy person and all day long, I have to plan and prepare how to make high grade food items. Meanwhile, Ghost Valley was not proficient in socialising and was the type that doesn't speak much. Only Du Shi San was the most suitable since he had an unceasing eloquence. It was a waste not to make use of it.

Once everything was planned out, an A4 paper that said "Crimson Mercenaries Studio" was printed and stuck onto the gate. I had an awesome feeling then, like we were an actual army.

We ate packed lunch for dinner as we really did not have much more funds to spare. Ghost Valley expressed his understanding, and at the same time said that he himself was also a poor beggar. He only brought RMB500 with him, but he contributed it all to us. Such a selfless chap was not easy to be found nowadays.

At night, we went online!

"Shua!"

The scene that greeted before me was hazy and filled with dust. This was the scene inside my tomb. I pushed my coffin and crawled out. When I lifted my head, I found a pair of snow white thighs right in front of my face. Looking up, the view of the perfectly curved long legs was disrupted by a blue short skirt. Looking further up, I saw a slim stomach, followed by magnificent ridges covered by an exquisitely-made female armor!

"Uhh..."

I gulped down my saliva. Who was this person in front of me?

The owner of the long legs looked at me at a 45 degrees angle and said with a despised tone, "You are finally willing to come online!?"

The person who came was Lin Yi Xin. Amongst all the pretty girls in the game, she is probably the only one who knows that the resting place of Fallen Hero is in such a desolate place.

I reluctantly stood up, secretly sighing in admiration at her alluring physique. I shouted: "Beauty Lin, you wouldn't be here for no reason. So what's up?"

Lin Yi Xin chuckled, "Little liar, do you know what is my secondary profession?"

"I don't." I shook my head and at the same time, tried to correct her: "And I'm not a little liar!"

"How are you not a little liar? You almost caused me to have no money for potions!"

Lin Yi Xin fumed and looked at me, as though she wanted to consume me in one mouthful.

I quickly changed the topic: "What did you say was your secondary profession?"

"Harvesting medicinal herbs!" Lin Yi Xin pursed her lips, saying: "Let's go. Today I am going to a relatively dangerous map and I want to bring a bodyguard."

"You need me to protect you while you harvest?" I found it a little difficult to accept this. Although it was an enjoyment having a beauty to accompany me in the game, I am an upright youth and should not be intoxicated by the charm of women...at least not for a prolonged time.

Lin Yi Xin looked at me. It was as though she saw through my thoughts and could not help laughing: "I am harvesting medicinal herbs and not flowers. Why that worked up expression?"

"Which map is it that even you have no confidence of handling?" I seriously asked.

Lin Yi Xin nodded: "Uh, it is the Limestone Valley to the south of Floating Ice City. There are Lv 3 Dream Grass growing there and it is an essential ingredient to make Lv 3 potions."

"Your harvesting skill is at Lv 3 already?" I was quite surprised.

Lin Yi Xin nodded and laughed, sticking out her ample chest. She proudly said: "That's right, I have increased my Potions Skill to Lv 3 seventeen hours ago. Isn't it admirable?"

I shot a glance and helplessly said: "What do I have to admire? My hunting skills had already risen to Lv 4 forty-eight hours ago..."

"Ah?!"

Lin Yi Xin was stamping her feet in anger but she could not do anything to me.

"Oh right, Beauty Lin." I reminded her: "I have joined the Crimson Mercenaries Studio so I will no longer be free labour. I can go with you to the Limestone Valley but you have to pay for my services."

Lin Yi Xin stared at me with disdain in her beautiful pupils: "You! Is there only money in your eyes???"

"Not really. Do you still want me to follow you?"

"Yes, why wouldn't I!"

Lin Yi Xin looked towards the south and said: "It will take about five hours of your time. Two gold per hour with a total of ten gold. Is that OK?"

"Deal. Let's go!"

"Yeah. Let's go!"

Lin Yi Xin pulled me into a party. Ding! The system notified: Players

Wind Fantasy and Fallen Hero has joined the party!

Great. These two IDs which were considered well-known in Floating Ice City were actually in the same party now. Fate could sometimes be so magical.

Chapter 38 – Red Iron Tablet

"This is the first time we are working together, right?" Lin Yi Xin said.

"Yeah." I nodded.

"Can you give me 5 gold discount?"

"..."

I treaded on the grasslands, the Crimson Guard Ring on my finger glowed with a red light and the Weeping Fireblade on my hands glowing in a fiery glow. The equipment on my body was indeed awesome.

Turning around and glancing at Lin Yi Xin's armor, I asked, "This...this armor's quality must be quite high, right?"

"Yeah."

Lin Yi Xin didn't avoid the topic and laughed, saying, "Level 27 rune-tier, defense +20 and health +9. Not bad right?"

I was petrified on the spot, astonished. I couldn't help but laugh, "It was indeed pretty good. This armor should be the most powerful armour in the game at the current stage. Rune-tier, tsk tsk, it's really a godly item. Most of the people had never even seen an iron-tier equipment until now!"

"Hehe, yeah..."

"That... that time when I was PK-ing with you, there was a silver glow on your sword. What kind of ability was that?" I asked.

Lin Yi Xin suddenly stopped and stood under a tree, looking straight at me. A beautiful pair of eyes that seemed to have a magical attraction power seemed to suck me deeper and deeper into its depths, trapping me inside.

"There was also a red light on your sword. What's that skill?" Lin Yi Xin asked me back.

I sighed and replied candidly, "It was a unique Undead skill, a level 3 Undead skill that adds 15% physical attack to living organisms."

"Oh, I see. No wonder you inflicted so much damage to me..."

Lin Yi Xin frowned her beautiful brows, then raised her eyebrows as she smiled, "Since you have asked modestly, I would be generous enough to tell you. My skill is [Holy Spirit], it's a skill that happened to be the opposite of your Undead skills. Level 3 [Holy Spirit] will cause a 15% additional physical attack to Undeads."

My heart twitched a little. No wonder I lost so miserably last time. This [Holy Spirit] was indeed the natural enemy of the Undeads!

Thinking of this, I couldn't help but look at Lin Yi Xin, the outstanding beauty in front of me. Would she be my second lifelong enemy?

"That, is the [Holy Spirit] an unique skill?" I asked.

"No."

"Then, how did you learn it?"

Lin Yi Xin laughed and turned around to face me. She said lightly, "That's because I am from the magic race, and I am one of the fortunate ones from the magic race. I was born on a glacier. Before I went out of the newbie village to defeat monsters, I slipped and fell into an ice cave. There, I saw an extremely beautiful fairy goddess, received the Radiant Ranger profession and learnt this extremely powerful [Holy Spirit] skill. Would you be satisfied with this answer?"

My mouth dropped open wide and I only managed to close it after a while, "This experience was very weird indeed...it makes me think of the Tian Long Ba Bu story..."

(Shiro: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Demi-Gods_and_Semi-Devils)

"Yeah!"

Lin Yi Xin giggled, the sound of her laughter so alluring that it made me drunk in its midst. However, her giggles made me wonder if she was actually telling the truth.

The two of us followed along the path in the Frozen Forest and walked southwards afterwards. I was wearing a dark-coloured armour on my whole body while Lin Yi Xin wore a silver-coloured armour. We had killed all the small monsters who had overestimated themselves and tried to attack us with just one slash from the both of us. There was almost no pressure during the journey at all.

Half an hour later, we arrived at Bluestone Valley. There was a boundless mountain range in front of us that was covered with lush, green forest. Not far from there, there was a valley with moss-covered walls. The moss made it seemed like a blue coloured cliff, which was how it had gotten its name, Bluestone Valley.

I wielded my sword and walked towards the foot of the mountain range as I kept my attention to the plants surrounding me on my two sides.

"What does Dream Grass look like?" I asked.

"I don't know, I've never seen it before." Lin Yi Xin laughed lightly, her beautiful eyes sweeping across me as she smiled meaningfully, "Lu Chen, you are so simple..."

"Simple? Are you cursing me...?"

"No, you are just really simple..."

"Humph, let's just find the Dream Grass now!"

I carried my Weeping Fireblade and walked into the Valley. Logically, the Dream Grass should be inside the Valley. Lin Yi Xin followed quickly, her steps like a beautiful butterfly floating amongst flowers, splendid and magnificent.

Not too far away, suddenly, fighting sounds resounded from ahead. I could even see the lights from some skill's effects!

There was a battle!

I became alert and subconsciously blocked Lin Yi Xin from going further in front. I pulled out my sword as I said, "Seems like there is someone inside already..."

Lin Yi Xin pushed me away lightly and laughed, "I don't need you to protect me. You should just protect yourself."

After walking forward for a few minutes, from the depths of the forest, to our surprise, Lin Yi Xin and I found that there was a battle in the open field in front. There were around fifty players that were surrounding a strong BOSS. The BOSS looked like a puppet that was covered with blue stones all over its body, it's level was extremely high!

[Gigantic Rock Guardian] (D-average BOSS)

Level: 35

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Abilities: ???

"Oh my god! D-ranked BOSS?"

Hiding under the bushes, I couldn't help but cursed.

Lin Yi Xin stood quietly at my side, speaking softly, "Yeah, D-ranked BOSS. It should be the strongest BOSS at the present stage. Humph, those people had bribed the informant to keep the information from getting out. Did they think that others wouldn't know about it?"

I observed more closely and discovered that a lot of people who were ganging up to beat this Gigantic Rock Guardian up looked familiar. There were a lot of people whose names started with Mad Dragon!

"Mad Dragon Guild!?" My eyes widened as I muttered, "How could this be..."

Descent of the Dragon was carrying his spear and commanding the battle. The people who were attacking the BOSS were attacking in succession and in an organized manner. They immediately withdraw after attacking once, their movements smooth like flowing water. Their movements looked extremely organized and well-trained. Furthermore, one of the warriors attacking was someone I was familiar with. It was the level 30 warrior, Red Iron Tablet!

I couldn't be mistaken, these were the people who bought that huge amount of level 3 food items from me. I was deeply regretful, I never thought that Red Iron Tablet was actually one of the Mad Dragon's

member. Otherwise, I would never have sold them the precious food items that would help the Mad Dragon Guild to defeat this BOSS!

Lin Yi Xin suddenly used her sword hilt to beat me lightly. She laughed softly and said, "Hey, should we K.O this BOSS?"

I stared at her, aghast, "There were other people fighting it, did you want to kill steal the BOSS from them?"

"Yeah." She nodded seriously.

I was righteous and fair, "Stop it. You invited me to pick herbs with you, but did you actually want me to team up with you and kill another person's BOSS? Humph, such an upright youth like me, why do you think I would team up with you doing such a despicable act?"

Lin Yi Xin's small mouth gaped widely as she stared at me disbelievingly.

I bit my lips, then suddenly turned the topic around. "I'll K.O it myself, you can just watch from the sidelines!"

Lin Yi Xin couldn't help but smile and punched me lightly with her beautiful fists, "Do you want a beating? You are a trash from the beginning, so why are you even pretending? We can team up to kill steal the BOSS' experience later. If we both teamed up, we should be able to earn a lot."

"Yeah."

I nodded as I gazed at a far distance, smiling, "No matter what, this D-ranked BOSS must not be given to the Mad Dragon's members. That is a must!"

Lin Yi Xin clenched her sword hilt tightly, fixing her gaze on the BOSS as she laughed lightly, "Prepare your best killing move. We will rush out later when the BOSS is about to die. Don't you have the [Earth Evasion] ability? You should go out there first, so that we can coordinate from the outside and inside."

"Yeah!"

I replied lightly as my whole body turned into a crimson light, disappearing into the earth. I slowly moved towards the BOSS with 10% of my usual speed and contemplated my next plan of actions to ensure that I could kill steal the BOSS experience and equipment. I wouldn't let Mad Dragon members succeed, and I would also not let Lin Yi Xin to succeed. It was apparent that this girl was not exactly on my side.

When I reached the BOSS's legs, the Gigantic Rock Guardian had only a thread of health left. However, suddenly, Red Iron Tablet was pushed back by the BOSS's hands!

Descent of the Dragon bellowed, "Hold! You guys must hold it! Killing this BOSS will be our, Mad Dragon's first step on becoming the leader of Floating Ice City!"

Unfortunately, Descent of the Dragon's dream was bound to be destroyed!

The whole group surrounded the BOSS as they fought. Just as they were gonna beat it down, a surprising turn of event suddenly happened–

“Hou!”

The Gigantic Rock Guardian roared furiously and its whole body suddenly turned crimson in colour!

“Ding~!”

System Announcement: Gigantic Rock Guardian had evolved successfully. All of its attributes had risen by 35%. Furthermore, it had also summoned a Stone Armor and is immune to magic for 30 minutes!

“Hong!”

The Gigantic Rock Guardian suddenly pounded on the surrounding people violently, turning four Mad Dragon players into meat paste. Following that, it unleashed an electric charge to all four directions with a thundering sound. Over ten close-combat players fell to the ground one by one. There were only two players who managed to escape, one was Red Iron Tablet and the other was Rainy Clouds. They were players who were above lv.30 and had changed to their second class profession!

In the party chat, Lin Yi Xin said, “Let’s not attack first. It’s good that the BOSS had evolved. Let it kill a few more people, heheh, then we wouldn’t need to deal with Descent of the Dragon ourselves.”

I stayed hidden on the ground and said, "I think that's not really possible. Red Iron Tablet and Rainy Clouds are both strong players that had their name listed on the Player Ranking Board. With those two there, this BOSS would definitely die!"

"Then..." Lin Yi Xin muttered to herself irresolutely, "Then we should deal with Red Iron Tablet and Rainy Clouds first, before we proceed to kill the BOSS. We don't have to be too courteous, these two are players working under Descent of the Dragon; they were even nicknamed Mad Dragon's Twin Stars. In the future, they would be our enemies for sure."

"Alright!"

Clenching my Weeping Fireblade tightly, I suddenly leapt out from the ground, as if I was a Death God that had just appeared from hell. My sharp sword glowed with a crimson light as it flew straight towards Red Iron Tablet's throat.

"How could it... be you?"

Red Iron Tablet looked at me full of hatred as a hole appeared on his throat. His health fell down quickly as a damage number of 412 floated out. He had died instantly.

Chapter 39 – Spirit Wind Cloud Armor

Seeing Red Iron Tablet fell right in front of his eyes with one slash of my sword, Descent of the Dragon's eyes immediately turned green. His face was full of hatred as he loudly bellowed, "Kill him quickly! We shouldn't let this brat spoil our plans..."

I had no time to even react before a shadow suddenly emerged behind and thrust a spear at me!

"Blazing Thrust!"

My black armour shook upon the impact, with my [Ghost Armour] giving me an extra 5% defense, it resisted some of the damage I had received.

A burning pain seared through my shoulders, the ambushers attack was even stronger than Ghost Valley's. It must be known that had my [Ghost Armour] skill active.

I turned around and lodged a lightning fast sword attack. The attacker gasped, "Eh, so fast!"

"Slash!"

Blood splashed out like falling petals and the man retreated back after taking 317 damage. He was a level 30 Magic Knight, one of the Mad Dragon's Guild trump card, Rainy Clouds!

"Archers, shoot!"

Rainy Clouds knew the strength of my Weeping Fireblade. He did not forcefully fight, but turned around and ordered the three archers not far behind him to accurately shoot arrows at me together!

"Pa pa pa!"

Three consecutive damage numbers flew up. My defense was far above these archer's expectations. With the level of their attack power, they might still be able to kill a player with cloth armor, but it would be asking too much to kill a player with heavy armour like me.

Moving as fast as a lightning, "Pa, pa,pa" I trampled on countless grass and leaves as I drew two beautiful Z patterns on the ground in an instant, escaping from the archer's area of attack. A cyan glow enveloped my Weeping Fireblade as I thrust it straight towards Rainy Clouds head. If this powerful Magic Knight didn't die, it would be difficult for Lin Yi Xin and I to succeed!

Rainy Clouds suddenly smiled, as if he had a card hidden up his sleeves, and shouted loudly, "[Holy Shield]!"

"?!"

"Whoosh!"

A golden-coloured shield that was shining brightly rose right in front of Rainy Clouds. My [Death Blade] also cut down, the level 3 [Death Blade] that caused 15% extra damage!

"?!"

"Bang!"

It was, it was actually only inflicting that much damage?

I was stupefied as I saw a line appeared on the Battle Announcement: Your skill [Death Blade] had struck against Rainy Clouds [Holy Shield] skill that reduces 17% of the damage inflicted. You have caused 178 damage to the opponent!

That [Holy Shield] was also broken in an instant. It was obvious that Rainy Clouds did not know that my attack would be that high, so high that it could break his [Holy Shield] in an instant.

"Rumble!"

Drinking a bottle of health potion, Rainy Clouds immediately retreated hurriedly, sacrificing himself as a bait to lure me away as I continue my attack. This way, the other ten or so archers and mages from Mad Dragon Guild could then kill me easily.

But right at this moment, a beautiful silver figure suddenly rushed out from the forest, fast as lightning. It was Lin Yi Xin, this girl was finally going to attack!

I hurriedly shooting her a glance, and saw that Lin Yi Xin's beautiful pair of purple eyes was enveloped in a layer of silver light. In that instant, Lin Yi Xin suddenly took out a dagger that was sparkling with a bright light. It was the Moon Blade!

Is this girl crazy? Why would she use a dagger, a weapon that she was not proficient in, during a PK battle? Isn't this equivalent to seeking death?

However, my estimation was proven wrong!

The dagger in Lin Yi Xin's hands shone with a silver light as she waved her arms lightly. In that instant, the dagger had already flit across the part below Rainy Clouds' armpit. A shocking damage number flew out "-714!"

So...so powerful!

I was stupefied. Rainy Clouds was still a Magic Knight after all. His health should be above 800 points, yet he was instantly killed by Lin Yi Xin as soon as she appeared? This was simply inconceivable!

Lin Yi Xin's gaze narrowed as she shouted angrily, "Stupid Lu Chen! What are you staring blankly at! Quickly kill steal the BOSS!"

I immediately downed a bottle of health potion, maintaining my health above 50%. There was at least twenty other Mad Dragon's players. This was not a number that Lin Yi Xin and I could fight easily. Logically

speaking, the best policy was to immediately slip away from this place once we finish kill stealing this BOSS!

"Whoosh!"

My Weeping Fireblade swept across an assassin's neck like a Death God's scythe. It was an instant kill; my attack damage had completely overshadowed the threshold of what a level 24 assassin could bear.

Lin Yi Xin's figure drifted elegantly across a path. She had already changed her weapon to a longsword as she drew three big arches across her opponents. She cleanly killed three archers instantly, helping me to clear a lot of threats.

Brandishing my Weeping Fireblade, I flew straight to the BOSS. My target was extremely clear, kill the BOSS, steal the equipments!

Descent of the Dragon understood my intention perfectly and couldn't help but to shout loudly, "They are here to kill steal the BOSS, quick... quickly block him, the BOSS should still have 1000 health, it'll be okay as long as we could kill Fallen Hero within 2 rotations!

I couldn't help laugh. My body brushed across the BOSS' shoulders as I immediately thrust out my sword!

"[Vindicate]!"

MISS!

A huge MISS floated on the Giant's head, making Lin Yi Xin small mouth gaped open wide. She couldn't help but shouted furiously, "Waahhh, you are too useless...How could you MISS? Look at my..."

As she said, Lin Yi Xin broke away from two Mad Dragon warriors that she was engaging with and rushed over to kill.

In the next moment, I revealed a fully confident smile. Humph, Lin Yi Xin, just watch carefully!

"Hua!"

A sphere of cyan light enveloped my Weeping Fireblade. I unleashed [Death Blade], my strongest skill. Let [Vindicate]'s effects end this strong BOSS' life!

I leapt high above, my sharp sword drawing a perfect arch downwards slashing at the Gigantic Rock Guardian's shoulders with a powerful strength. The shoulders made out of rocks immediately scattered around as my sword split the Giant's body apart!

A huge damage number flew out, making almost everyone present all stupefied with shock. At the current stage, a player was already considered an expert if he could hit a 300 point damage. Unexpectedly, I could even cause almost 2000 damage to the BOSS with just one slash. This was simply too shocking!

In reality, it was extremely simple. I had already trained my [Vindicate]

to level 2, which gave the effect of lowering the opponent's defense by 55% and increasing my attack power to 40%. Furthermore, my attack was a critical attack. Hence, it was extremely normal to cause almost 2000 damage points!

"Hualala!"

The Giant immediately died on the spot and dropped a few equipments. Its rock head was also thrown into the air! This was a D-ranked BOSS, its equipment drops must not be that simple!

The laws in was extremely ruthless. It wouldn't decide who the BOSS belonged to, instead, whoever slashed the last attack would get all of the BOSS' experience. Furthermore, the equipment drop was also not locked on the person who killed it; it was free for anyone to take. This was why you would have to be extremely careful and be prepared for every kind of possibilities when you are killing a BOSS, otherwise, you might even lose everything with just one moment of carelessness.

Lin Yi Xin and I seemingly reached towards the underside of the boss' corpse at the same time; both of us had flew over together coincidentally. I reached out and managed to grab hold of two items, while Lin Yi Xin had also took away two of the spoils. Furthermore, both of us were bathed in golden light; we had levelled up!

"Whoosh!"

I instantly disappeared, transforming into numerous red beams and entered the ground. This was the supreme escaping skill that I alone possess!

Lin Yi Xin gnashed her teeth in hate: "Bring me along! This beast of burden ran off really quickly..."

After she said that, Lin Yi Xin put away her spoils into her inventory. Her sword swept at three of the Mad Dragon Guild's players. Her snow white cape fluttered and her long legs took to air to escape. Oh man! This pretty girl's escaping skills were not beneath mine!

Seeing that Lin Yi Xin narrowly escaping into the jungle, I was relieved. I remained hidden and slowly made my way into the shrubs, before emerging out from the ground. It just happened that an archer of the Mad Dragon Guild was searching the area with a bow in hand.

My Weeping Fireblade trembled and splitted the air, while the archer fell to the ground. The attack power of this blade was simply too strong.

I also quickly fled, and happened to see Lin Yi Xin when I ran out of the valley's exit. She was sitting on a large green rock, panting with rage as she glared at me: "Hey! Aren't you lacking some loyalty? Abandoning a weak girl like me and running away by yourself?"

"You're weak?"

I shot a glance at her. Lin Yi Xi was leaning atop the rock with a blade in hand, gasping for breath. Her chest proudly expanded and contracted. A pair of soft snowy legs dangled by the side of the rock and lightly swayed. In this moment, her beauty could not be reproduced.

My heart twitched a little as I said: "You have already engaged in shady businesses like murder and theft. Please stop calling yourself weak already ok?"

"Hmph!" Lin Yi Xin objected but asked me: "Hey, what did you manage to snatch just now?"

"I haven't taken a look at them..."

"Quick look!"

"En."

I opened my inventory and there were two new equipment there. One was a sinister looking black breastplate while the other was a helmet that had a faint flow. Not bad, both of them were armor type equipment!

I extended my hand and touched the breastplate, and its attributes appeared. It floated in front of me in a notification box; not only could I see it but Lin Yi Xin could as well.

[Spirit Wind Cloud Armor] (Rune-Tier)

Defence: 48

Stamina: +11

Additional Effect: Increase user's physical attacks by 2%

Required Level: 32

Damn! What a strong armor!

My eyes opened wide and I was so happy my mouth remained agape. It was actually a rune-tier armor. This trip was truly not a waste. It has a crazily strong defense of 48, while my Black Stone armor has only 9 defense; it was a world of difference. Furthermore, it adds 11 points to stamina, that's equivalent to increasing 110 health points. Adding on the additional 2% increase in physical attack damage, it could be said that this piece of armor is simply a treasure for warriors!

Lin Yi Xin similarly had her attractive little mouth wide open, and was deeply surprised: "That's really not bad at all..."

I quickly equipped the Spirit Wind Cloud Armor. I had happen to hit level 32 after killing the boss and I can equip it now!

In an instant, my attributes raised tremendously. My total health points reached a terrifying 750 points, while my defense was around a good 100 points. Archers that were below level 30 probably have no means to break through my defense.

I happily took out the other equipment; it was the helmet that had a faint luster. The model of the helmet was the form of a fierce beast and was extremely murderous looking–

[Beast Face Wind Cloud Helmet] (Iron-Tier Equipment)

Defense: 28

Strength: +7

Required Level: 30

Tsk Tsk. Iron tiered equipment. It was not bad as well. Defense of 28, increases strength by 7. Although it was way lousier than the rune tiered Spirit Wind Cloud Armor, it was still quite decent. Afterall, I am still wearing nothing on my head. Early in the game, helmets rarely appear. My defense had increased by a total of 28 now!

Chapter 40 – Clearwater

Quickly equipping the Beast Face Wind Cloud Helmet, a black-coloured iron helmet immediately appeared on my head, making me looking extremely tyrannical and murderous all of a sudden. Furthermore, this helmet had covered my entire face. As a skeleton, I still need to take note of my appearance. Hence I was extremely thankful as I could finally stop using my eyes that were black empty sockets to look at others.

Looking at my status, I saw that my defense had increased to 128 and my attack to 258. So powerful!

I raised my brows as I looked at the beautiful girl sitting on the rock. I asked with a laugh, "Beauty Lin, what about you? What equipment did you get?"

Lin Yi Xin pursed her lips and said, "Don't rub salt on my wound..."

"What exactly did you get?" I pursued.

Lin Yi Xin glared at me, feeling a little wronged as she replied, "It's a level 32 iron-tier leather wristguard and a level 28 black-tier wand..."

"Hahahah..."

"Are you seeking death? The way you laugh really deserve a beating!"

Lin Yi Xin brandished her sharp swords and charged at me. I

immediately turned and dodged it. The two of us then ran across the mountain as we continued to find other profit-making methods.

On the other end of the valley, Descent of the Dragon wield his long spear as he shouted furiously, "Fuck Fallen Hero... Fuck Wind Fantasy... I will never forgive you guys!"

"Have the Mad Dragon people gone away?" I looked at the clear blue sky as I asked inadvertently.

In the thicket not far from me, a blue coloured flower that looked like a small star swayed in the wind. A sweet, beautiful voice resounded from there, "Who knows, you can go there and check..."

"I don't think I should. It's not good to PK."

"Tsk!"

Lin Yi Xin walked out, holding a small blue coloured grass on her hands as she quietly laughed, "I didn't expect there would be Dream Grass here. What a nice surprise..."

I shot her a glance and said, "Little Cheater..."

"You are the Little Cheater. You cheat me of my 15 gold, my living expenses..." Lin Yi Xin retorted spiritedly.

I didn't retort back. Actually, that 15 gold was a little too much. I had

gotten a rune-tier equipment while she only gotten a iron-tier, yet she still have to pay me a 15 gold commission fee. The only who could do such a thing would only be me. Furthermore, it was towards such a beauty like Lin Yi Xin.

.....

"How many Dream Grass have you picked? How many do you need?" I asked.

"The more the better, but I only managed to pick 40 sets..." Lin Yi Xin wiped the sweat on her forehead as she looked elsewhere. Seems like her Herb Picking Skill had also increased by a lot.

"It's already over four hours..." I reminded her. "As full-fledged Crimson Mercenary filled with honor, I don't really like working overtime..."

Lin Yi Xin threw me a glance and said, "I'll pay you 3 gold for each hour you worked overtime, will that be okay?"

"Ok, boss, you are such a nice person~"

"You really deserve a beating..."

Lin Yi Xin pursed her lips as she said, "When I was picking herbs just now, I found that there is Green Pepper in this valley. Didn't you learn the Hunting Skill?"

My eyes lighted up, "Really?"

"Why would I lie to you!"

Hence, I immediately advanced into the forest. However, what greeted me turned out to be a Wild Bear that was baring its teeth against me! Damn it, I was tricked by this beautiful girl again...

Quickly dealing with the Wild Bear, I walked towards its corpse and looked around. Suddenly I found a lush, green plant. There was really... really Green Peppers growing here?!

Didn't the official website say that Green Pepper only grew at the Frostwind Canyon?

I don't care anymore, I should just pick them up first!

A few minutes later, I had a few dozens of sets of Green Peppers in my inventory. However, when I walked out of the forest, Lin Yi Xin had already disappeared. She had wielded her sharp sword and seeked for herbs across the whole mountain. This girl was really agile.

The Green Pepper in Bluestone Valley was not as bountiful as the Frostwind Canyon. However, having someone to pay me while I train my Hunting Skill here was a rare occurrence, so I happily travelled the whole place easily. I was already level 32 anyway, I didn't wish to level up that fast. Skills were the most important, yet levelling up would not increase the skill's experience at all. The current me cared more about my earning capabilities, and the faster I level my Cooking Skill to level 4, the faster I would be able to create level 4 Magical Food Items. That was my real, true capability!

As I cruised the valley, suddenly Ghost Valley sent me a message, "Boss Broken Spear, someone asked for our service. It's a mission to kill a level 32 Quest Monster with a commission of 1 gold. Would you like to accept it?"

I replied, "Can you kill the level 32 Quest Monster? If you can then accept it, I can't return now."

A few seconds later, Ghost Valley replied, "No problem, Brother B and I would definitely be able to kill it with both of our efforts combined. Although Quest Monsters are normally stronger than ordinary monsters, I am still a strong level 27 player after all!"

"Yeah, go. Work hard, it's for our Crimson Mercenary's honor!"

I motivated him a little, and at the same time, felt pleasantly surprised in secret. This Ghost Valley must be a genius in levelling. He managed to reach level 27 in such a short time, that was really too powerful!

If Crimson Mercenaries could have such an expert player like him, why would we worry about not getting famous in the future?

.....

In a blink of an eye, three hours had passed. Lin Yi Xin finally came out leisurely, as her skirt blew in the wind. She laughed towards me, giving off an extremely attractive aura. She was barely 21 years old. I bet in a few years, when she had more charm than she had today, she would definitely be a goddess that would bring countries down with her.

"Done with your work?" I asked.

"Yeah, I picked until my inventory is full. How about you?"

"I only managed to get a few dozens of Green Pepper. I planned to cook Stir-fried Potato Strips when I get back later. Do you want to try it?"

"Sure, let's go back to Floating Ice City!"

Lin Yi Xin took out a return scroll. This was a luxury good that only a person with money could afford. Seems like she was not as poor as she said she was.

I took out a return scroll too, and immediately teleported to Floating Ice City with a bright pillar of light. There were only Lin Yi Xin and I in the large teleportation gate. Sigh, seems like everyone was really quite poor. Return scroll cost 1 gold each, it was simply too expensive in this early stage of the game.

"My... commission fee?" I reached out my hands and said, "7 hours, the total would be 20 gold."

Lin Yi Xin chuckled and said, "Wait a moment. I don't have money right now, but I would after I sell my potions."

"Oh?"

I stood blankly at one side as I watched Lin Yi Xin going to her storage and taking out some materials. She called someone afterwards, and not long after, a beautiful archer girl appeared. She wore a beautiful leather armour and carried a long green coloured bow. She chuckled as she approached us, "Hehe, Yi Yi, did you manage to get the Dream Grass already, in such a short time?"

This girl looked a little familiar. A line of words floated on her head —

Clearwater LV.30 Bronze Archer

.....

What a girl, she turned out to be Clearwater, who was ranked number 10 at the Player Ranking Board. It turns out that Lin Yi Xin still had such a powerful friend!

"Handsome, did you forget me already?" Clearwater laughed at me.

"You are...?"

"Humph, forget about it if you can't recognise me!" She turned around to look at Lin Yi Xin instead, seething with anger.

I suddenly remembered, "Ah, you are... Beauty Lin's roommate, the one called Qing Qing?"

Clearwater giggled happily, "Finally. Seems like you still have an impression on me. That's right, I am Yi Yi's roommate, my name is Sun

Qing Qing, nice to meet you~"

I nodded, "Lu Chen, Fallen Hero."

"I know who you are~"

Not long after, Clearwater started making potions–

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Player Clearwater has created Health Potion II, her Potion Making Skill has gained +3 experience!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Player Clearwater has created Health Potion II, her Potion Making Skill has gained +3 experience!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Player Clearwater has created Health Potion II, her Potion Making Skill has gained +3 experience!

.....

Lin Yi Xin held a small red coloured bottle in her hands as she smiled towards me, "Did you see it? It's a level 2 health potion! Every single one of them could heal 400 HP in just a moment!"

"Nice!" I couldn't help but to shout in surprise.

Lin Yi Xin asked me with a smile, "Do you want some? It's 20 silvers each!"

"Give me 20!"

"Aiyo, boss, you are really generous..."

"....."

The thing that made me laugh and cry at the same time was that I hadn't even manage to get my commission and had to pay 4 gold first. However, this level 2 potion was really hard to come by. It was much stronger than the potions that normal NPCs sell. Bringing more of them would make help me to stay alive easier.

After creating around 150 portions of potions, Lin Yi Xin rushed towards the plaza and shouted out, "Selling level 2 Potions that increases 400 HP immediately. Whoever needs it please come and buy, selling for 15 silvers each!"

I followed behind her, and shouted furiously, "Dammit, what the hell? Why did you sell it to me for 20 silvers and only sell it for 15 silvers to others?"

Lin Yi Xin looked at me full of charm, "Who asks you to be so gullible..."

“.....”

There was a large market for health potions, and Lin Yi Xin manage to sell everything in 5 minutes. Lin Yi Xin turned around happily and gave me 20 gold, saying, “Let’s work together again in the future. Next time, whenever Mad Dragon is fighting a BOSS, we should go and and watch them secretly again. How about that?”

I nodded repeatedly, “Happy to be of your service!”

“However, you are not allowed to receive commission again...” Lin Yi Xin was still regretting her loss of gold.

I nodded again, “No problem.”

“Alright then, I shall log off first.”

Lin Yi Xin went over to one of Floating Ice City’s inn and logged off. Players must go to an inn to log off inside a City, otherwise they would have to set up a camp outside of the city.

.....

Going out of the Floating Ice City, I suddenly had an idea. It’s time for me to catch some pet to play with. I started researching on how to get pets.

As I was researching, suddenly, a “Di” sound come up. It was call request from Du Shi San.

My heart started to thump. Shi San had always used message to contact me, so why did he contact me with a call now?

Accepting the call, Du Shi San's voice immediately resounded in my ears. "Lu Chen. When Little Ghost and I was helping someone to complete a quest just now, we saw some things, but we don't know if we should care about it or not..."

"What things?" I asked.

"I saw Mu Rong Ming Yue and Xu Yang..."

"Oh, what happen...to the two of them?"

Shi San replied sombrely, "Xu Yang and Mu Rong Ming Yue are surrounded by people. There are seven people on the other side. The two of them would definitely not be able to resist them. I'd like to ask you, should we, the Crimson Mercenaries, help them?"

"Of course! Add me to your party immediately!!"

In this moment, my blood immediately boils with anger. Although I have left Ancient Sword Dreams, I would never tolerate anyone who bullied Ancient Sword Dream!

In the map, there were two orange dots not far from me. Those were Ghost Valley and Du Shi San's position. The location was not that far, it

should only need around 5 minutes walking time. It was at the Frozen Forest!

Locking in my direction, I immediately ran towards the location. At the same time, I prayed in my heart, "Sister Ming Yue, bear it for a while, don't die too quickly..."

VW:UUTS Chapter 41 – Mu Rong Ming Yue’s invitation

Freezing winds blew across the Frozen Mound. In the empty space, 8 players were standing by.

Xu Yang was wearing a red coloured armor and wield a two handed sword in his hands. He stared at his opponents intently as he said, "What did you guys mean by this? I got this armor myself. Aren't your logic of 'the one seeing also deserve it' a little too much?"

Behind Xu Yang, there was a beautiful priest who held a staff. She wore a simple grey robe. Although it looked dull, her physique was extremely hot. The mountain ridges on her chest seemed to almost burst her robe apart. Coupled with her shapely butt and slim waist, she was simply the work of the Gods.

This girl was naturally Mu Rong Ming Yue. She looked at the few people in front of her, not showing any signs of fear. Instead, she laughed, "Xu Yang, no need to say anything else. It was obvious that 'greed' is written all over their faces. They have just developed wicked intentions when they saw the bronze-ranked armor that you are wearing. Humph, come at us if you want us to drop this armor. We are not afraid of you!"

There were six people facing against Xu Yang and Mu Rong Ming Yue. The leader of the group was a warrior, Shadow Maple. Behind him was an archer that was called Shadow Ocean. There were also knight called Shadow Volcano and a few others. They were all Lv25-29 high levelled players. The equipment that could attract their attention could only be at least bronze-ranked or above.

Shadow Maple grasp his sword and walked forward, smiling lightly, "Brother Blazing Sun, we only said that those watching also deserved something. You don't have to be so worked up. How about this, I'll give you guys 2 gold as a bonus, and you'll give that bronze-ranked armor to us. Okay?"

"2 Gold?" Mu Rong Ming Yue couldn't help but let out a cold laugh, "Why don't you guys become a robber instead. Bronze-ranked equipments are at least 10 gold. Did you think that we are fools?"

Shadow Ocean raised his bow suddenly, aiming straight at Mu Rong Ming Yue, chuckling slowly, "This beauty over here. I have all along hated to deal with women. However, since you are so insensitive, don't blame us few brothers for not being courteous to you. After we killed you guys, we will guard your corpse. Humph, I don't believe that you would not drop that armor!"

Mu Rong Ming Yue beautiful looking face looked cold and hostile. She grabbed her staff and gritted her teeth, but she had no way to deal with these few hoodlum players in front of her. This game was originally a 'the strong defeats the weak' game, hence there were no laws to be upheld at all. Rules were decided by the players, and broken by the players. However, there would always be those wolves and foxes that would break the rules.

Shadow Maple suddenly raised his sword. Rays of light enveloped the sword. It was indeed the special warrior's skill, [Heavy Slash], a killing move that added 10% of physical damage!

Shadow Maple's target was Mu rong Ming Yue. Xu Yang immediately let out a loud cry as he charged forward. With a loud bang, he knocked

Shadow Maple away, his sharp sword brushing across his opponent's shoulder.

"247!"

His damage was quite good. Shadow Maple was pushed back a few steps as he couldn't help to give a cold smile, "Isn't your damage quite good? Brothers, let's attack together, kill him!"

"Woosh Woosh!"

Shadow Ocean continuously shot two arrows right into Xu Yang's chest.

"178!"

"201!"

Xu Yang had immediately suffered a great damage. His total health was only around 500, how would he be able to survive such an attack?

At this moment, suddenly a pillar of holy light shone down upon him. A healing number coloured in green flew out — 225!

Not bad, Mu Rong Ming Yue's healing skill was indeed impressive!

Alas, Xu Yang's health kept dropping very quickly. One priest's healing wouldn't be able to keep up with a few high levelled players' attack.

"Die, Bastard!"

Xu Yang was like a mad lion as he brandished his swords like a dragon bursting out of the sea. However, he was heavily outnumbered, even though he drunk potions and received healing, his health still teetered on the brink of death.

.....

Ghost Valley and Du Shi San was still hiding in the forest at the side. They didn't make a sound as they stood and watch.

I arrived from the back and shouted furiously, "What are you two stinky brats doing instead of attacking? Attack! Destroy the Shadow Clan!"

"Ok!"

Ghost Valley almost went out at the same time as myself, while Du Shi San followed shortly.

A blood red glow immediately envelope my Weeping Fireblade. A PK between players were my Undead Skills' chance to show off. That frightening extra 15% physical damage was extremely sharp and incisive!

"Pu Chi!"

My Weeping Fireblade struck heavily right at Shadow Ocean's neck.

This pitiful archer couldn't even had the time to react, before he kneeled on the ground and become a cold corpse.

"484!"

Not bad, after equipping Spirit Wind Cloud Armor and Crimson Guard Ring these two rune-tiered items, my physical damage had risen to an extremely frightening level.

After killing the archer, I turned into a straight arrow as I charged towards the priest on the opposite side. The priest was a male player with delicate features, who had fallen under my Weeping Fireblade with almost no resistance at all.

On the other side, Ghost Valley bellowed as he used his Flame Thrust to pierce through a mage, just like skewering meat and barbecuing it.

There was only six people in the Shadow Clan, and three of them was almost instantly killed. As for the other three people, they hadn't even been able to turn their back.

"Who is that?!"

Shadow Maple turned around and shouted furiously. When he saw me, his expression was immediately filled with hatred as he roared, "Fallen Hero, so it turned out to be you, bastard. I haven't taken revenge on you that time at the Fruit Forest. Go to hell!"

"Hua!"

Raging in flames, Shadow Maple unleashed his extremely powerful [Heavy Slash] once again!

I chuckled as I stucked out my chest and let his sharp sword fall onto my Spirit Wind Cloud Armor.

"Bang!"

"117!"

My Spirit Wind Cloud Armor buzzed as it shook, cancelling out a lot of the damage from Shadow Maple's skill. Furthermore, my own defense had already reached 128 points. With the addition of two rune-tiered armours and 1 iron-tier armor, my defense had shot up to the sky. My health had also reached 750 points. In addition, I still have my undead regeneration skill that allowed me to regenerate. I was a real heavy weighted tanker. How can a mere Shadow Maple get to me?

In the instant the opponent's slash fall down, my sword also hacked onto his armour. A huge "MISS" flew out.

Shadow Maple couldn't help but to laugh out loud, "Waht a joke! How could you dared to be the third-ranked level 3 elite player on the Player Ranking Board with this kind of abilities? My evasion rate is actually quite good. What the hell, go to hell brother!"

My lips curled up in the corners, as I revealed a smile.

Shadow Maple froze, not expecting that I would immediately charge forward again. My Weeping Fireblade was enveloped in a green light as I naturally unleashed my strongest skill—

[Vindicate] + [Death Blade]!

"Cha!"

My sword slashed through the air, and also slashing through the Shadow Maple's armour. A large damage number flew out — 1448!

"Ah?!"

Facing his death, Shadow Maple's eyes turned big and round, seemingly unable to believe that I could inflict such a huge damage on him. He stared at me, his eyes filled with humiliation.

I raised my leg and loudly stomped on Shadow Maple's chest, and kicking his corpse away. I didn't say anything, but immediately whispered in the party chat, "Shi San, Little Ghost, don't say anything and don't receive Blazing Sun's and Mu Rong Ming Yue's as thanks. We'll leave straight away after we kill them!"

I didn't dare to talk to Mu Rong Ming Yue. I'm afraid that if I spoke, she would realize who I was.

Ghost Valley cleanly slashed through the other two Shadow Clan

players. They dropped a whole ground of potions. Du Shi San and I immediately cautiously take all the potions. Shadow Maple had even dropped a black-tier leg guard. Its stats was quite normal, and would probably be only sold for 10 silvers at most, a trashy good. After sweeping through the whole battlefield, I immediately turned around and started to leave.

Xu Yang and Mu Rong Ming Yue froze on their spot, as if they still couldn't snap out from the shock of my 1448 damage points. When they snapped out of their daze, I had already taken Ghost Valley and Du Shi San to the outskirts of a dense forest. We had almost disappeared into the forest.

"Hero, please wait...."

Mu Rong Ming Yue catched up and smiled, "Fallen Hero, you should be the third ranked player on the Player Ranking Board, right? You have saved us this time, and we are extremely grateful to you. I don't know, would you be interested to join our guild, Ancient Sword Dream?"

I couldn't help but laughed awkwardly, and cried out in my heart, "Sister Ming Yue, Sisteer Ming Yue, I am actually a member of Ancient Sword Dream from the start. Why do we need to talk about me joining Ancient Sword Dream?"

I gave a signal and Du Shi San immediately turn around, saying modestly, "Beautiful lady, we already have our own guild — Crimson Mercenaries. If you are interested, why don't you join us instead? Crimson Mercenaries currently only have three members, so we need a great beauty such as you in our guild..."

Mu Rong Ming Yue froze as she suddenly laughed, "Hehe, are you teasing me? In any case, thank you so much for your help. If you need our help with regards to any other matter in the future, please just ask us."

Du Shi San's gaze fell towards Mu Rong Ming Yue's powerful weapon on her chest, and immediately gulped down his saliva. He had wanted to ask for an improper request. However, at this time, I sent him a sharp look, making Shi San tremble all over as he immediately shook his head, "Forget it, we are not helping you with the intention to do so. We, the Crimson Mercenaries already had emities with the Shadow Clan in the first place. It is not related to you at all. Saving you guys was just a coincidence."

Mu Rong Ming Yue stood dumbstruck as Ghost Valley, Du Shi San and I all entered the dense forest and disappeared in an instant.

Xu Yang walked forward and said, "Ming Yue, did you realise..."

"Realise what?" Mu Rong Ming Yue turned around.

Xu Yang's deep gaze stared towards the outskirts of the dense forest as he said, "Fallen Hero's PK technique is really similar to a friend's that I once had..."

Mu Rong Ming Yue's lovable body trembled slightly, "Fallen Dust..."

"Yeah." Xu Yang nodded.

Mu Rong Ming Yue bit her red lips and mumbled, "But Lu Chen, he , he already... Aih, how good would it be if he's still here with us. Eve would also not be so depressed, simply be in a daze for the whole day. She had initially had the chance to be promoted as a Director, but because of that accident, she lost her chance..."

Xu Yang: "..."

.....

In Frozen Mound, the three people walked together side by side.

"Hehe, how's our profit today?" I asked.

Ghost Valley laughed, "We had accepted three mercenary request, and received a total of 5 gold. Boss Broken Spear, how much do you gain?"

I coughed a little and said, "I earned 16 gold."

"Wah, we are rich! How about a drink later at night?"

"Haha, I was just about to suggest that!"

Chapter 42 – Wasp

Night had fallen. In Su Zhou, the night scene was extremely hazy. Rows of nightlife houses lied in disarray, pink lights shone inside the houses, revealing the attractive women inside.

On the road side, a small stall was open. This kind of small stall was called an 'open-air restaurant'. It was similar to the stall in the movie of The God of Cookery, where the chef had cooked dishes from unsanitary ingredients.

(Shiro: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_God_of_Cookery)

In one of the tables in the open-air restaurant, three youths were talking loudly happily. That's right, these youths were Du Shi San, Ghost Valley and I. Delicious dishes, beers and alcohol cups filled the whole table. Drinking and eating with friends in such a beautiful summer night was a kind of enjoyment.

"Today, Boss Broken Spear's killing move for Shadow Maple was really amazing!" Ghost Valley gulped a cup of alcohol and wiped his mouth, chuckling, "An attack that inflicted over 1400 damage, seems like that kid would be really shocked..."

Du Shi San asked again, "Lu Chen, what's that attack's skill name? How can it inflict so much damage?"

I put down my chopsticks and laughed, "It's called [Vindicate]. The first attack would be a miss, that's why it is called [Vindicate]. However, the second attack would greatly increase my physical attack and lower my

opponent's defense at the same time."

"Haha, no wonder it's so powerful... Come, let's toast to [Vindicate]!"
Ghost Valley raised his cup and laughed loudly.

We all raised our cups and drunk our beer down.

I wiped the alcohol in the corners of my mouth and smiled, "Today is really not a bad first day. Crimson Mercenaries had gained a total profit of 16 gold on their opening day. That's more or less around 1000RMB already. Our salary is almost at the level of a gold-collar's salary, haha!"

Ghost Valley laughed and asked, "Boss, Brother B and I spent a ton of effort just to earn 5 gold, how could you earn 16 gold on your own?"

I laughed, "I met a foolish and beautiful girl, it's a pity if I don't swindle her!"

Du Shi San's eyes immediately lighted up, "You are talking about Wind Fantasy — Lin Yi Xin right?"

"Yeah."

"Haha, not bad, not bad..." Du Shi San laughed out, but suddenly, he switched the topic and said, "Lu Chen, did you know Lin Yi Xin had a new nickname in Floating Ice City?"

"What nickname?" I was quite at a loss.

"Fruit Knife Goddess..." Du Shi San guffawed.

"What the hell? What kind of nickname is that...?"

"I have no idea." Du Shi San paused a while, then continued, "In the forums, there are a lot of screenshots of Lin Yi Xin playing the game. A lot of them are pictures of her PKing someone. She always used a dagger to finish her opponents, but nobody knows what kind of skill she was using. Furthermore, she always liked to hold a dagger at hand, and she looked beautiful enough to tear heavens apart. I think that was how the name of 'Fruit Knife Goddess' came about."

A look of longing filled Du Shi San's eyes as he smiled, "Whoever could catch Lin Yi Xin in their hands will definitely have a perfect life... If it was me, I won't even trade it for an emperor's position..."

I couldn't help but to laugh, "Forget it, brother, Lin Yi Xin is definitely not as simple as you think."

"Why?" Shi San was a little at a loss.

I put down my chopsticks again, and answered, full of analyses, "Firstly, Lin Yi Xin and I fought each other a few days ago and both of us dropped many levels. She didn't want to have a formidable enemy like me, hence she requested to meet offline. Why did she think that meeting offline would resolve the enmity between us? That was because she was extremely confident with her beautiful looks."

Pausing a little while, I continued, "Secondly, today, Lin Yi Xin had employed my service to escort her to the Bluestone Valley and gather Dream Grasses. But when we arrived there, we discovered that the Mad Dragon's guild members were killing a BOSS monster. At this point, Lin Yi Xin had made use of me to help her kill steal the BOSS. She is a very clever girl, so she is definitely not the beautiful wallflower decoration that you think she is."

"What..."

Du Shi San put down his chopsticks and chuckled, "Seems like this underclassman of ours, the beautiful school flower, is really not as simple as she seemed!"

I nodded, "That is correct, that is."

Du Shi San's eyes then lighted up as he looked at me with a dubious intention, "Lu Chen, bring that Lin Yi Xin down!"

"What?" I suddenly froze, "Damn it, don't joke around. I wouldn't want that kind of school flower, or rather... Cough, that person wouldn't even be interested in me..."

"Hey, you must bring her down!" Du Shi San clenched his fists, and put up an appearance of a-strong-will-dominates-all attitude as he continued, "Lin Yi Xin is the most beautiful woman in the Floating Ice City. Controlling her would be equivalent to controlling all the other beauties, and controlling all the other beauties would be equivalent to controlling all the girls in the Floating Ice City. Controlling all the girls in the Floating Ice City would be equivalent to controlling all the guys in the Floating Ice

City, and controlling all the guys in the Floating Ice City would be equivalent to controlling the whole of the gaming world, and controlling the whole of gaming world would be equivalent to..."

"Gulp!"

Shi San suddenly gulped down a mouthful of saliva, and finally stopped, as if he knew that saying anything further would be extremely disgraceful.

Shi San looked towards me and laughed, "Let me just ask you. Do you like this Lin Yi Xin, the school flower?"

I really wanted to hit his speaking pressure point so that he could stop talking. Who wouldn't like such a beautiful and innocent looking girl? I couldn't help but laugh as I remembered her expression when I swindled 15 gold out of her.

"That, that..." Du Shi San immediately pointed at me, just as if he had caught a crime suspect red-handed, "You are laughing like a pervert, yet you still dared to say you are not interested in Lin Yi Xin at all?"

This concerned my reputation and integrity. I immediately denied him, "Stop it, I was laughing so warmly and innocently and you dared to accuse me of laughing like a pervert. You are just saying bullshit, you brat... you are paying for the beer money today!"

Shi San immediately kept silent. He and Ghost Valley, the two broke guys, were currently relying on me to pay for their living expenses.

We kept eating until around ten pm, then we went back to our house after drinking and eating our fill. Afterwards, the three of us vigorously went online to level and earn money.

.....

"Shua!"

I went online and appeared at the Floating Ice City's inn.

I had to do one important thing today, catching pets!

The rule in stated that only players level 30 and above could own a pet. Furthermore, there were still a lot to learn about pets.

Any kind of monsters could be trained as pets, but their growth rate were all different.

There was a profession that exclusively existed to catch pets, and that was the Beastmaster. They relied on Seal Cards to seal pets and tame them. Of course, other players with different professions could also seal pets with the Seal Cards, but the chances of sealing success was only 20% of the Beastmaster's. Hence, Beastmasters were a profession that was naturally born to catch pets. It couldn't even be counted as one of the main professions.

I didn't know any Beastmasters in this game. However, even if I knew

one, they would probably not catch a pet for me. Everyone would always think about themselves first, after all. The moment someone caught a high quality pet, they wouldn't possibly give it to others. With regards to this point, you could only rely on yourself to satisfy your needs, wrap yourself in warm clothes and feed your stomach!

Walking out of the Inn, I went to the Magic Shop to buy something. Sealing Card!

That's right, we need Sealing Cards in order to tame pets. Entering the shop, I saw a beautiful storekeeper smiling and welcoming me, "This young adventurer, do you need something?"

I nodded, "Sealing Cards!"

"Alright, how many cards do you need? It's 20 silvers for each Sealing Card!"

"What? That's so expensive!"

I rounded my eyes and was struck speechless. There was no other way, I took out 5 gold and bought a total of 25 cards. I was not a Beastmaster, so I needed to prepare more. We must be prepared just in case something happens!

Afterwards, I walked out of the Magic Store and came to the main road. However, I suddenly saw a level 30 Beastmaster shouting, "I just caught a level 1 Green Praying Mantis with 3 stars physical attack and 2 stars agility. It has a BN value of 17, an extremely high quality pet! Heroes that

are over level 30, please come and take a look. It only costs 50 gold!"

(Shiro: Sorry really have no idea what BN is...)

I was struck speechless when I heard that. 50 gold? Is he selling a pet or his father? How could it be so expensive?

There were three main conditions for capturing pets. 1. The pet must be level 1, 2. The capturer must have a Sealing Card and 3. The capturer must be level 30 and above.

In the wilderness, there would be an extremely low frequency of a level 1 monster spawning. This level 1 monsters were possible to be tamed. Of course, the success rate of taming was also extremely low, otherwise the Beastmaster's trash of a Green Praying Mantis would also not be able to sell for such a high price.

When I was at the Wildfire Plains before, after killing a few monsters, I saw a level 1 Greedy Wolf. However, at that time, I only fulfilled the requirement of level 30, I had no Sealing Card with me. It was such a pity.

I thought that I shouldn't be too anxious to catch pets straight away. There would always be time in the future, I should first take a look at various pet's attributes first. The Beastmaster owned 5 pet slots while normal players only owned 1 pet slot at level 30. I must treasure this 1 pet slot.

Opening the official game database, I found the pet section. Various different pets in Floating Ice City appeared before me —

[Green Praying Mantis]

Attack: ★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★

Health: ★★★★☆

Agility: ★★

[Slime]

Attack: ★★

Defense: ★★★

Health: ★★★★★☆

Agility: ★☆

[Wildfire Greedy Wolf]

Attack: ★★★★★

Defense: ★★☆

Health: ★★★

Agility: ★★★★☆

[Saber-toothed Tiger]

Attack: ★★★★★

Defense: ★★★

Health: ★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★

[Wasp]

Attack: ★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★

Green Praying Mantis was an attack-type pet, but its agility was extremely low. On the other hand, the Slime's strength was its defense and health, it's health was actually a shocking 4.5 stars. Wildfire Greedy Wolf and Sabre-tooth Tiger were also good choices, but the one that I was interested the most was actually the Wasp. It actually had 4.5 stars in both attack and agility. Its defense and health was also not that bad. It was most probably the best choice of companion for PK and levelling for players in the early stages!

Alright, I had decided to get a Wasp. It would definitely be an enjoyable thing to have this little Wasp that could fly around and attack bad guys with me.

Searching for some information, I found that Wasps could be found in the south of Floating Ice City. It was not that far from the Bluestone Valley. Its level was around level 35-40, which was extremely high. Ordinary players wouldn't even be able to defeat them, even if they were players that had their names listed in the Player Ranking Board. The Wasp's growth for attack was extremely high after all. As a monster, its attack must also be extremely powerful!

Fortunately, I just gotten the Spirit Wind Cloud Armour and the Beast Face Wind Cloud Helmet, these two defensive equipments. My defense had increased a lot, I could definitely have a chance in defeating those wasps.

Hence, I bought an inventory full of potions and another 25 Sealing Cards before I set forth to catch my first precious pet!

Chapter 43 – Poisonous Wasp Forest

Wasps were located in the south of Floating Ice City, in the Poisonous Wasp Forest. This ‘Poisonous Wasp Forest’ name, really sounded like it came from a horror movie. It was obvious that the Wasps were poisonous monsters. The main reason for me to have chosen to catch a Wasp was not only because of its high growth rate, it was also because the wasps’ level was quite high and suitable for me to level.

After around thirty minutes, I arrived at the Poisonous Wasp Forest. When I reached the outskirts of the forest, to my surprise, I heard a voice sounding from the forest–

“Boss, would there really be a level 1 Wasp spawning here?”

“Of course, search the bushes a little more. It definitely will spawn here!”

“Oh, alright....”

.....

Pushing the leaves aside, to my surprise, I saw a line of four people killing monsters in the forest. They were all similar-looking, level 30 and above players who had already had their second job advancement. Looking through the players in Floating Ice City, the only group who could have this kind of elite troop members would naturally only be the Domineering Clan!

Domineering Heaven Blade carried his sharp sword and moved right in front. He slashed his sword and neatly execute two continuous slashes onto the Wasp in front of him, which was buzzing noisily. The Level 34 Wasp had a head larger than a soccer ball, a poisonous stinger on its bottom, and produced a loud buzzing noise when it flew. Suddenly, it lowered its body and raised its bottom, hooking its body. With a quick movement, it had stinged Domineering Heaven blade. In an instant, the Domineering Heaven Blade's complexion turned green. He had been poisoned!

"Priest, please heal, thanks!"

Domineering Heaven Blade slashed his sword two more times and killed the Wasp. A holy light descended on his body and he immediately gained more than half of his health back. That was a level 29 Priest, it was obvious that he was a talented priest that the Domineering Clan had nurtured themselves.

"Ca Ca!"

With his quick attacks, Domineering War God beheaded another Wasp, and as the Priest was helping him recover some of his health back, Domineering War God confessed honestly that it was a little difficult for him to single-handedly defeat the Wasps. He needed supplies and support.

"Boss, did you hear about what happened yesterday?" Domineering Knight God asked.

"Huh? What happened?" Domineering Heaven Blade asked.

Domineering Knight God took back his spear and said, "The Mad Dragon Guild had organized a hundred man team to defeat the final BOSS of the Bluestone Valley, but just as they were about to finish it, Wind Fantasy and Fallen Hero had kill stolen it."

"Oh, I heard about it already..."

Domineering Heaven Blade chuckled, "Descent of the Dragon, that brat, is really a clown. How dare he think of us as a rival with that kind of low quality clan. They were practically seeking death. Humph, this time Wind Fantasy and Fallen Hero had benefited from it. Next time, it will be our Domineering Clan's turn!"

Domineering Knight God frowned and said, "Boss, aren't you worried that Wind Fantasy and Fallen Hero would join hands together?"

"Worry?"

Domineering Heaven Blade couldn't help but sneered, "That's right, Wind Fantasy and Fallen Here are indeed extremely talented players. However, they both aren't leader materials, they would only be able to influence a small group at the most. In such a wide world in the , how would they be able to fight us? Don't forget that our [God Destroyer] guild has more than 2000 members in our records!"

Domineering Knight God added cheerfully, "There are really too many of Boss' fans. In this game, a solo player wouldn't be successful at all. However, if we could persuade Wind Fantasy and Fallen Hero, these two people, to join our Domineering Clan, how good would that be? Tsk tsk, I

just realised it the previous time we met. Wind Fantasy is really a true beauty!"

"Humph!"

Domineering Heaven Blade couldn't help but laugh, "You, brat, you are good in everything, especially your gaming skills, but you are simply too blinded by beauties. If you can change this then you would probably be able to do great things in the future!"

.....

I decided to avoid these Domineering Clan group. I didn't want to seek trouble with them, not because I was afraid that I couldn't defeat them, but I just didn't want to waste the time I should be spending on catching pets to PK instead. There was no meaning to it.

I entered the Poisonous Wasp Forest from the west side. This forest area was very big, and the Wasps level were also very high. The distribution of the monsters were quite close together, there would be at least one flying Wasp in every 2 metres. Hence, I had to be extremely careful when luring a monster. I could already attract the monster's aggro at around four metres, so I had to calculate a good distance before making my move.

I carefully attracted one Wasp over. It was level 35, three levels higher than me, so it should still be manageable.

"Buzz..."

The Wasp flew towards me like a flash of lightning, revealing its extremely quick agility. The stinger on its bottom advanced towards me quickly and gave me a [Prick]!

"71 ! "

Fortunately, my defense currently was extremely high!

I raise my Weeping Fireblade high up in the sky as a huge MISS floated out. Then, I quickly executed my second attack, fast as a lightning. Obviously, I was executing amy [Vindicate] and [Death Blade] attack!

"Pu Chi!"

Slashing onto the Wasp's head that was like a soccer ball, a large damage number flew out — 1287!

Not bad, my attack was extremely sharp. However, this Wasp had around 3000 health, its level was simply too high.

After a few continuous attack, I managed to kill the first Wasp in an instant. However, I need to drink a bottle of health potion. Luckily my [Undead Regeneration] skill was quite a good skill. A level 3 [Undead Regeneration] would regenerate 0.3% of the maximum health in one second. On the other hand, a level 10 [Undead Regeneration] would regenerate around 1% maximum health per second, healing the user's health back to maximum in 100 seconds. Such a powerful skill was definitely befitting of an Undead Swordsman's special skill.

Furthermore, in this kind of situation, [Undead Regeneration] would save me a lot of potions.

In a blink of an eye, two hours had passed, and it was 1 a.m. right now. I have killed countless of Wasps but I hadn't see the legendary level 1 Wasp yet.

"Di!"

I received a new message from Wind Fantasy, "Little Cheater, what are you doing?"

"I'm catching pets!"

"Oh, what are you going to catch? I'm also catching pets~"

"Wasp, how about you?"

"Little Red Riding Hood, teehee..."

"What's Little Red Riding Hood?"

"You don't know?"

"Yeah, please teach me..."

"1 gold for my teaching fees!"

"....."

Seeing that I didn't reply, Lin Yi Xin finally sent me a screenshot —

[Flame Blade]

Attack: ★★★★

Defense: ★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★★

Agility: ★★★★☆

I was immediately frozen. I sighed as I replied, "Such a strong attack and health!"

Lin Yi Xin laughed, "Yeah, if only I could catch one. It would be best if I could catch one with a BN value of 70 and above!"

"Yeah, wish that you accidentally kill a level 1 monster..."

"Die, you Little Cheater!"

I laughed out loud as I turned off the chat window. I swept my glance through my surrounding, and suddenly, I was petrified on the spot. There it is! I had finally managed to wait for one to fucking spawn!

Not far away, a Wasp was flying slowly. The letters on top of its head was really moving for me: Wasp LV-1

Finally, a level 1 Wasp had appeared.

I couldn't help but be overjoyed. I kept my Weeping Fireblade and ran towards the Wasp with big steps as I took out a Sealing Card from my inventory. I locked my target on that Wasp, and threw my Sealing Card right towards it!

"Shua!"

The Sealing Card flying in the air suddenly morphed into a giant talisman, encasing right on top of the little Wasp's head. The taming process had started!

A green progress bar slowly filled up, but suddenly, it stopped —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Sealing failed, you have 4 more tries to seal the target!

My heart twitched a little. There was only four more tries left. If I failed continuously, this level 1 wasp would level up to level 2, and that would mean there would be no chance for it to be tamed anymore. Heaven help me, please give me lots of luck!

I threw out another Sealing Card, and with a 'Shua', the card floated in the air on top of that little Wasp. The little Wasp continued to buzz as it

float around, continuing to ignore me just like it had from the start.

Failed!

I gritted my teeth. Let's continue, the third try!

Failed!

Fourth try!

Failed...

In that instant, I crumbled to my feet as I howled out, "Heavens, please help me this once!"

When the fifth Sealing Card flew out, it turned into a hexagonal talisman on top of the little Wasp, enveloping it with its light. The little Wasps' body continuously shrunk, then expanded, shrunk and expanded again. Finally, in the last moment, the little Wasp's body disappeared as it turned into a golden ray of light and flew towards me, entering my pet's slot. The only pet slot I had was immediately occupied, I wouldn't be able to get a second pet now.

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have successfully tamed the wasp!

.....

Anxiously opening my status, I found the Wasp's attributes plainly visible on my window —

[Wasp]

Level: 1

Attack: 5

Agility: 6

Stamina: 3

Health: 5

Growth Rate —

Attack: ★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★☆

Health: ★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★☆

.....

I calculated that its total initial stats value was 19 points. That would mean that its BN value was 19 points. There were two ways to measure a pet's quality. First was the growth rate. Different types of monsters would have a different growth rate than another, however, monsters of the same types all have the same growth rate. Secondly, the initial stats for all pets were different. Generally speaking, the higher the initial point, the stronger it would be in the future. This was its BN value.

The Wasp that I had managed to catch had a BN value of 19. I was a little dumbfounded.

Hence, I sent a short message to Lin Yi Xin, "Beautiful Yi Yi, what do you think of a Wasp with a BN value of 19?"

Lin Yi Xin replied, "That's not bad, train it.."

I felt that her reply was a little bit weird and asked, "What do you mean by not bad?"

Lin Yi Xin sent me a smiley and replied, "If you train a pet with such a noob initial stats, it would be much easier for me to beat you up in the future. Of course it's not bad..."

"Dammit!"

I turned off the chat window. Dammit, this wasp was actually trash. What do I do? I can't bear to throw it away, but if I don't throw it away, if I wanted to become a powerful player, I couldn't have such a trashy pet. That was equivalent to seeking your own doom. Just as Lin Yi Xin had said, if I train this pet, it would be very easy for her in the future to bully me.

The rules in was that a level 30 player could only have one pet. But if they raised their levels higher, they would be able to get their second pet slot. The highest number of pet slot was three, but you can only summon one pet at any time, even during combat. When your pet dies, you

wouldn't be able to summon it in 10 minutes. Hence, people's requirements for a powerful pet had become extremely high.

The little Wasp flapped its little wings, flying around in front of me. It even flew in a circle, and it looked as if it was extremely happy.

As I was greatly distressed and was about to leave, a voice suddenly resounded from my right —

"Dammit! This brat had managed to catch a level 1 Wasp!"

.....

Turning around, I saw Domineering Knight God and Domineering War God approaching me. The two of them glared at my little Wasp intently, their eyes filled with greed. Such a greedy look might have been equivalent to Dong Zhuo's look when he first met Diao Chan.

(Shiro: Dong Zhuo was a tyrannical emperor who was overthrown after he was bewitched by one of the Four Great Beauties of Ancient China, Diao Chan.)

Chapter 44 – Queen Wasp’s Nest

The frequency of level 1 monsters spawning were definitely not high. The Domineering Clan had rummaged through the Wasp Forest for a few hours, but it seemed like they hadn’t met even a single level 1 Wasp before. Seeing that I had already succeeded sealing a Wasp, their hunter’s heart was immediately awoken. Domineering Knight God and Domineering War God immediately closed in towards me, brandishing their blades.

I, on the other hand, was not afraid. With the little Wasp beside me, I looked at the two of them and smiled, “These two heroes, what brings you two here?”

Domineering Knight God was startled for a while before smiling back, “It’s nothing. Fallen Hero, have you managed to catch a pet?”

“Yeah.”

I turned and rubbed the Little Wasp’s head, smiling, “Tsk tsk, with a 4.5 stars in attack and agility, it’s indeed a high quality pet. Furthermore, my fortune is quite good, this wasp has a BN value of 35. Haha, not bad right?”

Immediately, Domineering Knight God’s eyes almost turned green, “BN of 35 points? That...isn’t that too strong?”

Domineering War God carried his sword and walked forward, coldly smiling, “Does Fallen Hero has any intention of selling this BN 35 Wasp?”

I quickly nodded my head, "I don't, I need to train it myself!"

"Really?"

Domineering War God let out a cold smile, "I'm willing to pay 5 gold to buy that wasp. Would you be willing to sell it to us? We can all be friends, and you can count that as giving some face to us, the Domineering Clan and God Destroyer Guild."

I still shook my head, "I'm not selling! This BN35 Wasp must at least worth 50 gold and above. Do you think I'm an idiot?"

"Since you are the one who said that, don't blame us for not being courteous!"

Domineering War God pulled out his long sword with a clang, and smiled coldly, "You can either give us the Wasp to us, or die 7 to 8 times here. We, the Domineering Clan, wouldn't mind guarding your corpse a few days and night, really~ Hehe!"

I couldn't help but laugh. After exchanging a few sentences, the Domineering Clan's true character had finally come out!

At this time, Domineering Heaven Blade appeared, bringing along two archers and 1 priest, bellowing loudly, "War God, what are you doing? Didn't I say that Fallen Hero is our Domineering Clan's friend!"

Domineering War God bit his teeth growled in a low voice, "Boss, he managed to catch a wasp, it's a high quality pet with a BN value of 35!"

"Ah?!"

Domineering Heave Blade immediately darkened, as if he was trying to choose between this 'friend' or the BN 35 OP wasp.

In the end, I was pitifully abandoned.

Domineering Heaven Blade lifted his blade and smiled, "Fallen Hero, you see, I am willing to pay 50 gold to buy your Wasp. Would you be willing to sell it?"

I immediately got to the point, "If I don't agree to it, you would guard my corpse and erase my ID from the Floating Ice City, right?"

"Haha, this..."

Domineering Heaven Blade didn't continue, so I assumed that he wasn't denying the accusation. On the other side, Domineering Knight God said, "Boss, don't hesitate anymore. Let's just destroy this chap, like how we destroyed Blazing Sun a few days ago. Humph, what top 10 player in the Player Ranking Board? Let's see if he could still be a player in the Player Ranking Board if we guard his corpse for one whole day and night!"

I froze, and immediately remembered. Two days ago, Xu Yang was indeed a player on the Player Ranking Board, but he suddenly disappeared. So it was all because of these people!

"Blazing Sun? Did he offend you guys?" I asked.

Domineering Knight God laughed coldly, "Blazing Sun, that fellow just can't see an opportunity when it was presented to him. He wasn't willing to join us, the God Destroyer Guild, and was instead loyal to some Ancient Sword Dream, a third-rate guild. Humph, since he couldn't understand his position, he could only die!"

Anger suddenly welled up in my heart. My eyes turned red with anger. Ancient Sword Dream, He Yi, those were the existences that I had missed day and night. How could I let it be ridiculed by others?

"Sha sha..."

Blades of grasses drifted about as I suddenly disappeared from my initial location. In the next moment, I was already right in front of Domineering Knight God, my Weeping Fireblade glowing with a crimson red colour. My [Undead Strength] were concentrated in my blades as I unleashed a normal attack on Domineering Knight God's chest armor. I followed with another normal attack, slashing across his neck!

"412 ! "

"447 ! "

The two attacks had aimed right at the opponent's weaknesses. Domineering Knight God's eyes went perfectly round as he died with his eyes still open, looking right at me. He completely never thought that I

would so brazenly attack him in front of Domineering Heaven Blade and the other Domineering Clan members.

Slowly pulling out my Weeping Fireblade that was drenched with blood, I said indifferently, "Ancient Sword Dream is not some third-rate guild. Go to hell!"

"Thump..."

When Domineering Knight God's corpse fell onto the grasses, Domineering Heaven Blade and the others finally returned to their senses. Immediately, Domineering War God charged towards me, roaring angrily. He yelled unyieldingly, "Scoundrel, how dare you kill my brother?!"

"Hu!"

Domineering War God leapt high up into the sky and unleashed a powerful attack [Sudden Kill], a level 30 Warrior's special skill. Other than having a powerful attack, it also guarantee a 1 second stun for the target!

I welcomed the opponent who was coming down to me from the air. Smirking, I moved my legs and drew a perfect arch, dodging the opponent's area of attack in an instant. Then, My Weeping Fireblade quickly shot two attacks. The first attack was [Vindicate], and not 0.5 second later, I unleashed the second attack, [Death Blade]!

"MISS!"

"1097 ! "

Domineering War God was completely dumbstruck, unable to believe what had happened. He had actually been so easily killed in an instant!

"Thump!"

Another corpse fell to the ground. The two expert players on the Player Ranking Board was killed by me in an instant.

At the same time, I felt pain from my arm and my back. To my surprise, I saw that my health had dropped to half!

"Di!"

System Announcement: Player Domineering Heaven Blade had used his skill [Towing Blade Beheader], causing a 279 point damage to you!

"Di!"

System Announcement: Player Domineering Heaven Blade had used his skill [Two Combo Beheader], causing a 189 and 201 point damage to you!

This is going to be the death of me! Domineering Heaven Blade, who was an expert player, had a sharp blade indeed. Even after using a rune-tier armor, I couldn't defend against his attack!

The worst thing was that there was even an arrow coming my way. It was Domineering Archer God's [Destroying Demon Arrow], a special skill that only a level 30 archer could have. It ignored 50% of the target's defense, a must-have skill when an archer was fighting against a warrior!

I slid my feet and quickly retreated. At the same time, I quickly took out level 2 health potion and drank it down, recovering 400 health immediately. Thank you, Lin Yi Xin, without your health potion, I would definitely die!

"Bang!"

[Destroying Demon Arrow] struck me at my chest, inflicting 227 damage to my health. This archer had completely managed to destroy my defense.

The four Domineering Clan players chased after me altogether. The hardest to handle was obviously Domineering Heaven Blade, who was leading right in front. This person, who was the number one rank in the Player Ranking Board, had a really sharp and powerful attack. I, who was fighting alone against so many enemies, would definitely not be able to win!

I fought, retreated, and finished a normal health potion before turning my body around and entered the forest behind me. I decided to look for an opportunity to execute [Earth Evasion]. This skill needed 1 second of casting time, and with the addition of my 0.5 seconds delay, I would need at least 1.5 seconds to execute it properly. If I couldn't manage to get 1.5 seconds, I would definitely have a bad ending.

Domineering Heaven Blade brandished his large blade and rushed over, ferociously roaring at the same time, "Fallen Hero, I have wasted my kindness on you! You had actually dared to kill my brothers right in front of me! I will definitely return this grudge!"

I smirked as I glanced at the cool down of [Vindicate]. There was still 15 seconds before the 60 seconds cool down was up. Humph, in 15 seconds, Domineering Heave Blade, let's see how I will pull you down from the treasured number one spot of the Player Ranking Board!

I continued to move my feet in a zigzag motion, so as to avoid the archer's attack. In , this fantasy game, long-distance attacks weren't as easy as aiming at a target. You would have to determine the target's location. Your attack would only be effective if you could attack the target at the correct location. It would be impossible for an arrow to hit a target in front when you shot the arrow to the back instead.

As a result, with my footwork, more than half of Domineering Archer God's arrow shot the trees instead. Furthermore, as long as he didn't use [Breaking Demon Arrow], I wouldn't need to be afraid of him with my defense.

Although Domineering Heaven Blade was a top-notch expert player, I made him dizzy with my whirls and turns. More than a few times, he had almost knocked against a tree chasing after me. Although his footwork and control might look extremely beautiful from an ordinary player's perspective, in my eyes, his linking techniques was still lacking. His standards was at least weaker than that of Lin Yi Xin's.

[Vindicate]'s cool down was almost up. I watched the time limit ending

"3!"

"2!"

"1!"

Cool down ends!

Abruptly, I turned and move my body in an S-shape. A sharp, cold gaze flashed across my expression as I unleashed two attacks on Domineering Heaven Blade with my Weeping Fireblade!

My [Vindicate] and [Death Blade] combo exploded like a storm, completely not giving a chance for my opponent to dodge!

"Hua!"

Domineering Heaven Blade summoned a wind shield that surrounded himself, a skill similar to my [Ghost Armor]. The skill that he summoned was called [Big Dipper's Qi Protection], a knight's level 30 special profession skill!

Unfortunately, [Big Dipper's Qi Protection] still could not block the godly attack after my [Vindicate]!

"MISS!"

“987 ! ”

Domineering Heave Blade gasped. A knight did not have a high health growth in the first place, so Domineering Heave Blade’s health was only around 600 points. How would he be able to withstand this attack?

“Thump!”

Domineering Heaven Blade, the boss of Domineering Clan and God Destroyer Guildmaster, finally collapsed to the ground, killed instantly by my sharp sword.

My wrath was actually initially caused by Domineering War God’s words — “Ancient Sword Dream, a third-rate guild.”

That was the name I yearned for day and night, a name that I would willingly use my life to protect with. Even if I would have to let go of this little life, I would never allow anyone to ridicule that name.

In reality, I had narrowly escaped death. Killing Domineering Heaven Blade exposed my body fully to the archer’s aim.

Domineering Archer God’s powerful [Breaking Demon Arrow] shot out towards me ferociously!

“Bang!”

"291 ! "

In that instant I was shot, I immediately drank a level 2 health potion. At the same time, my body was sent flying to the bushes nearby, like a kite with its string cut!

"Whoosh!"

Darkness shrouded me. I was extremely shocked. Turned out that there was a large hole behind the bushes. I was actually shot into this hole with Domineering Archer God's [Breaking Demon Arrow]!

"Bang!"

Falling heavily into the hole, I could only see a ray of light from the hole opening. This hole must be at least a hundred meters deep!

.....

"How is it? Did we kill him?" Someone asked.

Domineering Archer God replied, "He would probably die from falling into the hole. Let's go back and report to boss!"

"Alright. Dammit, that brat is really scary. He fought alone against so many of us, yet it seemed like an easy task for him. Humph, it's a pity, such a powerful expert was actually rendered useless by us!"

"Tsk, what do you mean by expert? Didn't he get shot down by my

arrow!"

"Haha, Brother Archer God can really shoot with precision. You are practically a reincarnation of Huang Zhong!"

(Shiro: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Huang_Zhong)

"....."

.....

Not long afterwards, the two people above left to report back to Domineering Heaven Blade.

I looked around in all directions, and realized that this hole was all made of earth. This was a naturally formed rock structure. There were holes in the walls of the rock, small but great in number. It seemed just like a — Wasp's Nest?!

I was immediately shocked to my core. This was a Wasp Forest; could this place be the Wasp's Nest?

I looked at the map, and my heart fell —

Queen Wasp's Nest!

Chapter 45 – Mysterious Wasp

It was a hidden map!

I was overjoyed; this was my first reaction when I discovered that I have entered into a BOSS monster's nest.

As expecting, the Queen Wasp had indeed lived in a secluded, dark place like this Queen Wasp's Nest.

Looking upwards, there was only a single ray of light shining from above. This hole was extremely deep, and it was also hidden within the thick bushes. It was all thanks to the Domineering Clan pursuing me here, otherwise I couldn't have possibly found such an obscure place.

My health automatically healed, and suddenly, a sound rung–

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, your skill, [Undead Regeneration] has levelled up to level 3!

Very good. This skill would keep getting experience when I lost health. I didn't think that it would rise to level 3 so quickly. If it's like this, since I could heal 0.3% of my maximum health every second, with a total of 750 HP, I would heal around 2.25 HP every second. This would be the skill that made me a real undead that would never die!

It was extremely clear that fast regeneration of health was one of the advantages of my profession.

Grasping my sword after my HP was full again, I went deeper into the Queen Wasp's Nest!

The two rocky sides wall was filled with small, countless holes. One could even see small wasp larvae wriggling inside these holes. The sight simply made my hair stand on its ends. All these larvae would turn into Wasps when they finished their incubation, and flew to the Wasp Forest to kill for preys. Right now, I was actually right inside their nest.

"Buzz..."

Suddenly, a familiar sound resounded from the from. A Wasp was coming over!

At the same time, two Poisonous Wasps on patrol flew over to me. I was deeply shocked. These Poisonous Wasps looked different from the normal Wasps outside. Their heads were big and round as a soccer ball, and they had poisonous whiskers, looking as if they were some ferocious tigers. In reality, their names were actually called Hornets, Lv. 37, an extremely high levelled poisonous wasp.

I grabbed my sword tight and didn't hesitate at all as I charged forward. The one who strikes first would gain more advantage!

My sword flashed as [Vindicate] drew a big MISS, but I followed through with an extremely powerful Level 3 [Death Blade]!

"1489 ! "

Oh my gosh, not even half of the Hornet's health was shaved off. This level 37 monster was simply too powerful!

"Buzz!"

Two sharp and loud echoing sounds resounded as the hornets immediately became aggressive towards me. My chest felt hot instantly. I had not only been poisoned, my health had been greatly reduced!

"189 ! "

"197 ! "

This was going to be the death of me! I must quickly end this battle!

My Weeping Fireblade was enveloped in a thick, crimson coloured as my Level 3 [Undead Strength] gave me an additional 15% attack on living organisms. My Crimson Guard Ring on my finger also increased 3% of the attack for darkness attributed players. "Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh." I continued to slash three more times. Every single slash caused more than 400 points, sharp beyond compare!

"447 ! "

"459 ! "

"451 ! "

The Hornets fill health should be around 3000 points, and after my whirlwind of attacks, it was immediately left with a crippling health. However, even in the brink of death it managed to shave 200 points of my health!

"Plop!"

I had to drink a level 2 health potion and regain 400 points of health. A normal health potion would not be able to withstand these attacks. Seems like the potions that Lin Yi Xin and Clearwater created were extremely useful. In the future, I should maintain a friendly relationship with them.

"Whoosh!"

With the thrust of my sword, the first Hornet finally died. Next, I carefully fought the other one, but it was obvious that I could kill it easily. With Level 2 Health Potion, normal health potion and Undead Regeneration, all different kinds of support, I could almost maintain 75% health most of the same time and killed the Level 37 Hornets easily.

"Plop!"

As my sword flashes, the second Hornet cried out miserably and died. It even dropped a Large Magic Stone. When I picked it up, I found that its quality was 91. That was a really high quality magic stone, it could probably be sold for 18 silver.

Looking at my experience, I was already level 32 at 97%. Killing the two

Hornets had increased my experience by 3%, it was simply very nice! Seems like I could level up once or twice if I train in this Queen Wasp's Nest today. Of course, it would be best if I could kill the BOSS. This was also a thought that I kept thinking in my mind. The BOSS's experience and item drop wouldn't be on the same level as the Hornets.

Filled with joy in my heart, I continued to move forward. Very quickly, I met the second Hornet group. Similar to the first one, they were also in pairs. I sacrificed 1 bottle of Level 2 Health Potion to finish them off. Furthermore, they dropped a Large Magic Stone with a quality of 88 this time. The price it could be sold off was 88 multiplied by 0.2, which equals to 17.6 silvers. Since the current market in gold was 1 gold = 100 RMB, this piece of magic stone was equivalent to 17.6RMB. I could buy a plate of cheap pork strips stir-fried with fish balls!

The Queen Wasp's Nest walled pathway became gloomier as I went deeper. After walking for a full thirty minutes and killed a few more Hornets, my experience had already surged to level 33 at 25%. At this time, the Player Ranking Board rankings had changed again. Domineering Heaven Blade was killed by my sword, helping Lin Yi Xin to clinch the first place again–

1. Wind Fantasy Lv. 35 Occupation: Radiant Ranger
2. Fallen Hero Lv. 33 Occupation: Undead Swordsman
3. Domineering Heaven Blade Lv. 32
4. Rainy Clouds Lv. 29 Occupation: Magic Knight

5. Red Iron Tablet Lv. 31 Occupation: Warrior

6. Domineering Knight God Lv. 31 Occupation: Magic Knight

7. Domineering Mage God Lv. 31 Occupation: Mage

8. Domineering Warrior God Lv. 31 Occupation: Warrior

9. Domineering Archer God Lv. 30 Occupation: Archer

10. Clearwater Lv. 30 Occupation: Archer

I wrongfully became the second rank. However, I secretly praised Lin Yi Xin in my heart. Where was she training in? How could she level up so fast? She level up twice in a blink of an eye, could it be that she killed some kind of BOSS monster?

After thinking about it for a while, I decided to put my thoughts aside. Levels wouldn't determine an individual's true strength anyway.

At this moment, there was a "di" sound. A message had come from Lin Yi Xin, "Heehee, Little Cheater, what are you doing?"

"Catching Wasps." I replied her with a grumbling tone.

Lin Yi Xin: "I'll let you see something good, but don't tell it to others, okay?"

"Okay, what is it?"

Very quickly, a pet's picture appeared on my chat window. It was actually a pet that Lin Yi Xin had caught —

[Flame Blade]

Level: 1

Attack: 10

Defense: 7

Health 10

Agility: 7

Growth—

Attack: ★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★☆

I was dumbstruck seeing this. This... wasn't this Flame Blade too powerful? The maximum BN value for an attribute was 20, making a total BN value of 80. This Flame Blade had actually scored a high 34 points at this beginning stage of the game. Especially during the early stages of this game, a normal pet's BN value was only around 15 points. Wasn't this Flame Blade too overpowering?

I was so envious that even my eyes had turned green. I replied, "What

did you want showing this to me..."

Lin Yi Xin should be laughing out loud on the other side. "Heehee, I just want to make you feel bad. If you feel bad, I'll feel good..."

"Damn you!"

I turned off my chat application. I really couldn't talk with this overbearing, beautiful girl anymore. If I continued to talk with her, I would probably throw up blood and die!

Seems like I had caused a scar on this girl's spirit when I cheated 15 gold out of her that time. She still couldn't let go of the shadow from that incident, haha!

I continued to level, and advanced deeper into the Queen Wasp's Nest.

Suddenly, a poisonous wasp flew by in front. It was a new type of wasp. It had a golden, translucent wings and a body glowing with a green light. It had sharp looking pincers that glowed with a cold light of poison, and its head was actually almost as big as a basketball. It's also obvious that it had a frightening amount of attack power.

[Reaper Wasp]

Level: 39

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Unfortunately my level was too low to see the monster's status. There was no other way, I could only lift up my sword and charge forward. Coming here was equivalent to courting death anyway, there was no reason for me to retreat.

"Cha!"

I unleashed [Vindicate] and [Death Blade] right at the Reaper Wasp's head, inflicting a large damage number –1578!

After levelling up, my attack had increased by 5 points. Seemed like my killing power had also increased greatly.

The Reaper Wasp's maximum health looked to be around 3300 points. My one attack had shaved off almost half of its health. After receiving its counter-attack once, I moved as fast as lightning and slashed at it multiple times. I succeeded in killing it without even using a level 2 health potion. This had saved me quite a few gold.

I saw that my experience increased by a huge margin. A level 39 monster really gave an extravagant amount of experience. This fast paced levelling speed really made me feel very happy.

I could imagine how many people were killing the Lv.20 something Wild Bears in the Floating Ice City. I, on the other hand, had arrived at this hidden BOSS map and was killing a Lv.39 Reaper Wasp instead. This was really the happy life~

I continued to move forward, and the fourth Reaper Wasp that I killed dropped a Large Magic Stone with 99 quality. Today's profits was definitely bountiful, I think I could earn a lot just by selling all these magic stones!

Right around this time, a "di" resounded. It was a message from Ghost Valley: "Boss Broken Spear, I'd like to ask you about something."

"Okay, just ask!"

"A small group from the Domineering Clan, three players, needed to kill a level 27 BOSS. They asked for Brother B's and my help. Before killing the BOSS, we have negotiated to divide the BOSS's experience equally amongst us. However just as the BOSS was about to die, the other three players had gone back on their words and forced us out of the party so that they could get all the experience to themselves. What do you think we should do?"

I couldn't help but laugh and replied, "They were the ones who broke the rules. Did you record your negotiations?"

"Yes!"

"It's good then. Before the BOSS was killed, quit the party and kill the BOSS to get the experience. Don't even give the item drops to them. If they were that good, we don't need their mercenary fees!"

"Alright, that was what I wanted to do too. It's good that you agreed!"

I thrust my sword hard at the Reaper Wasp in front of me. Humph, since the moment I set up the Crimson Mercenaries, I have decided that no matter what, I wouldn't let anyone bully us. There was a saying that "Wolves travelled miles to eat meat, while dogs travelled miles to eat shit.". Then Crimson Mercenaries were a wolf troop that had iron-like blood in our veins. If others were thinking of giving us shit on our mouth, they could continue to dream on.

Three hours passed, and I continued to kill countless Reaper Wasps. My experience had already rose to Level 33 75%. I had been cooped up inside this Queen Wasp's Nest for a full 5 hours, before finally arriving at the end of the map. The view in front of me suddenly became a wide panorama, the scenery looked like a palace hall.

Furthermore, the game music had also suddenly became more intense. It was obvious that this was the BOSS' domain!

I was extremely excited as I carried my sword and walked inside the Wasp Palace Hall. No matter how strong the Queen Wasp is, I would definitely kill it with my Weeping Fireblade. I swear it under my 13 Humanity Traits*!

(*Shiro: Some Chinese philosophy on traits that make a good human)

However, after going through a winding corridor and arriving at the only BOSS inside the Palace Hall, I immediately took back the oath that I made just a few moments ago. Whatever 13 Humanity Traits was thrown to the wind!

In the Palace Hall, a 40 cm long poisonous wasp that was dark green in colour was floating around. Its transparent wings looked as hard as steel,

and its whole body was covered with a hard outer shell that shone with glistening gleam. Furthermore, the needle on its bottom looked extremely sharp. It simply freeze one over just by looking at it!

[Mysterious Wasp] (B-medium BOSS)

Description: Mysterious Wasp is a rarely seen poisonous wasp that lived in Heaven's End Continent. It was once said that it was the pet of a God. It own an extremely high attack and defense power. An adult Mysterious Wasp is a bloodthirsty and brutal wasp, and was considered a symbol of death in the Heaven's End Continent.

B-levelled BOSS, extremely strong attack and defense power? All these were not important to me. My eyes immediately ignored all these description and was instead glued on top of the words on top of the Mysterious Wasp —

[Mysterious Wasp]

Level: 1

Chapter 46 – Super Mysterious Wasp

“Buzz!”

My mind went completely blank immediately!

This... How could this Mysterious Wasp BOSS monster be a level 1 monster? The system in had never set a level 1 BOSS before. Could it be that this level 1 BOSS could be sealed and became a player's pet?

If that was true, then this Mysterious Wasp's attributes would probably be extremely powerful!

I calmed the surge of excitement in my heart and took deep breaths.

Mysterious Wasp! Level 1 Mysterious Wasp! These words keep revolving in my mind.

My first step was to release the trash Wasp with a BN value of 17.

“Shua!”

Taking out my sealing cards, I gritted my teeth as I prepared myself to charge forward. A Level 1 BOSS wouldn't have a very high attack, so my safety was guaranteed.

It was just that I was worried about the 5 tries sealing limit. If a level 1

pet failed to be sealed within 5 tries, it would level up to level 2. Furthermore, the success rate of sealing a level 1 BOSS monster would probably be extremely low. I was not even a Beastmaster and I didn't have a strong success rate of sealing. What if all tries failed and the Mysterious Wasp levelled up to level 2? Wouldn't I be so regretful that I would throw up all my internal organs then?

At that moment, I was right in the middle of a forkroad. I was worried no matter if I advance or retreat. However, I have no other choice. I could only harden my guts and tried to seal this monster!

"Hua!"

I threw the sealing card into the air, and it immediately turned into a green sealing pattern on top of that Mysterious Wasp's head. The sealing pattern became smaller and smaller, releasing a mysterious energy to pull the Mysterious Wasp in.

I watched the progress bar of the sealing process, my heart almost jumping to my throat. However, the System Announcement was kind enough to stop my worries after a short while. Not even two seconds afterwards, a "ding" resounded —

System Announcement: Sealing failed. You have 14 more sealing tries!

.....

I was slightly overjoyed. 14 tries? BOSS monsters were indeed different. If it was 14 tries, then my chances of sealing it successfully would be

quite big!

I continued to take out the second sealing card. Fortunately I had bought a lot, unlike other beastmasters who were so stingy and only brought 10 cards with them every time they hunt. If they met this level 1 BOSS monster, they would probably die of regret.

"Hua!"

The sealing card was thrown into the air once again, revolving around the Mysterious Wasp's head.

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Sealing failed. You have 13 more sealing tries!

Dammit! I failed again! Let's try again!

And thus, I continued to throw my sealing cards, and the Mysterious Wasp continued to flap its wings, seeming like it had not noticed me, an Undead who came with a bad intention.

The System Announcement bell continued to ring on my ear as my heart started to break apart to pieces–

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Sealing failed. You have 12 more sealing tries!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Sealing failed. You have 11 more sealing tries!

.....

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Sealing failed. You have 3 more sealing tries!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Sealing failed. You have 2 more sealing tries!

.....

In a blink of an eye, I had failed all 14 tries. Now I was only left with my last chance!

I held my sealing card tight as tears drenched my whole face. I raised my sealing card and kissed it on my lips as I mumbled, "He Yi... Boss, lend me your powers!"

"Hua!"

The sealing card turned into a hexagonal pattern once again, flying towards the Mysterious Wasp. Suddenly, the Mysterious Wasp's body slowly turned smaller and smaller, and in a blink of an eye, it entered into the sealing pattern. However, it seemed to let out a sharp, resisting cry and tried to fly out of the seal with all of its strength. Alas, the sealing force continued to pull the Mysterious Wasp in, and it finally re-entered the sealing pattern. This continued for multiple times, and finally, on the fifth time, the Mysterious Wasp was engulfed into the magic sealing pattern, never to escape again!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have successfully tamed Mysterious Wasp (BOSS)!

.....

Surprise! Ecstasy! Delight!

Not a single word could describe my current feelings. It was that kind of feeling you get when you have been chasing after your dream girl for many years, and suddenly one day she came to you and said, "Idiot, I have actually been in love with you since very long time ago..."

Checking my pet window, the Mysterious Wasp appeared in my only pet slot. I immediately summoned it out, and a powerful status appeared before my eyes. My heart was immediately so exited that it almost stopped —

[Mysterious Wasp]

Level: 1

Attack: 18

Defense: 15

Health: 17

Agility: 19

Growth —

Attack: ★★★★★★

Defense: ★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★

Agility: ★★★★★★☆

.....

My mind went blank.

6 stars attack growth? 5.5 stars agility growth?

What the hell, this Mysterious Wasp was simply too overpowering!

Most importantly was that powerful initial stats value, 69 points! Compared to this, Lin Yi Xin's Flame Blade was simply nothing!

I was thoroughly overjoyed. Not only was this BOSS pet Mysterious

Wasp had a high growth rate, its initial value was also extremely powerful. Seemed like all the 24 years of luck that I have missed my whole life suddenly burst out today!

I quickly open my friends list and found that Wind Fantasy was still online. Thus, I immediately sent her a message, "Beauty Lin, do you want to see something good?"

After a few seconds, Lin Yi Xin replied, "What is it? Send it over."

"Okay."

I immediately sent the Mysterious Wasp's picture and attributes over to Lin Yi Xin.

Lin Yi Xin didn't reply for quite a few minutes. Finally, after around five minutes, she replied with a message, "Lu Chen, I want to kill someone..."

I laughed madly and replied, "Hahahah, come and kill me then! Bite me!"

Lin Yi Xin: "AAARRGHHHH!"

It was obvious that the little beauty had already stormed off.

I was felt extremely refreshed in my heart. Since there was nothing else profitable in this Queen Wasp's Nest, I took my Mysterious Wasp out to train. Although it was a BOSS monster, it would be useless if its level

stayed at 1. I should quickly get it to my level, then I would be like a tiger with wings when I PK other players in the future.

I took out a city return scroll and crushed it to pieces. "Shua!" I immediately returned to the Floating Ice City. It was night, but there was a huge crowd of people.

I checked that my hunger was 40 points, it was time for me to replenish my hunger.

Carrying my sword, I stepped out of the Floating Ice City and went straight to the Frozen Mound. A lot of days had passed in-game, I wonder how the little loli Xin Ran is nowadays.

On the way, I used my Weeping Fireblade to cut everything blocking my path. I also named my new pet, the Mysterious Wasp, "Wind Fantasy". This name sounded so nice. I wonder how Lin Yi Xin would react when she saw this Mysterious Wasp's name.

I ordered the Mysterious Wasp to only follow me but not take part in battles. It received experience all along the journey, and when we arrived at the Frozen Mound, the Mysterious Wasp had already levelled up to level 11. All of its attributes had increased greatly —

[Mysterious Wasp]

Level: 11

Attack: 128

Defense: 85

Health: 317

Agility: 169

.....

Based on this initial assessment and Mysterious Wasp's growth rate, it would gain 10 points of attack, 7 points of defense, 30 points of health and 15 points of agility with each level. This was really a powerful growth rate. If it levelled up to level 33, its attributes would definitely be much greater than mine!

However, players could depend on equipments to increase their attributes, this was their natural advantage. Pets, on the other hand, had a fixed growth rate. If I wore a godly set of equipment, killing a Mysterious Wasp on the same level wouldn't be a difficult thing to do.

Arriving at Frozen Mound, I found my Teacher — Undead Swordmaster Su Lun. This towering, majestic skeleton stared at me straight and smiled, "Young undead, your speed of growth never ceased to amaze me. This is really great, we have more comrades and more power to stop those humans and abominable Dark Undeads who always come to invade us."

As he said that, he gestured with his hands and said, "In the forest north of Frozen Mound a bunch of horrible Hell Wind Wolves had appeared. These bunch of vicious wolf pack were starving, not only had they eaten human beings, they did not even let us, undeads, off. In order to discipline them, young undead, kill 400 Hell Wind Wolves for me, and bring me 100 of their Wind Wolves' tooth!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Would you like to accept [Hell Wind Wolves] quest?

Accept!

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: You have accepted [Hell Wind Wolves]! (Quest Level: D-medium)

Quest Description: Go to the Fairy Forest north of Frozen Mound, kill 400 Hell Wind Wolves, get 100 Hell Wind Teeths and give it to the Undead Swordsman Su Lun. You would then receive great rewards!

.....

I then prepared to set off to kill Hell Wind Wolves!

After I repaired my equipment and bought some health potions, I exited the town.

First, I went to the Mushroom Forest, where I saw the cute little loli Xin ran wearing a long, azure skirt. She carried a basket as she gathered mushrooms. Seemed like she would be here through all four seasons.

Seeing me coming, Xin Ran ran over to me excitedly and smiled, "Brother, you have finally come. Xin Ran waited for many days, I even thought that you have disappeared!"

I smiled, "Why would I?"

Xin Ran took out an oat bread from her robe and smiled, "Here, for you!"

I received it and gained 50 points of satisfaction after eating it. Seems like as my level got higher, my satisfaction for food also went up.

I took out a piece of Large Magic Stone from my inventory, gave it to Xin Ran and told her to live her life happily. Xin Ran was extremely happy. After chatting for a while with me, knowing that I was very busy, she went away to pick mushrooms alone again.

I bidden farewell to Xin Ran and continued my way to the Fairy Forest.

Fairy Forest was located near the edge of Frozen Forest in Floating Ice City. It was a silent and quiet forest. Legends said that there angels had descended here before, which is why it was named Fairy Forest. However, after many years had passed and the Dark Undead Alliance had devastated the earth, angels and deities had not been seen for a long time. In order to resist the invading Dark Undeads, the others could only rely on their own weapons.

As for me, I was neither a Dark Undead nor human, I belonged to the neutral camp of Undeads. I was a healthy and strong Undead Swordsman that was growing stronger every single day!

.....

The Fairy Forest was a deserted place.

My Weeping Fireblade glowed brightly as I stepped into the forest. I cautiously watched both sides of the pathway I was walking on, feeling as if something was following me very closely.

Night had fallen, and as the cold wind blew, the leaves on the trees growing at both sides of the pathway I was walking on rustled softly.

I opened my map. The area further down had been covered in red, it seemed like the place where Hell Wind Wolves gathered was close.

I took a deep breath, raised my sword and stepped into the forest. Right away, I smelled a whiff of fishy smell as a large wolf with white fur suddenly appeared in front of me and charged forward. It opened its mouth that was filled with dripping saliva widely, its sharp teeth glistening in light.

"Pu Chi!"

I was unexpectedly bitten, losing 287 health immediately. This Wind Wolf's attack power was really high!

I turned around and counter-attacked, powerful like thunder. My sword flashed as a big MISS appeared, followed by a [Death Blade] from my [Vindicate] and [Death Blade] combo!

"1754 ! "

A high damage number flew out. My attack was simply too powerful; that Wind Wolf gave a miserable howl as it dropped to the ground from the impact of the attack. It had already lost more than half of its health!

Chapter 47 – Wind Wolf Leg Guard

I charged forward, and very naturally, I shot out three normal attacks. The first attack was a pierce, the second was a slash, and the third was a beheading. With these three attack combos, every single sword dealt a deadly damage on the Wind Wolf's body. It didn't even have a chance for a counterattack!

I was secretly overjoyed. It was so easy to hunt right now, it was obvious that my reaction delay had decreased even more, seemed like it was not even 0.5 seconds now. This was a game player expert's awareness, after training and using the same weapon for a long time, you would yield an unimaginable result. In reality, I was still a noob, but in the field of sword techniques in game, I am definitely one of the greatest. About that, I was actually just trash who was only theorizing without taking action...

"Awoo!"

The Wind Wolf miserably fell to the ground and transformed into a corpse with a great amount of experience.

I walked forward and observed closely. A Level 38 Wind Wolf. Its level was extremely high, no wonder it could cause me such a high damage. Right now, I was equipped with a Cyan Fire Cloak, Spirit Wind Cloud Armor and Beast Face Wind Cloud Helmet. All these are extremely high quality equipments. Even then, that Wind Wolf could still inflict 300 damage to my health. If a warrior with normal equipments came here, it seemed like he would be killed with one bite.

I opened my palms and chanted a little on the Wind Wolf's corpse,

"[Corpse Pillage]!"

"Shua!"

After a glow of light, a white-coloured, beautiful Wolf skin appeared in my hands. This was the Wind Wolf Fur, which was especially snow white. It was definitely one of the best material for making of fur products, such as CUUCI, LV all those. Of course, in this game, I couldn't make a business out of all these products, but the Tailors should be able to create a good leather armor with this fur.

[Hell Wind Wolf's Fur (Quality: 81): Level 3 leather material. Can be made into a leather armour.

Indeed, this fur was actually a level 3 leather material. I'm going to gain a huge profit again this time!

Tsk tsk, although [Corpse Pillage] looked like a weak skill, it was definitely my trump card for making money in this early stage of the game. Especially when I was killing wild beasts and skinning them, it was an undefeatable skill!

After storing my Wind Wolf Fur away, I continued to move forward.

In front of my shoulders, after eating the huge experience bonus from the Wind Wolf, my Mysterious Wasp suddenly rose to level 11 at 15% experience. Seems like if I were to kill these Wind Wolves for the whole night, the Mysterious Wasp should be able to rise to around level 20 and could basically support my battles already. At that time, my fighting

ability would definitely increase by a lot!

I then extended my hands and commanded, "Rise up, Undead!"

"Cackle!"

The Hell Wind Wolf's body that had already underwent [Corpse Pillage] trembled a little. Very quickly, its bones stuck out from its body, and a Bone Wind Wolf that was as tall as half a person's size appeared in front of me —

[Hell Wind Wolf] (Servant)

Level: 30

Attack: 150-225

Defense: 150

Health: 1000

.....

I was pleasantly surprised, after my [Summon Undead] ability rose to Level 3, its effects had become sharper than before. My Undead slave had reached level 30, and furthermore, this Wind Wolf's attack was not bad at all. It was a little bit worse off compared to me. However, its defense and health was all higher than me. This slave was definitely a good existence of a meat shield!

"Haha, let's go now, Fantasy, Wind Wolf!"

Bringing along my Mysterious Wasp and Bone Wolf, I continued to thread forward. This time, I was fully confident of my abilities. With such a party like mine, I would be okay even if I met two Wind Wolves at the same time!

As I was thinking about this, two Wind Wolves had actually really appeared in front of me. I immediately ordered my Bone Wolf to deal with one with the support of the Mysterious Wasp, while I fought against the other one alone!

"[Vindicate]!"

"[Death Blade]!"

"Shua shua shua..."

Cleanly executing 5 slashes on the first Wind Wolf and immediately killing it, I turned around to see how my pets fared. I couldn't help but be elated. The Bone Wolf was biting its previous race while the Mysterious Wasp was flying in the air as it suddenly shot forward, penetrating the Wind Wolf's neck with the sharp needle on its bottom.

"Pu Chi!"

"117 ! "

Tsk tsk, its attack was indeed very high!

My confidence grew. I could already imagine myself getting stronger in the future!

I charged forward and defeated the Wind Wolf with two slashes and executed [Corpse Pillage] on it again. This time, I received 2 freshly skinned fur in my hands. Then, I looked at the Bone Wolf and realized that its health was more or less depleted. Hence, I finished him and summoned another one again. Another beautiful Bone Skeleton appeared again. However, if I continued this way, my mp consumption will be much greater. [Summon Undead] required around 50 mp, this was an even greater consumption compared to magicians' skills.

However, luckily I brought some Green Pepper Meat Rice Balls with me, which could heal my mp fully. In any case, this was something that I produced on my own, I didn't have to be such a miser about it. Hence, my levelling became even more smooth-sailing.

It seemed like the Hell Wind Wolves had dominated the Fairy Forest, they were everywhere. As for me, I had a great time killing them. Not only did the Hell Wind Wolves gave a lot of experience, its drop rate was even extravagant. A Magic Stone would drop for every ten wolves, give or take. If this continued, with my level superiority, I could make a living simply by just selling stones!

With two undeads and one human in Crimson Mercenaries who are like-minded and united, what more would Crimson Mercenaries need?

Money! If we couldn't earn money, we, the three Crimson Mercenaries pioneer would probably die of starvation.

.....

As I continued to level on my own alone, the pillar of levelling up light continued to shine down time and time again as my Mysterious Wasp continued to level up. Four hours passed in a blink of an eye. I killed to the point that I was perspiring from head to toe. I had already managed to acquire the quest requirements for the number of Wind Wolves killed and the number of Wolf's Tooth collected, but in order to get more Wind Wolf's Fur, I continued to kill. Today I have steeled my heart, I wouldn't go back to Frozen Mound before levelling up to level 35!

As I was killing happily, suddenly, a "di" resounded —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Player Mu Rong Ming Yue wants to be your friend. Accept or Reject?

.....

I was frozen on the spot. Did Mu Rong Ming Yue recognized me? Or maybe something had happened?

Looking at the time, it was already 9 am in the morning. Logically speaking, Ming Yue big sis had immediately searched for me the moment she logged on. Why did she do that?

After thinking for a moment, I accepted it. If I rejected it, with Mu Rong big sis' wit, she would definitely sense something wrong!

"Di!"

She sent me a message: "Fallen Hero, can I ask you a question?"

"Yeah."

"Are you Fallen Dust?"

"No."

"Oh..."

"Is there anything else?"

"Yes!"

Mu Rong Ming Yue replied, "I heard that you had created a mercenary guild with Ghost Valley. Just nice, my friend and I had just received a quest to kill a level 32 BOSS. If you had some time... could you help us? The mercenary fees could be negotiated, how about 10 gold?"

I immediately replied, "A level 32 BOSS? No problem. You guys can wait at the Floating Ice City East Gate Bridge for a while, I will immediately bring some people over!"

"Alright!"

.....

I patted my chest and force my thumping heart to calm down. That friend that Mu Rong Ming Yue said must be Blazing Sun. This time, I definitely must not make a mistake, otherwise He Yi would be able to find me. With my state right now who was neither person nor ghost both in reality and in game, how could I meet her?

Furthermore, I had also secretly decided one matter. In this life, I'm afraid I wouldn't be able to return to Ancient Sword Dream anymore. Then, I'll use Crimson Mercenaries' reputation to protect Ancient Sword Dream, protecting He Yi from the dark, protecting both of our dreams.

"Slash!"

My sharp sword slashed down and beheaded a wolf's head.

"Shua!"

I had successfully risen to level 35. However, my ranking in Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board actually fell to the third rank. The first was the level 36 Lin Yi Xin, while the second one was Domineering Heaven Blade that I have killed and lost one level. This fellow must have had help in levelling from others. His levelling speed was simply too fast!

I ran back to Frozen Mound quickly and met with my Instructor, Su Lin. After submitting the quest items to him, Su Lin immediately laughed out loud, "Good job, Little Skeleton! I have totally seen your abilities in a

whole new light. Come and receive your reward!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have completed the quest [Hell Wind Wolves] and received 7200 exp, 120 fame and quest reward: [Wind Wolf Leg Guard]!

.....

Wind Wolf Leg Guard?

I was pleasantly surprised. Su Lun's rewards were really extravagant. After killing Wind Wolves for 4 hours, even after getting more than 400 Wind Wolf's Fur, I had not gotten any equipment drops. Who would think that I would luckily get an equipment as a quest reward!

I opened my inventory and found a dark green leg guard quietly lying on the corner —

[Wind Wolf Leg Guard] (Rune-tier equipment)

Defense: 32

Agility: +7

Required Level: 35

It was actually a rune-tier equipment! It was really shocking, its defense was a strong 32 points and it even added 7 points on agility. Although it neither added to my strength nor stamina, but having it add to agility

was also not that bad. A high agility would allow players to execute finer attacks during battles!

As I wore my Wind Wolf Leg Guard that replaced my [Bear Leather Leg Guard], my defense increased by a huge amount of 25 points, amounting to 165 points. Such a defense was indeed extremely powerful at this present stage of the game.

Looking at the equipments on my body, I thought that it was not bad at all. It was extremely majestic, fit for a king —

ID: Fallen Hero

Occupation: Undead Swordsman (Bronze-ranked Swordsman)

Level: 35

Health: 780

Attack: 149-273

Defense: 165

Magic Defense: 0

Fame: 514

Luck: 0

[Weeping Fireblade] (Bronze-tier weapon)

Attack: 25-40

Strength: +8

Required Level: 25

[Beast Face Wind Cloud Helmet] (Rune-tier equipment)

Defense: 28

Strength: +7

Required Level: 30

[Spirit Wind Cloud Armor] (Rune-tier equipment)

Defense: 48

Stamina: +11

Additional Effect: Increase user's physical attacks by 2%

Required Level: 32

[Cyan Fire Cloak] (Bronze-tier equipment)

Defense: 22

Stamina: +7

Additional Attribute: Increases the wearer's evasion by 0.5%.

Required Level: 25

[Black Wrist Guard] (Black-Tier Equipment)

Defense: 8

Strength: +2

Required level: 10

[Porcupine's Boots] (Black-tier)

Defense: 12

Stamina: +3

Required Level: 10

[Wind Wolf Leg Guard] (Rune-tier equipment)

Defense: 32

Agility: +7

Required Level: 35

[Crimson Guard Ring] (rune-tier)

Strength: +18

Additional Attribute: Increase the attack of Dark-attribute players by 3%

Required level: 30

Taking a few seconds to be thankful, I then sent a message to both Ghost Valley and Du Shi San, " Go to Floating Ice City East Gate Bridge, we have a new mission!"

After repairing my equipment and saved 2 gold in my bank, I carried my sword as I walked out of Frozen Mound towards the Floating Ice City. In any case, Ghost Valley and Du Shi San would probably only arrive after half an hour.

The Frozen Forest had become a popular training ground. I walked along the edge of the forest. The red-coloured name on top of my head was simply too obvious. As a strong Undead Swordsman, I haven't been recognised by the Undead Alliance, nor am I received by the Silver Moon Alliance. Hence, everyone who saw me would see my name coloured in red.

Chapter 48 – Unparalleled

I ran straight towards the Floating Ice City. There were quite a few players teaming up as a party outside the city. When I came, a lot of people started to raise their eyebrows at me. It was obvious that a few people had wanted to attack me, so I displayed my name clearly. Indeed, the name 'Fallen Hero' was extremely intimidating. As the third ranked player in the Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board, a lot of people who had wanted to kill me, who had a red name, flinched back.

Arriving at the Floating Ice City East Gate Bridge, I saw Xu Yang and Mu Rong Ming Yue who had already waited for a long time at a far distance. Xu Yang still wore the same heroic looking armor and carried the same sword, while Mu Rong Ming Yue had changed into a white-coloured robe. She looked pure and white like snow, however, the sultry smile on her expression and impressive-looking body had destroyed her pure image. Anyone with discerning eyes would be able to tell with one look that this girl was extremely difficult to deal with. It would be better not to provoke her.

.....

"He's here. Fallen Hero Brother!" Xu Yang smiled as he welcomed me.

I nodded lightly and replied with the coarse voice of an Undead, "I still have two comrades coming. Please wait a few more minutes, they would arrive in a few moments!"

"Alright!"

Xu Yang's gaze measured my equipments up and down, before he sighed, "Fallen Hero Brother, your armor... why did it glow so differently from others? What tier is that? It couldn't be bronze-tier or iron-tier, right?"

I chuckled and answered without trying to conceal anything, "Yeah, it's rune-tier. Spirit Wind Cloud Armour, 48 defense and +11 strength. Not bad right?"

Xu Yang nodded, "Haha, it's really OP!"

When I told him my equipment's attributes truthfully, I would be able to gain his trust. Furthermore, this was Xu Yang. I wouldn't be afraid of him seeing me in the wrong way as Xu Yang was not that kind of person. In my memory, my impression towards this sincere and loyal figure was only: first, he was extremely outspoken and straightforward. Second, he was loyal towards He Yi. With regards to this second point, he was similar to me. Even up until the end, we didn't give up on He Yi and Ancient Sword Dream.

At this moment, Mu Rong Ming Yue walked closer and welcomed me. Suddenly, the corners of her mouth curved up as she revealed a meaningful smile that I couldn't see through. She spoke lightly, "Fallen Hero, I heard that you destroyed the [God Destroyer] guild's Domineering Clan in the Poison Wasp Forest, is that true?"

I nodded without replying.

Mu Rong Ming Yue continued, "Ah, how did you have the courage to fight against 5 expert players from the Player Ranking Board?"

I couldn't help but smile, my voice was coarse as I said, "Actually, to fight against the Domineering Clan, those Player Ranking Board experts, you would need more than just courage."

"Oh? What else would you need?" Mu Rong Ming Yue smiled and asked.

I replied in a low voice, "Lines... Everyone will have their own lines and boundaries. The Domineering Clan had crossed my line, so even if I have to fight them to death, I would definitely not let them off."

"Oh?"

Mu Rong Ming Yue chuckled softly but didn't ask further. Instead, she turned around and asked Xu Yang, "Xu Yang, I remembered that your corpse was guarded by the Domineering Clan for one whole day and night. If Fallen Hero had really slaughtered the Domineering Clan, wouldn't that meant he had helped you to take revenge on them?"

Xu Yang laughed loudly, "Thank you, Fallen Hero Brother!"

I replied straightforwardly, "That thanks wasn't sincere at all! We are the pioneers of the Crimson Mercenaries who put money above everything else. Rather than thanking me with your mouth, why don't you thank me with your gold!"

Mu Rong Ming Yue chuckled again as she took out a dazzling gold coin from her robes and said, "Here you are. Are you willing to take it?"

I reached my bony hands out and immediately caught the gold in my grasp. Hugging the piece of gold tight in my hands, I smiled slightly, "If Mu Rong beauty is willing to give it to me, of course I am willing to receive it!"

Mu Rong Ming Yue froze and stared at me blankly, "I really can't understand you..."

I laughed. It's good if you can't understand me, I am most worried about you seeing through me. If that really happened, I really could not hide my identity anymore.

One question kept nagging in my mind, and I have thought to ask her a thousand times, or even ten thousand times, 'Ming Yue, He Yi... Boss, has she entered the game yet?'

However, I couldn't ask her. If I ever asked this question, the troubles and consequences that came after it was something I wouldn't be able to take.

Alas, Xu Yang had actually helped me to ask the question, "Ming Yue, didn't Boss say she will enter the game today? When is she coming online exactly?"

Ming Yue laughed lightly, "What are you so anxious about? She had some meetings to attend during the day, so she only has time to go online around 8 pm. It's okay, she would also still be at Level 0 when she comes online, and she would still be in the newbie village. We'll look for her later and help her to level so that she could quickly rise to level 10

and be able to go to Floating Ice City!"

"Okay!"

Xu Yang propped his sword on his shoulders and laughed out, "I'm dying of anticipation. Boss finally joined . I finally feel like I have found my pillar. I'm super charged now!"

Mu Rong Ming Yue's eyes dropped a little as she said with teary eyes, "It was a pity that Lian Xin went to study overseas, and Lu Chen... Aih, who would know that Ancient Sword Dream will end up this way..."

As she said that, Mu Rong Ming Yue glanced at me secretly.

I immediately turned around and observed the water under the bridge. Gritting my teeth, I started reminiscing about what happened at back then in my mind. He Yi's mesmerizing smiling face had said to the four of us, "Do you know why I named our guild 'Ancient Sword Dream'? I meant for us to use our lives to protect our dreams and battle spirit!"

Dream and battle spirit...

Looking at how Xu Yang and I had faced those continuous bloody slaughters and various traps for more than a year, seems like we had definitely fulfilled the 'battle spirit' part. However, my dreams were shattered by the God of War, Chaos Illumination, in the end.

Clasping my fist tightly, I swore in my heart. If Chaos Illumination created a Illumination Dragon Guild in , in the future not far from now, I

would definitely return all the pain and sufferings multiple fold back to him!

.....

After a few minutes, two other people came towards us. It was naturally Du Shi San and the red-named Ghost Valley.

Xu Yang was a little bit taken aback as he laughed, "Is the Crimson Mercenaries' trademark red-named players?"

Ghost Valley laughed sinisterly and said, "Burly guy, your flesh must be very hard and difficult to be chewed..."

Xu Yang raised his sword and said, "Sorry that I'm not to your taste!"

Du Shi San and I started laughing out loud. Mu Rong Ming Yue then said, "Let's go off to work now. That BOSS is located at a low mountain in Frozen Forest. Let's hurry there now that there are not that many people there!"

"Yeah!"

The five of us set out from Floating Ice City. Xu Yang then said, "There are four close combat players in the party... Actually, we should bring a tactician so that we can have a [Boost Morale] and [Metal Soldiers] buff..."

I shook my head, "There's no need to. I don't think a 5% addition to

attack power is really needed. We can all attack together and quickly end that BOSS!"

"Alright!"

Entering the Frozen Forest, the five of us became a small party. Furthermore, it was a strong party. Ghost Valley had already risen to level 30 and learnt the Undead Knight's special abilities, so he should be much stronger now. On the other hand, Xu Yang was also strength-based warrior. Mu Rong Ming Yue's equipment was also not that bad, so her healing power should be quite sufficient.

When we arrived outside the valley, we found that there were quite a few players training there already. Xu Yang was immediately worried as he said, "Let's go quickly, the BOSS is just right in front. We shouldn't let anyone steal it!"

I nodded and pulled out my Weeping Fireblade as I hurried forward. Ghost Valley and Du Shi San also followed me from behind, the three of us forming a triangle as we charged forward.

"We are here!"

In the forest, a Treant BOSS that was wielding a lance appeared, its blood-red eyes looking at us, the bunch of invaders.

Xu Yang was greatly rejoiced, "Not bad, those few people have not found the BOSS yet, otherwise we would really suffer a great loss."

I glanced at Ghost Valley and said, "Let's start!"

Ghost Valley rushed forward like lightning, his spear moving at a crazy speed as he pierced the BOSS three times continuously!

"157 ! "

"176 ! "

"159 ! "

In an instant, he drained more than 500 points of the BOSS' health. Xu Yang immediately opened his eyes wide as he mumbled, "You are so strong, Ghost Valley!"

This was [Undead Combo Hit], an Undead Knight's special skill. It attacked the enemy three times continuously, and every attack was equivalent to 50% of Ghost Valley's normal attacks' damage. As the skill levelled up, its damaging power would also increase greatly.

The Treant was a plant-type monster and had a tree-like body. Its arms were extremely powerful and it was able to swing its vine to a great distance. It belonged to a long-ranged monster that had a high attack, and this boss was also a well-known figure amongst Treants. It was level 32, so it was enough to pose as a life-threatening danger for us players that were below level 40.

Du Shi San also picked up his weapon and charged forward, executing [Heavy Slash], shaving off around 200 points from the BOSS' health. It was

obvious that he was severely lacking compared to Ghost Valley.

I flew forward quickly and swung my sword. My sword flashed past again as I delivered another blow. Green light enveloped my sword as [Death Blade] came coming down slicing the winds!

"MISS ! "

"1500 ! "

The first attack that MISSED made Mu Rong Ming Yue gape. It was obvious that she did not expect the top three players in the Player Ranking Board to miss his attack. However, the second attack that causes a crazy high 1500 point damage made Mu Rong Ming Yue's chin drop down even more. It was obvious that she never thought that someone could actually cause that much damage.

Xu Yang roared loudly as he slashed at the BOSS' body and unleashed a level 30 warrior's skill, [Sudden Kill]. This attack had a chance to stun his opponents!

By chance, Xu Yang's attack had caused the BOSS to be stunned, so Ghost Valley and I had taken advantage of this and attacked it continuously. It had not been even half a minute and the BOSS' health had already been reduced to half.

Mu Rong Ming Yue raised her magic staff and continuously rained down ray of healing lights upon us to fill our health back to the maximum. It had been a long time since I had last seen her, but Mu Rong

Sis was still as efficient in healing as before!

The BOSS killing went very smoothly. But just as it was about to die, a group of people suddenly appeared behind us!

"It's them again!"

Ghost Valley gritted his teeth. The uninvited guest turned out to be the Shadow Clan, our old enemies!

At normal times, Ghost Valley and I wouldn't even bat an eyelid at these small fries. But we were fighting a BOSS now, if they disrupt our tempo, the one dying might be us ourselves.

Mu Rong Ming Yue was extremely worried, "What do we do?"

.....

I pushed the Treant away with one strike and shouted, "Little Ghost, Shi San, continue to fight and defeat this BOSS, leave these people to me!"

"But, there are almost a dozen of them..." Ghost Valley was a little hesitant. However, this brat wasn't actually worrying about me, it's just that his bloodthirsty spirit couldn't calm down after seeing that there was going to be a PK involved.

I carried my Weeping Fireblade, turned around and walked towards the Shadow Clan members. Behind me, my Cyan Fire Cloak waved in the

wind. My expression was grave and stern, making me look like an approaching Death Reaper.

"Humph, watch how unparalleled I am!"

I smirked, full of disdain, as I glared at the Shadow Clan's members.

Chapter 49 – Chanel

Shadow Maple charged forward, brandishing his sword as dense, fire-red colour enveloped his blade. It was the warrior's level 30 skill – [Sudden Kill]!

I met his attack head and withstood it with my armor. On the other hand, I swung Weeping Fireblade to his back and drew a beautiful arch!

"Bang!"

My blade hit the back of Shadow Maple's head accurately. As a result of attacking his weak point, I had caused a 421 damage!

When Shadow Maple was startled by my attack, I had already turned around and quickly pierced my sword into his chest, fast as lightning. With a 'Pu Chi' sound, blood splurted out and this Shadow Clan's master had already been instantly killed under my sword. His body fell slowly to the ground, turning into a corpse that awaits resurrection.

Seeing this, Shadow Volcano became enraged and brandished his sword as he charged over. Brilliant light enveloped his blade, seemed like he had used a knight's level 20 skill – [Towing Blade Beheader]!

"Sha..."

Dusts shifted beneath my feet as I leapt a few steps backwards. Shadow Volcano missed his initial judgement of my position, and he was at once

at a dilemma on whether he should unleash his attack. If he unleashed it, he would definitely MISSED. His whole body froze in an instant.

I wanted to laugh when I watched him. This guy's control was simply too bad. One must always leave a margin when attacking. How could he not understand such a simple principle?

Like the wind, I suddenly appeared right in front of Shadow Volcano. A pair of undead eyes glared furiously at him. Immediately, Shadow Volcano had goosebumps all over his body, "You...What do you want?!"

"MISS!"

"1280 ! "

I didn't reply, instead, I immediately unleashed [Vindicate] and one normal attack upon him, instantly killing him. Looking at Shadow Volcano's corpse collapsing to the ground, I couldn't help but be surprised. A level 3 [Vindicate]'s ability was simply too powerful, it was definitely my trump card for PK-ing others!

Just at this moment, there was a sudden pain in my chest. "Pa pa pa" arrows suddenly shot at my chest, four archers from the Shadow Clan pulled their bows simultaneously, shooting their arrows at me accurately. A chain of damage numbers flew out from my head-

"75 ! "

"59 ! "

“90 ! ”

.....

Each damage wasn't that high alone, but together, they were quite deadly. In just a moment, I almost became a hedgehog being shot by these arrows. The worst thing, however, was the hot Fire Dragon that suddenly shot out from the ground, engulfing my whole body in an instant. Burning sensation seared my whole body as my health fell fiercely non-stop!

“289 ! ”

Damn! They had a high-levelled mage, a strong high-levelled mage!

I hurriedly took out a level 2 health potion and gulped it down. At the same time, from the corner of my eye, I saw that a female mage wearing a black robe was chanting a spell. A ball of fire flickered on the tip of her staff. What a high-levelled mage!

Shadow Chanel LV-32

Profession: Bronze Magician

She was actually a level 32 mage. Seems like that staff was at least an iron-tier. It could even be rune-tier, otherwise it would be impossible to cause me so much damage with a level 3 [Fire Dragon] skill.

"Mu Rong Ming Yue!"

I hurriedly retreated and shouted at the same time. Mu Rong Ming Yue was a healer after all, she immediately raise her hands and healed me!

"+312 ! "

Tsk tsk, not bad. Sister Ming Yue was indeed a magnificent healer. Such a strong heal, she would probably be one of the best healers in Floating Ice City.

Although I had received healing, it was obvious that it was quite unrealistic to fight against so many people alone. Especially that Shadow Chanel who had such a strong magic attack. The moment I made a mistake, I would probably be annihilated.

Shadow Chanel's attack undoubtedly increased the morale of the Shadow Clan members. Shadow Ocean raise his longbow and shouted, "Chanel, give this brat another [Fire Dragon]. Archers, attack him altogether. I don't believe with our battle power, we couldn't kill this Undead Swordsman. Dammit, they only have one priest. Humph, it's that Mu Rong Ming Yue of Ancient Sword Dream! We'll first kill Fallen Hero, the Mu Rong Ming Yue!"

Instead of retreating, I advanced forward, my sword slashing onto the chest of a mage, who had suddenly charged towards me. This young mage lack experience, he didn't even know that a mage shouldn't go too near their opponents. His eyes were wide opened, staring at my Weeping Fireblade piercing through his heart. With a splash of blood, he

immediately collapsed and died!

Shadow Chanel bit her lips and shouted, "Die, [Ice Rain]!"

"Hua!"

A rain of icicles appeared suddenly from the sky. This was a level 30 mage's most powerful skill, an aoe skill at the early stage!

"75 ! "

"77 ! "

"71 ! "

Three continuous attacks. It was obvious that her [Ice Rain] was not at a really high level and did not have a very high damage. It was much more efficient to use the single target [Fire Dragon] instead.

I decided to risk my life. Charging straight towards Shadow Chanel, I shouted loudly, "[Death Blade]!"

Green light flashes as my strongest attack fell down on her!

Who would know that Shadow Chanel revealed a disdainful smile instead. She stomped her feet on the ground, and suddenly a golden shield appeared and surrounded her body. It was a level 30 mage's

protection skill-[Mage Shield]!

"Pu!"

My [Death Blade] weakly struck at the Mage Shield, unable to break the shield. However, its toughness had also been reduced by half. After all, my attack strength was still the real thing.

I strike the Mage Shield again with my sword and it suddenly broke with a loud 'Pa'!

Shadow Chanel froze and hurriedly tried to retreat. At the same time, she unleashed an [Icicle] attack.

"Pa!"

My body became frozen and my movement speed decreased by a whole lot. Arrows once again darted into my chest. My health decreased rapidly.

I immediately tried to retreat. Since I had failed to kill the opponent's high levelled mage, it would be quite impossible to kill this bunch of people alone.

Right at this moment, a reassuring sound resounded. The Treant BOSS had died with a loud miserable cry!

Xu Yang raise the Treant's vine up high as he laughed out, "Brother

Fallen Hero, we finished the quest!"

Ghost Valley had already turned into a shadow and immediately launched a sneak attack to the Shadow Clan members. His long spear danced as his deadly attacks immediately slashed at Shadow Ocean. The next moment, his body turned quickly and flew towards the other two people like a whirlwind. Tsk tsk, this brat had become stronger again. He was truly our Crimson Mercenaries' outstanding general!

Xu Yang brandished his long sword and charged over. As for me, after Mu Rong Ming Yue's heal, level 2 health potion and level 3 [Undead Regeneration], my health had returned back to full quickly. I picked up my sword and started to kill, my target was still Shadow Maple. This mage posed as a great threat to us. As long as she put her mind to it, she would probably be able to kill Mu Rong MingYue with two of her magic attacks. Fortunately they did not do that.

The Shadow Clan was not a very strong clan, at least they were definitely still far behind from the Domineering Clan. They were also not as numerous in number as the Mad Dragon Guild. Perhaps only this Shadow Chanel that was a little bit stronger. The other players could only be called a second-rate expert, they might not even be counted as experts.

I chased to kill like shadow in the night, leaving no chance for Shadow Chanel to stop chanting her spells. The moment she stopped, she might be instantly killed by me. She had already seen the power of [Vindicate], so she didn't dare to take risks.

Alas, although I didn't manage to kill Shadow Chanel, when I broke her [Mage Shield] before, she had immediately been killed by Xu Yang who had rushed over!

In addition, the other people were all killed by Ghost Valley and were running away like a flock of chickens getting chased by a wild dog. Ghost Valley was also more or less a prominent person in the Floating Ice City, there was once a time he was also the first ranked in the Player Ranking Board. This fellow's strong and unique PK ability was both beautiful and determined. His moves were sharp and clean, much stronger than Shi San and Xu Yang.

After 5 minutes, the Shadow Clan was annihilated, while we only suffered minor injuries. Under Mu Rong Ming Yue's heal, everyone's health returned back to maximum.

Xu Yang carried his sword and laughed out loud, "This is really heartening. The Shadow Clan had truly dug their own grave this time. Humph, they wanted to steal equipments before, and now they wanted revenge. Even death couldn't wipe away their crimes! Haha, that battle just now was really hard to fight!"

I shot him a glance, really wanting to say: "Heartening your head! I was almost dead," the way I did last time. However, obviously, I didn't say anything today. Xu Yang and Mu Rong Ming Yue were our employer after all, and we were only working for them. Customers are kings, we would have to uphold our manners at all time.

Mu Rong Ming Yue walked forward and gave me 10 gold. She smiled, "Thank you for everything, really. This is your reward, but forgive us if it's too little. We look forward to working with you again in the future~"

I received the gold and nodded, not saying anything much.

Mu Rong Ming Yue was actually quite a rich lady. Why did I say so? It's because she was He Yi's personal assistant. As the personal assistant to He Yi, who was the Vice President of the Asia Region of GGS Corporation, Mu Rong Ming Yue was obviously quite wealthy.

Receiving the money, I smiled, "Then let's meet again another time!"

"Alright!"

As I said that, I sent a look to Ghost Valley and Du Shi San, before leading the two of them out of the forest and walked towards the Floating Ice City.

Mu Rong Ming Yue shouted to us from the back, "Eh, why didn't you guys use return scrolls instead?"

I turned around, my voice was deep and low as I smiled, "We are saving money.."

Mu Rong Ming Yue froze and she stopped her words, not saying anything.

.....

Ghost Valley walked beside me and said, "Boss Broken Spear, I think our feud with the Shadow Clan has already been drawn. What do you have in mind in the future? We are only three people, we couldn't possibly fight

against so many people from their clan. They would definitely try to give us troubles in the future!"

I looked at him and said sincerely, "Little Ghost, you cannot simply look at things from the surface. Although we are lacking in numbers, we are united at heart. Although the Shadow Clan has a lot of members, they are divided at heart. Furthermore, their abilities could only be second-rate at the most. They are not that strong to the point that we must worry about them."

Ghost Valley nodded.

I started again, "Actually, yesterday I had also made an enemy out of the Domineering Clan, who is a part of the God Destroyer Guild..."

"Ah?" Ghost Valley was shocked.

I laughed, "It's okay, some people are meant to be our enemies, it's impossible to be avoided!"

"Yeah!"

Ghost Valley nodded and clenched his fist tight. "No matter what happened, we three brothers must be united. I believe that the Domineering Clan would not even be able to destroy our Crimson Mercenaries!"

"Hey, that's a given!"

.....

We walked back to Floating Ice City, and arrived when it was just in time for lunch, at 11.30 pm. There were a lot of people in the square, each of them shouting to sell their goods loudly —

"Finding members to hunt at Poison Wasp Forest, Level 30 and above, we need one more person!"

"Buying bulk amounts of materials for Sticky Rice, 5 silvers for each set. Come if you have some..."

"Buying all Level 2 Wolfskin, 1 silver per piece!"

.....

I walked to the middle of the square and shouted loudly, "Selling level 3 material for leather armours, Hell Wind Wolves' Fur. Those who wants it contact me quickly, priority will be given to those who buy in bulk!"

Unexpectedly, nobody replied after I yelled this out. Seems like there weren't a lot of players who have already trained their leather armor sewing skill to level 3.

I sighed and continued to yell again.

After quite a long while without reply, my heart sunk. Forget it, I should

just continue to train!

Just as I was about to turn around and leave, a voice suddenly resounded, "This brother here who is selling wolf's fur, how much is the level 3 wolves' fur a piece?"

Chapter 50 – Extravagance

I turned around and saw a level 27 warrior calling towards me. He had a burly built, just like a bear that had accidentally wandered off the forest. His name was Lace Skirt Exhibition. This name was even scarier than the person himself.

Lace Skirt Exhibition walked forward and smiled, "Brother, I heard that you were selling a level 3 wolf skin just now? That's really not easy. The game had just opened for a week and you have already been able to acquire a level 3 wolf skin. Could you perhaps... let me see the goods?"

Obviously, he didn't quite believe that I had a level 3 wolfskin.

I took out a piece of Hell Wind Wolf Skin with 85 quality and showed it to him. The properties of the wolf skin floated to the air, vividly shown in front of him.

Lace Skirt Exhibition was immediately frozen, "What? You really have it!"

"Yeah."

I nodded, then asked, "How many do you need?"

Lace Skirt Exhibition swept his glance around the surrounding people, before saying in a low voice, "I'll buy everything that you have. Truthfully speaking, brother, I might be the highest-levelled tailor in the whole of Floating Ice City. My tailoring skill is already level 3, I can create a level 25

black-tier leather and metal armor. But I couldn't manage to create them because I lack the level 3 material, wolfskin. I had asked my friend to kill the high-levelled Greedy Wolf, but he only managed to get 5 pieces after hunting the whole day. That was not enough for even one leather armor!"

I couldn't help but laugh a little. Level 25 black-tier leather armor, what a guy. That was already a high-levelled item in this early stage of the game. He could probably sell it for at least 5 gold each. If I allowed him to buy it at a discount, wouldn't he be making a huge profit then?

Hence, I took out a hundred pieces of level 3 wolfskin from my inventory and smiled, "I still have a lot more. Name a price, how much are you willing to pay for a piece?"

Lace Skirt Exhibition replied with a low voice and said, "Brother, let me explain for a while. I have actually set up a studio made up of 11 people. We didn't have other goals, we only wanted to become the first studio for tailoring in Floating Ice City. However, we have only set up this studio not too long ago, and all my brothers are not rich at all. As for the price, of course we hope for the lowest!"

I nodded, "Name a price then. How much are you willing to pay for a piece of level 3 wolfskin? As long as the price was not unreasonable, I will sell it to you."

"Alright! Right now I can only offer — 5 silvers per piece!"

When he named the price, I was immediately frozen. Wasn't that way behind the price I was expecting?

"5 Silvers is too low." I frowned. "When I sold it to the Domineering Clan, it was at least 30 silvers a piece. That price is simply too low, sorry!"

"Eh, wait a moment!"

Lace Skirt Exhibition stopped me, his expression a little hesitant. After quite a while, he finally gritted his teeth and said, "Forget it. How about becoming friends? I'll give you a reliable price. Level 3 leathers, 20 silvers per piece. You can add me as friend and we can keep a long-term business relation with this price!"

I took a moment to think. My [Corpse Pillage] would be able to acquire a lot of leather usually, so I would need to have a steady market. It's not bad to work together with this person.

I quickly add Lace Skirt Exhibition as my friend and took out all 457 pieces of leather from my inventory and said, "I have a total of 457 leather, so total will be 91.4 gold. Since this is our first deal, I'll give you a discount. You can buy it for a total of 90 gold!"

"Alright!"

Lace Skirt Exhibition quickly took out 90 gold for the trade. Seems like this Tailoring Studio's abilities were not that bad. They had definitely sold many low-levelled leather armour to earn so much money. This line of work seems to earn quite a lot.

In an instant, 90 gold had appeared in my inventory. The amount of gold I had right now had increased to more than a 100 gold already.

.....

Proud of my success, I wandered around the Floating Ice City square for a while and discovered there were two level 30 Beastmasters selling pets. The two of them seemed to fight for customers, their fight was extremely fierce.

Surveying the Floating Ice City, I discovered that there was even more players who had reached level 30 and above. The tenth player of the Player Ranking Board was already a level 32 player, and based on the statistics in the Floating Ice City, there were already more than thousands of players that were level 30 and above. For a level 30 player, one of the targets they must meet was to get a pet. With their pets helping in their fights, they would definitely be more useful than high-quality equipments.

Hence, the market for pets had begun to be more popular!

The two Beastmasters shouted so loudly that their spit splurted out everytime they open their mouth —

"Level 1 Green Praying Mantis, 3.5 stars in attack with BN value of 18. Selling for only 40 gold. High ranking players, please come over and see!"

"Level 1 Wasp, 4.5 stars in attack growth. This is definitely a high-quality item, with BN value of 18 points. It's only selling for 150 gold, whoever want it can come over and see. I only managed to catch it after searching for the whole day. Whoever wants it must act quickly!"

The two Beastmasters laid different kind of pets in front of them, one of them selling a line of Praying Mantis while the other selling a line of Wasps. They had three Praying Mantis and three Wasps respectively. The three Praying Mantis had a BN value of 12, 15 and 18, while the Wasps had a BN value of 11, 14 and 19 respectively. From the attributes, the Wasps would worth more; but it was more expensive. 150 gold, even I wouldn't be able to pay for that much.

I shook my head slowly. Forget it, I had actually wanted to get Wasp pet for Ghost Valley to train, but I didn't have enough money right now. Next time, maybe!

Just as I was about to turn and leave, I suddenly discovered that a biting cold flame had appeared right behind me. That... that was actually a fiery sword that was floating in the air. Furthermore, there was a pair of fire-red eyes on the sword, it was as if... What the hell? Was it a pet?

In that moment, I immediately understood something.

I moved my gaze slowly, and a pair of snow-white legs came into my view. Following closely afterwards was an armor that was sparkling with radiant light, graceful and beautiful. Furthermore, the owner of the pair of legs was an extremely beautiful creature, who was currently looking at me with her pair of deep, mesmerizing eyes filled with ridicule.

In Floating Ice City, there was only one girl with this kind of pet and such a perfect timing. It was none other than Wind Fantasy, Lin Yi Xin.

"Eh? What's this?"

I lowered my body, stepped onto the longsword that was covered with N number of barbs and asked.

Lin Yi Xin replied in a bad mood, "This is Flame Blade, the screenshot that I sent you. This pet is one of a kind, with 4 stars in attack and 4.5 stars in health. It's a pet with an extremely high health and BN value of 34 points. Not bad right?"

"Yeah, it's quite good..."

I nodded. Lin Yi Xin's Flame Blade was already level 17, hence, I released my precious darling Mysterious Wasp. Immediately, the dark, cyan-green Wasp buzzed and flew out in the air. It even stood guard against the Flame Blade, as if it was prepared to battle any time.

My Mysterious Wasp had only just risen to level 24, so it was still quite weak. It was weak to the point that I couldn't bear to release it during the PK battle just now. In any case, if the level was too low, it would be killed very easily.

Lin Yi Xin's gaze immediately locked onto the Mysterious Wasp. Her gaze was full of 'love' as she smiled, "Oh, so this is the BOSS-level pet, Mysterious Wasp, that you have caught before?"

"Yeah!"

I nodded and proudly said, "It is a killing machine with 6 stars in attack and 5.5 stars in agility. Not bad, right?"

"Humph!" Lin Yi Xin smiled as she looked at me, then tried to ask, "This Mysterious Wasp, are you selling it?"

"No?"

"Why? Wasn't the Crimson Mercenaries a group that was willing to even sell their own bodies?" Lin Yi Xin opened her fresh, doe eyes wide, looking at me innocently as she said words that almost made me storm out of the door.

"We aren't selling our bodies..." I tried to explain, "We, the Crimson Mercenaries, work in a healthy environment, we are only selling our bodies, not arts... Uh, I mean, we sell art, not our bodies!"

"Okay, okay. I understand, you don't have to explain..." Lin Yi Xin covered her mouth as she laughed lightly.

I was helpless. I was simply making the matter worse. However, there was one thing I was certain, I would never sell the Mysterious Wasp. Such a high-quality pet would be needed for me to conquer the world in the future. How could I sell it in such an early stage of the game?

Under the ice gate of Floating Ice City, Lin Yi Xin and I stood as we chat idly. She asked whether the Crimson Mercenaries would be willing to join her guild, and I asked her if she wanted to buy gold from me. In the end, both of us rejected each other's offers. Lin Yi Xin's nickname, the Fruit Knife Goddess, had already become renowned in the Floating Ice City. Just by standing together with her, I had invited a lot of sharp, piercing glares on me. Standing together with a beautiful girl was indeed a

pleasure and torture at the same time.

At this time, a group of people riding horses came over, showing off their battle powers. The person standing at the front was Descent of the Dragon. This person must definitely be someone rich, he was already a bronze-tiered knight and was equipped with elite, high-quality equipments that might even be on par with Lin Yi Xin's and my equipments. Furthermore, it was obvious that these equipments were all bought with real money.

"Tsk..."

Lin Yi Xin looked at Descent of the Dragon, her gaze carrying a tinge of disdain. She then turned towards me and smiled, "I heard that you became enemies with Domineering Heaven Blade?"

"Yeah." I nodded, "They bully others too much. Crimson Mercenaries and the Domineering Clan have become mortal enemies. When you have already set up your guild, remember to help us to get revenge, okay?"

"But I'm not even in a bad relationship with Domineering Heaven Blade..." Lin Yi Xin chuckled. It was obvious that she didn't have any plans on helping us out.

Forget it, I shouldn't count on this pretty woman.

Under our watchful eyes, Descent of the Dragon walked towards the Beastmasters and asked, "How much is this Wasp with BN value of 18?"

"150 gold!"

"120 gold and I'll buy!"

"Deal!"

Quickly, Descent of the Dragon took one level 1 Wasp and gave it to Arrogant Mad Dragon. He was indeed a rich person, 120 gold would be more than ten thousands of RMB based on the current exchange rate, yet he simply gave it away.

Closely afterwards, Descent of the Dragon looked at the Beastmaster and laughed, "Do you have any other high-quality pets? Don't be afraid of me not having money to pay for them, take them all out quickly!"

That Beastmaster hesitated for a few seconds before he said, "I still have... one level 1 Greedy Wolf. 4 stars in attack with BN value of 29. This... is very, very expensive, I have been waiting for someone who would be willing to buy it. Would you want to?"

As he said that, a hexagon appeared in front of him and a fiery red wolf cub appeared very quickly. It was indeed a level 1 Greedy Wolf.

Greedy Wolves were originally a pet that was not in any way inferior to Wasps. This Greedy Wolf's BN value was even 29 points, its quality was almost as high as Lin Yi Xin's Flame Blade. One could only imagine the price.

When Descent of the Dragon looked at the level 1 Greedy Wolf, his eyes

lighted up immediately. He laughed out loud and said, "In this , why would there be any pet that I can't buy? This level 1 Greedy Wolf has a BN value of 29 right? Alright, I'll buy it for RMB100,000. I can transfer it to you straight away. Are you willing to sell it?

The Beastmaster's mouth gaped open wide and was immediately lured by money. He immediately nodded his head, "Yes, yes! My Industrial and Commercial Bank of China Account number is *****!"

Under the shocked, unbelieving gazes of the crowd, Descent of the Dragon paid RMB100,000 for a level 1 pet in one shot. What kind of extravagance was this?

Even if that Greedy Wolf was a high-quality pet, it only had 4 stars in growth attack. At later stage of the game, there might be pets with 5 stars, 6 stars or even 7 stars attack. This Greedy Wolf would only be powerful in the earlier stage of the game, at later stage, it would definitely be overtaken by other pets. But Descent of the Dragon had actually paid so much money for that kind of pet. There were only two kinds of possibilities for his actions: one, he had too much money, or two, he had been kicked in the head when he was small.

In reality, Descent of the Dragon was actually really rich. He could actually ask someone to go offline and transfer the money and complete the trade before ten minutes even passed. That Level 1 Greedy Wolf had become Descent of the Dragon's pet. Fortunately that Beastmaster was an honest person. If it were me, I would receive the money and then go offline immediately, not giving the goods and run away instead.

.....

Descent of the Dragon was extremely happy after acquiring the high-quality pet Greedy Wolf. His gaze suddenly fell on us, Lin Yi Xin and I. His eyebrows frowned as he said, "Wind Fantasy, why would you be with that kind of person?"

Lin Yi Xin didn't reply, she only patted her dagger on my shoulders and

asked with a chuckle, "Hey, why are you always stalking me?"

I almost vomited blood as I said, "I didn't stalk you. It's all heaven's will, destiny, fate, do you understand...?"

"....."

Lin Yi Xin looked at me with a disgusted expression.

Descent of the Dragon looked at Lin Yi Xin at this time, his gaze filled with a bewitched expression. It was obvious that this beautiful Lin Yi Xin had shot her deadly love arrow to Descent of the Dragon.

"Wind Fantasy beauty, do you... have a pet?" Descent of the Dragon fawned upon Lin Yi Xin.

Lin Yi Xin pouted and asked me instead, "What do you think should I eat tonight?"

"Why the heck are you asking me? We aren't even going to eat together..." I continued to vomit blood.

Descent of the Dragon pointed at the Greedy Wolf and said, "Wind Fantasy beauty, if you don't have a pet currently, do you want me to give you instead? This Greedy Wolf had a very high BN value, it can help you to level."

Finally, I couldn't endure it anymore and asked Lin Yi Xin, "Hey, didn't

we steal Mad Dragon's BOSS previously? Why does this person seem to be very close to you?"

A cold gaze flashed across Lin Yi Xin's eyes as she huffed, "You are the one close to him, your whole family are close to him..."

I pouted, "What the heck..."

Lin Yi Xin swept me a glance then looked at Descent of the Dragon expressionlessly as she said, "I already have a pet, [Flame Blade], BN34. Your Greedy Wolf is trash in my eyes. Also, stay away from me, the further the better. I still haven't paid you back for that matter when Mad Dragon Guild PK-ed my friend, Clearwater!"

I just remembered that when Lin Yi Xin and I stole that BOSS previously, she didn't reveal her face. But currently, Lin Yi Xin didn't wear her cloak anymore, so her absolute beauty had shocked the whole of Floating Ice City, inviting wastrels like Descent of the Dragon to all fawn upon her like starved dogs.

Saying that, Lin Yi Xin gave me a glare and said in a low voice, "Skeleton, take out your Mysterious Wasp and give him a shock. Tell that brat that some things can't be bought with money!"

I nodded and swept my Weeping Fireblade once. A Pentagon Magic Circle appeared in the air as the Mysterious Wasp was summoned. It buzzed as it flapped its wings. Its golden body glowed radiantly as the needle on its bottom glinted coldly like a dagger. Anyone would be able to tell that this Poisonous Wasp was not an ordinary one.

Sure enough, Descent of the Dragon became frozen, "This... What is this pet?"

As for Lin Yi Xin, she immediately glared at me full of killing intention, "Bastard Lu Chen, why the heck did you name your Mysterious Wasp this?! Do you want to die?"

I ignored the berserk beauty beside me and replied Descent of the Dragon instead, "Mysterious Wasp, 6 stars attack, 4.5 stars defense, 4 stars health, 5.5 stars agility and BN69!"

"Wh...what?" Descent of the Dragon's eyes had almost popped out of their sockets. "BN 69? How... How is that possible? You asshole, you must be lying!"

I laughed coldly and brushed my fingers lightly. Immediately, the screenshot of the attributes of the Mysterious Wasp at Level 1 appeared in the air. Not only Descent of the Dragon, even the other players watching at the side, including Lin Yi Xin, all dropped their jaws. Having a BN value of 69 from the beginning was simply too powerful. This Mysterious Wasp must be undefeatable in the whole of Floating Ice City.

Descent of the Dragon's eyes were immediately filled with greed, "This Mysterious Wasp, how much is it?"

"It's not for sale!" Lin Yi Xin helped me to reply, "Don't think that you are extraordinary just because you have a little bit of money. Humph, this Mysterious Wasp, he would never sell it to you even if you paid one hundred million!"

Descent of the Dragon mumbled, "Will you sell it for one hundred million?"

I asked, "Do you have one hundred million?"

Lin Yi Xin was so angry that she gritted her teeth and pinched my arms as hard as she could, "Bastard, can't you be a bit righteous?"

"It's one hundred million. If I could really sell it, we can split it into half..."

"You are the one who said that, okay. Sorry, that person over there, are you willing to buy it for one hundred million?"

"....."

In the end, although Descent of the Dragon was a second generation conglomerate, he didn't have that amount of money. Finally, he left the city with some of his loyal followers to train.

I went to the storehouse and created two Level 3 mana replenishing food for myself to eat. When I went back to the square, I discovered that Lin Yi Xin had not left yet. She sat on a stall in the square cross-legged, laying a few black-tier equipments for sale. There was also a Level 25 white bow. It didn't have extra attributes but it had a high attack.

Seems like she was quite organized and virtuous, this point of hers was quite commendable.

I walked forward and lowered my body, looking at her.

Lin Yi Xin glared back at me, "What are you looking at, brat?"

I chuckled a little and said, "Do you still have potions?"

"Yes." Lin Yi Xin's eyes glinted with a hint of craftiness and said, "But the potions that we are refining now are already Level 3 potions. It can heal 600 health immediately with 60 seconds cooldown. It's very expensive, you know~"

"How much?"

"50 silvers 1 bottle!"

"Dammit, that's too much of a rip-off!" I gritted my teeth.

Lin Yi Xin chuckled mischievously, "It's okay if you don't buy~"

I thought about it again, and then I thought, forget it. I had even seen people selling Level 2 potions for 30 silvers each outside. Selling these Level 3 potions for 50 silvers each wasn't really a rip-off.

Hence, I took out 20 gold and said, "There, give me 40 bottles!"

"Boss, you are so generous!"

Lin Yi Xin praised me and traded the goods with me. She had so much potions in her inventory, wasn't she afraid of people PK-ing her to loot her goods? Skilled players really had a lot of guts.

I repaired my equipment and continued my levelling. My target was Wildfire Plains, I plan to kill the Wildfire Greed Wolves to train my Mysterious Wasp and level it up to level 30 within 24 hours. With level 30 stats, it could probably be able to participate in battles. Other than that, I would need to gather some glutinous rice to create Level 3 Food and train my Cooking ability to Level 4. Only then will I be able to create the godly Level 4 Food!

I continued to train until 6 pm, when Du Shi San and Ghost Valley started to pester me to have dinner with them.

I searched for a graveyard at the fringe of the Wildfire Plains. Squeezing myself into a graveyard that had no owner to rest, I then went offline.

.....

At the studio's living room, Du Shi San and Ghost Valley was trembling with excitement.

"How's today?" I asked.

Ghost Valley laughed out, "I levelled up to Level 31, while Brother B is at Level 29 going to be Level 30 soon. Other than that, we had also managed to help a few people to complete missions that are not that

time-consuming. Today, Brother B and I had managed to earn 5 gold!"

I nodded, "Not bad, not bad. According to the currency exchange now, 1 gold is equivalent to around RMB80. You guys have earned so much today, you are more or less white collars elites now..."

"Boss Broken Spear, how much have you earned today?"

"100 gold."

"....."

Ghost Valley was immediately frozen and asked, "What the heck did you do that you managed to earn so much? Did you kill someone and loot their equipments?"

"How's that possible!" I glared at him and asked, "Little Ghost, your profession is an Undead Knight. Do you have the [Corpse Pillage] skill?"

"No."

"Do you have [Undead Strength]?"

"No..."

"Dammit! Then what do you have exactly?"

"[Undead Combo Attack], [Undying Shield]..."

"That's not bad actually..."

I sighed secretly. Ghost Valley also had an Undead profession like me, but we completely had a different set of skills. He didn't have [Corpse Pillage], so he wouldn't be able to get wolf's leather with 100% chance like me to earn money.

.....

Eating dinner in our usual stall, I downed my drink as I said to them, "Do your jobs properly, we can gather our gold tomorrow and earn our first Crimson Mercenary's revenue!"

"Yeah!"

Du Shi San and Ghost Valley drained their cups happily, their faces red from the alcohol.

After eating, at around 7.30pm, I patted my legs as I said, "Let's go, time to go back!"

Du Shi San took a bbq meat and said, "Let's not go yet, we haven't finished eating. Why are you so anxious to go back? Do you have a lover's secret rendezvous when you get back online?"

I glared at him, "What do you take me as?"

"Haha, I guessed right! Little Ghost, look at him, Lu Chen's face is red..."

"Just die!"

After I pulled the two fellows back to the studio, I immediately went online.

"Shua!"

I appeared on the Wildfire Plains. Looking at the time, it was already 7.45 pm.

I didn't say anything and immediately went towards Frozen Forest. Passing through the thick forest, I entered into a village near a few boulders of rocks. That was Newbie Village no.1, where 10% of first-time players first appeared.

8.10 pm.

I concealed myself within the forest, looking at the newbies coming in and out of the Newbie Village. However, I couldn't find the person I wanted to see the most.

I carried my sword and turned around, going to Newbie Village No.2.

I was disappointed when I still didn't manage to see her.

Until 9.30 pm, when I came to the tenth Newbie Village, I finally saw her.

.....

In a quiet village, beside the dilapidated fences, a newbie human knight player appeared, her right hands carrying a rusty sword while her left hands carried a wooden shield. The simple newbie clothings that she wore couldn't manage to conceal her beauty. Her snow-white, beautiful face and neck shone under the moonlight like the lusters of gems. Under her shirt, her beautiful chest seemed to bob up and down as she took in deep breaths.

She then looked at the Big-eared Rabbits outside the village and mumbled, ", I'm coming..."

As she said that, she charged towards her first prey. Her rusty sword tore at one Big-eared Rabbit's forehead, as her name floated right above her head —

Oasis LV-0

Profession: Magic Knight

(Shiro: Okay, He Yi's ign is 在水一方, which can be translated as 'across the water' or 'at one side of the water', which is really weird... So if you guys don't mind, I'm gonna name her oasis instead. Which is kinda not the exact translation, but well. Anyway I tried googling 在水一方, turns out it's a novel by Chiung Yao.

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Unforgettable_Character\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Unforgettable_Character)

.....

He Yi, you finally appeared!

Chapter 52 – I'll heal, you'll grind

"EVE, you are finally here!"

From a little path in the forest, Mu Rong Ming Yue ran over lightly holding a staff in her hands. She gave a big smile to He Yi and said, "Xu Yang, that beast, and I have already levelled up to level 30, yet you are still level 0!"

He Yi looked at the rusty sword in her hands and said, "Ming Yue, do you have any weapons for beginners? This sword's attack is only 0-1 points, it's really trash..."

"Oh."

Mu Rong Ming Yue took out a black spear from her inventory and said, "Here, it's a black-tier weapon but it can only be used at level 5. Its attack is 5-12, do you want it?"

He Yi glanced at the spear then shook her head, "No."

"Why?" Mu Rong Ming Yue was bewildered.

He Yi's mouth curve into a smile, "Lu Chen said before that in any game, swords are the master of weapons. It is agile and can be used in different ways, have strong penetrating powers and defensive abilities. Although my profession is a Magic Knight, I have decided beforehand to use a sword instead."

"Lu Chen..."

Mu Rong Ming Yue froze and said, "Eve, don't be like this... You can't go on being unable to forget about him. We still have to continue with our lives, don't we?"

何艺点头，嘴角上扬，露出一抹甜美的笑意：“确实要继续生活下去，但是没有必要忘记陆尘，不是吗？”

He Yi nodded, the corner of her mouth curving upwards, revealing a pleasant smile, "We would indeed need to continue with our lives, but there was no need for us to forget Lu Chen, don't you think so?"

"Uhh, that..." Mu Rong Ming Yue was a little speechless.

He Yi turned her snow-white, beautiful face upwards and looked at the sky that was filled with the moonlight. She smiled wryly, "That brat had said before that he would accompany me until the end, he would watch me till the end!"

"Really?"

Mu Rong Ming Yue inspected the surrounding forest and called out, "Lu Chen, are you here, brat? If you are, come out then, we all really missed you!"

No one replied.

He Yi scolded her, "That's enough, you wretched girl, don't speak

nonsense. Let's go and help me level up, I'll heal and you'll grind exp!"

Mu Rong Ming Yue looked helpless, "What? Who are you going to heal... I'm the priest here, you know!"

He Yi laughed out, "That... Sorry, I said wrongly. I'll attack, you'll grind exp"

"....."

Mu Rong Ming Yue: "Wait for a moment, Xu Yang will come in five more minutes, his exp grinding would be much faster than mine."

He Yi nodded.

"Shasha..."

Leaves rustled as a black figure disappeared into the darkness.

I carried my sword and advanced forward. Before long, I arrived at the Wild Pheasant Ridge. I summoned my Mysterious Wasp out and started to kill. One by one, pheasants fell under my sharp Weeping Fireblade. The Mysterious Wasp's level also increased significantly.

In three hours, my inventory became full of chicken meat. Following that, with a golden pillar of light, my Mysterious Wasp had finally levelled up to Level 30. Looking at its attributes, it was really powerful —

[Mysterious Wasp]

Level: 30

Attack: 342

Defense: 225

Health: 1024

Agility: 505

Growth —

Attack: ★★★★★★

Defense: ★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★

Agility: ★★★★★☆

.....

What the fuck, even my own attack was only 273 points. Mysterious Wasp was indeed a BOSS monster pet, its six stars attack was no joke. Not only has it reached 342 points on its attack, its defense was even a frightening 225 point – 60 points even higher than mine. Its health had also went over 1000, it was completely a high attack, high defense, high health killing machine!

Moreover, the Mysterious Wasp was still level 30, there was still plenty of potential to grow!

A smile appeared on my mouth. After possessing the Mysterious Wasp, I was like a tiger who had grown wings. My levelling speed had at least become twice faster with the Mysterious Wasp help!

Since my Mysterious Wasp had finally grown up, I didn't have to hide it anymore. I brought it back to the Floating Ice City just like it was.

After tidying up some stuff, I started to create Level 3 Mana Food Item, Green Pepper Meatballs!

Set by set of Green Pepper Meatballs appeared in my inventory. Suddenly, a bell resounded —

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, your Cooking Skill has levelled up to level 4!

.....

Alright! I had finally levelled to level 4. I can finally make level 4 food items!

Opening my cooking window, the materials needed for level 4 food items appeared in front of me: Cold Sliced Chicken, You need: Chicken x 20, Salt x 10, Green Peppers x 15 & Garlic x 10. Restore: 400 mana. I still have quite a lot of chicken meat left and I could buy some salt later. I would only need to gather some gingers later on.

I remembered that time when I did the Hunter Huang Huo's quest, I had to pick some gingers too. However, there was obviously too little ginger in that area. I would need to look for find another location to gather materials.

As I continued to research some materials, I found some results later on. Gingers mostly grew at the Butterfly Forest, and in this Butterfly Forest training map, there was one kind of Magical Pet "Purple Butterfly". This was a kind of pet with 3.5 stars of magical attack. In the Floating Ice City region, only Butterfly Forest would spawn a level 1 Purple Butterfly.

There were a lot of Beastmasters in the forums who were complaining that the Butterfly Forest had been seized, dominated by none other than the God's Destroyer Guild core group, the Domineering Clan. Two days ago, Domineering Heaven's Blade had ordered three groups of Domineering Clan members, of around 15 members in total to seize the Butterfly Forest. These people were all level 30 and above fighting type players. Ordinary players would absolutely not be able to contend against them. In the end, the Butterfly Forest were seized just like that. However, so far, until now, apparently none of the Domineering Clan members were able to seal a level 1 Purple Butterfly.

Yeah, I am just going to go to the Butterfly Forest. I'll go later. Humph, didn't the Domineering Clan intend to seize the training ground? Then I shall go and socialize with them a little. The Crimson Mercenaries had already become enemies with them anyway. Domineering Heaven Blade had also declared war on the Crimson Mercenaries and Fallen Hero on the forums. It was an unavoidable battle. Furthermore, I was also anticipating my fight with Domineering Heaven Blade and Domineering Knight God. These people were quite skillful. At times, I feel happier when I have rivals to fight against.

I sent a message to Du Shi San, "Come here to Floating Ice City!"

Not long after, Shi San appeared. I gave him 110 sets of Level 3 Food

Items and said, "Go, sell it for 40 silvers a set. Don't accept any bargains. Give the proceeds to me later in the afternoon, I'm going to change it to cash."

"Okay!"

Du Shi San nodded cheerfully. He was also more knowledgeable on this kind of stuff, because during his university, he had a nickname called "Crafty Merchant". There was once a time he had dragged me along to buy cinema tickets with student's price and selling it around, he had managed to earn more than 800RMB in one day. However, I heard that almost all those cinema tickets were counterfeited.

.....

Parting with Shi San, I continued to wander around the square. Suddenly, I heard someone shouting, "Selling a book of pet skill, those who need it, please come and buy!"

My eyes lighted up as I quickly approached him. There was a level 25 warrior who had set up a stall with only one light green skill book —

[Combo Attack (Pet)]: Unleash a string of combo attacks in a single moment. Consume 10 mana points. Every attack will have 75% off the normal attack's strength. The higher the level of master, the stronger the attack will be. Level Requirement for Pet: Lv. 30.

Indeed, it was a pet skill book!

In system, pet had the ability to learn their own skills. However, a level 1 pet is a blank slate of paper. There were some probability for the pet to learn some skills during its growth, but there was another way to learn skills, and that was to buy a pet skill book.

[Combo Attack], it seemed like a skill that a battle-type pet would have. It would definitely be very suitable for my Mysterious Wasp!

Hence, I walked forward and asked the little warrior who was selling the book, "Bro, how much is this pet skill book?"

The little warrior looked at me and said, "50 gold!"

"That's too expensive. We would only need to pay 50 silvers at the most when we learn skills from instructors, so how could you sell this book for 50 gold? Furthermore, it was only a pet skill book. Are you trying to cheat me?!"

"Uhh, then how much do you want to buy it for?" The little warrior had obviously felt guilty. In reality, a pet skill book wouldn't be priced at 50 gold normally.

I showed him five fingers and smiled, "This amount!"

"5 gold?"

"5 silver!"

"Ah?!" The little warrior's chin dropped to the ground, "That's so shady! 5 silvers is definitely impossible!"

I shot him a glance. He was still wearing a low-levelled white-tier leg guard on his leg. Hence, I took out a black-tier leg guard from my inventory and said, "Here, then how about I buy it at 2 gold, with the addition of this black-tier equipment in exchange for your skill book!"

The little warrior's immediately lit up the moment he saw the black-tier leg guard. After hesitating for a few seconds, he finally nodded and said, "Alright, I'll trade with you. In any case, I couldn't use this skill book in the near future. All the Beastmasters are extremely shady, even a trash Wasp could be sold for more than dozens of golds. They are really cheaters!"

I smiled slowly, "Don't be too anxious. Soon, there would be more Beastmasters rising to level 30. At that time, pets prices would naturally drop. Just get a Wasp with a BN value of more than 15, it will be sufficient for you to train."

"Yeah."

The little warrior opened the trade window. After a few moments, the trade was conflicted. I had gained a pet skill book in exchange for 2 gold and a trash leg-guard, it's really refreshing! Although this book might not cost 50 gold, it would at least be 10 gold!

Opening my pet window, I clicked on "Learn New Skill". In the next moment, the skill book had immediately disappeared, and a line of words [Combo Attack] appeared on the Mysterious Wasp's attribute. Opening

the detailed information of the skill, it was indeed an extremely formidable skill —

Combo Attack LV-1: Unleash 2 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 75% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-2: Unleash 2 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 75% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-3: Unleash 2-3 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 80% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-4: Unleash 2-3 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 80% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-5: Unleash 2-4 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 85% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-6: Unleash 2-4 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 85% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-7: Unleash 2-5 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 85% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-8: Unleash 2-5 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 85% of normal attack's damage.

Combo Attack LV-9: Unleash 3-6 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 90% of normal attack's damage.

Thunderbolt Attack (Final Mastery): Unleash 4-7 combo attacks on the enemy. Each attack contains 100% of normal attack's damage.

.....

Formidable! Although the skill might not be very good at the beginning stage, it would become extremely formidable after level. There would be a probability of unleashing 4 continuous attacks, and each

damage would be 85% of the normal attack's damage. This was equivalent to unleashing a damage 3.4 more times than a normal attack. This skill could be counted as a killing move. Furthermore, at level 10, the [Combo Attack] will change name into Thunderbolt Attack, unleashing 4-7 continuous attacks with full damage. So strong – it would be able to unleash a damage 7 times more than a normal attack once used. Fortunately this is a pet skill. If it was player's skill instead, it would definitely be able to kill any kind of enemies with one single move!

Of course, a Level 10 skill could only be reached by players who are at level 100. I am still level 30 now, there's still a long way ahead!

With my Mysterious Wasp who was equipped with a skill, it would be much safer now if I wanted to return to Butterfly Forest to hunt or gather some gingers. Even if I was surrounded by the Domineering Clan Members, I would at least be able to put up a fight!

Chapter 53 – Let's just die together!

The Butterfly Forest was a serene and thick jungle.

I went through the jungle as I closely monitored the changes in the map. The surrounding scenery slowly turned beautiful, with butterflies flying everywhere. I had finally reached the Butterfly Forest.

In the jungle, there were quite a few Domineering Clan Members. There were Domineering Knight God and Domineering Warrior God amongst them, but I did not see Domineering Heaven Blade at all. However, there were a mistake in the information in the forums. There were at least 20 Domineering Clan members in this place. Furthermore, everyone had already changed to their second profession. This was definitely something I wouldn't be able to handle. They had 5 archers who had already changed to their second profession. A volley of [Chaos Shots] would probably turn me into a hedgehog.

Forget it, I didn't even have an ocean-deep enmity with the Domineering Clan anyway. I was only here to gather some ginger. PKing for revenge was an irritating affair, it would delay my levelling and earning efficiency.

.....

Hence, I bypassed that jungle and entered the Butterfly Forest from the other side.

"Papapa..."

A faint flapping sound resounded. Suddenly, I saw a five-coloured, beautiful butterfly floating around. It was about the size of a human's face. Its level was not low!

Five-coloured Butterfly Lv-40

It was actually a level 40 monster! I decided not to move unless the situation forced me to do so. But I would need to eliminate this butterfly in front of me, because it was blocking my path.

Summoning my Mysterious Wasp, I carried my sword as I swiftly moved forward. My technique cleanly and sharply cut down on the monster as I executed two combos!

"MISS ! "

"1749 ! "

Not bad, the five-coloured butterfly only had around 3500 health in total, and I had already shaved off its health with my [Vindicate]. Before I managed to unleash my next attack, Mysterious Wasp had already charged over and pricked the Five-coloured Butterfly's body with the needle on its bottom twice, its [Combo Attack] skill revealed its prowess!

"508 ! "

"622 ! "

What a strong attack power, Mysterious Wasp had indeed not let me down!

Brandishing my sword easily, under the perfect symphony of master and pet's combo, the Lv. 40 Five-coloured Butterfly did not even had the chance to attack before it died. It gave me quite a lot of experience.

I continued to move forward. After walking for around 10 minutes and killing around 7 to 8 Five-coloured Butterflies, I finally came to a lush woodland. There were Lv. 4 ginger all around!

I opened my fingers and unleashed my [Hunting] Skill. Very quickly, a ding resounded —

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have gathered Ginger x3. Your [Hunting] skill gained +4 experience!

.....

Not bad, these level 4 food item had been acquired with no effort at all. This food would be a god that will bless me with wealth!

"Shua shua shua!"

Getting rich all depended on a pair of hard working hands. I gathered all the Ginger in the area swiftly like a typhoon, sweeping my way through the Butterfly Forest. One hour later, not a single Ginger could be

found in this Butterfly Forest anymore. On the other hand, my inventory was all full of ginger. There were 50 in each slot, and I had a total of 48 slots filled. This should be enough to make a batch of Level 4 Cold Sliced Chicken.

Just at this moment, a group of people walked over. There were 2 men and 2 women, one of them looked extremely familiar!

A supreme beauty who was wearing a snow-coloured skirt and holding a short dagger walked in front. Who would that be other than Lin Yi Xin? In the whole of Floating Ice City, the only girl who could wield a dagger could only be this Fruit Knife Goddess.

Behind Lin Yi Xin, there was a beautiful, gentle and refined archer. It was none other than Clearwater. She was Lin Yi Xin's roommate. The other two young men accompanying them were Amethyst River, a level 31 magic knight, and Life-stealing Sword, a level 30 Warrior. They both looked like high-end players.

"Yiyi, are you sure there is a level 1 Purple Butterfly here?" Clearwater asked.

Lin Yi Xin puffed up her chest and replied confidently, "I'm absolutely sure. we have already checked level 1 pets in Floating Ice City earlier, it could only be this place. Qing Qing, you want a pet, so we could only come here to catch a Level 1 Purple Butterfly."

Clearwater nodded, "Yeah, I am an archer, so my physical damage is high enough. I need a pet to add to my magic damage. Otherwise, I will probably die if I meet a monster that I can't defend against."

Lin Yi Xin brandished the Moonblade dagger in her hands, creating terrifying shockwaves in the air. She laughed out lightly, "No monster is immune to physical damage in this world. If you can't break through its defense, that would only mean that your attack was not high enough. The realm that I was aiming after was an attack that could break through every single defense. Heehee~"

Clearwater spat out her tongue and said, "Yiyi, you are still that crazy, violent girl..."

Lin Yi Xin pursed her lips and chuckled a little, not saying anything else.

Right at this moment, four to five people appeared on the opposite side of the forest. Everyone's names had a 'Domineering' prefix. There were two warriors and three archers, everyone was an assembly of physical damage-inflicting players. The leader was none other than one of the Domineering Heaven Blade's trusted generals, Domineering War God!

Domineering War God raised his sword, blocking Lin Yi Xin and her group's path, smiling a little, "Apologies, brethrens. Butterfly Forest has already been seized by the Domineering Clan members, please refrain from entering this area. Otherwise, the eye of my sword might accidentally hurt you all."

Obviously, Domineering War God had not dared to be too domineering when he saw that the intruder was the first-ranked Wind Fantasy. His words were a little more polite. If he met a low-levelled single player instead, his words would probably be, "Domineering Clan's property,

trespassers will be prosecuted. Unrelated people should fuck off, otherwise I will definitely massacre you guys!"

Clearwater froze a little, it was obvious that she didn't think that the Domineering Clan would be that domineering.

Lin Yi Xin looked at Domineering War God coldly as she continued to play with the dagger in her hands. She smiled indifferently, "There's no enmities or whatsoever between the Domineering Clan and us, right?"

Domineering War God nodded, "Wind Fantasy, please forgive us. This place has already been occupied by our clan members!"

Lin Yi Xin didn't buy it, and said, "My friend wants to catch a level 1 Purple Butterfly. We'll leave once we caught it, we will not disturb you occupying this place."

"You..." Domineering War God was a little speechless.

At this time, an archer standing behind Domineering War God suddenly eyed the snowy peaks on Lin Yi Xin's chest, chuckling full of indecent expression on his face, "You can enter and catch a Level 1 Purple Butterfly if you want, but... heheh, can you let us few brothers to grope them for a bit?"

Although Domineering War God was a good fighter, he couldn't supervise his subordinates well. The other Domineering Clan members had also revealed a vulgar smile. Lin Yi Xin and Clearwater were both extreme beauties after all. Lin Yi Xin especially, with such a supreme

beauty that had the power to cause the downfall of a kingdom and make any male players' blood boil, men simply couldn't get their hands off her.

Lin Yi Xin's snow white face immediately turned cold, thick killing intent surged on her purple eyes. She said coldly, "Domineering Heaven Blade would probably not blame me if I kill you now!"

"What did you say?"

The archer didn't have a chance to react before Lin Yi Xin flew towards him suddenly, her purple eyes emitting a flash of silver light — [Moon Iris]!

Similar to my [Vindicate], her [Moon Iris] had the ability to greatly decrease her enemies' defense. However, she could only use a dagger to unleash this attack!

"Pu Chi!"

In a flash, the dagger on Lin Yi Xin's hands had already pierced into the archer's chest. A large damage number flew out — 1289!

What a strong attack! No wonder she was first-ranked in the Player Ranking Board!

"Ahh..."

The archer cried out miserably as he slowly fell to the ground, dying

just like that. At the same time, Lin Yi Xin's name had turned red.

"You!"

Domineering War God was furious. He never thought that Wind Fantasy would dare to kill his subordinate under his own nose. The Domineering Clan in Floating Ice City was an undefeatable existence, no other group had ever tried to go against the Domineering Clan before. However, the "Fruit Knife Goddess" had actually dared to do so today. She had easily killed an archer who had already advanced on the second-level job with a fruit knife.

Domineering War God's eyes turned red as he glared at Lin Yi Xin, roaring loudly, "Wind Fantasy, you are deliberately trying to make an enemy out of the Domineering Clan members, is it?!"

Lin Yi Xin pulled out her sword with a loud clang, looking at Domineering War God coldly, "What would you do if I said yes?"

As for myself, who was hiding under the thick bushes, I couldn't help but to cheer for Wind Fantasy secretly. Wind Fantasy, who had a personality to meet clashes head on, had a quality that I really liked.

.....

A fight immediately broke out. Lin Yi Xin swept her sword across, fast like a lightning, striking two mages' necks. They were also instantly killed by her high attack. Her sword angle, strength and control was all just enough to kill, this supreme beauty was simply too strong!

Lin Yi Xin was already undefeatable on her own since the beginning. The two companies behind her, on the other hand, didn't have much strength compared to her. After some rustling of leaves, ten over Domineering Clan players suddenly leapt out. Domineering War God raised his hands and bellowed, "[Chaos Shots], kill this reckless fellow no!"

"Shua shua shua!"

Five archers who had advanced to second job immediately unleashed their level 30 skill — [Chaos Shots]!

Arrows rained down from the sky. Every single archer had shot around 3-5 arrows aiming at different targets.

Clearwater immediately retreated a few steps back. Grasping her bow, she immediately shot a [Precise Shot]!

"Pu Chi!"

It was a fatal shot. One of the archers on the other side fell to the ground. However, Clearwater had also been shot with five arrows. Although the damage by [Chaos Shots] were not that high, around 100 points or so, after a volley of [Chaos Shots], Clearwater couldn't stand the attacks with her weak archer body. She fell to the ground and became a corpse immediately.

In front of Clearwater, Amethyst River and Life-stealing Sword had also

died in pools of blood. In the early stage of the game, magic knights and warriors wouldn't be able to withstand archer's physical attack without high-levelled armours.

"Shua shua shua!"

Lin Yi Xin killed 7 Domineering players continuously before turning her head and asked in confusion, "Eh, where are the others?"

Of course, she didn't notice that "the others" had all died!

.....

Facing against the first-ranked expert Wind Fantasy, Domineering War God didn't show any mercy. He pointed towards her with his sword and bellowed, "Brothers, let's go and kill her together! Humph, what's so great about being the first-ranked of the Player Ranking Board? Wouldn't she be killed by us in the end?"

Arrows flew across the sky, leaving a trail of long silver cold light.

Lin Yi Xin's purple eyes revealed an expression of surprise. She knew that she couldn't withstood those attacks, hence she immediately entered into the thick forest, killing a level 30 Domineering Clan's bard before escaping the place.

As she ran forward, suddenly, with a bump and a Lin Yi Xin's cry of surprise, she fell onto the ground. Turned out that she had accidentally tripped, blocked by my legs.

Lin Yi Xin sat on the bushes, her pair of mesmerizing purple eyes looked at me in surprise. Suddenly, she shouted out furiously, raining her fists down on me, "Bad Lu Chen, why didn't you help me when you see me being bullied by others!"

I spread out my hands and said, "Clearwater and the others died too quickly, I didn't even have time to attack.."

Lin Yi Xin gritted her teeth, "The Domineering Clan is really abominable!"

At this time, Domineering War God brought along a bunch of archers to chase after Lin Yi Xin. Who would knew how many Domineering Clan members were actually hiding in this Butterfly Forest. Just by the numbers of archers present here would be enough to cast fear in everyone's hearts.

"They are coming..."

Lin Yi Xin looked at the stars around and quietly said something.

I suddenly stood up, my sword raised up. A glow of red light appeared, glittering especially splendidly.

"Ah, are you going to help me block their attacks?"

Lin Yi Xin looked at me full of smiles.

I looked at her, my expression full of righteousness as I shouted out, "Look at my skill — [Earth Evasion]!

.....

"Bas.... Bastard Lu Chen!"

Lin Yi Xin quickly charged towards me and interrupted my [Earth Evasion] casting. She grabbed my arms and dragged me out as she muttered, "You brat with a courage as brave as a mice, let's just die together!"

Dammit, aren't she loyal to her friends...

Chapter 54 – Mysterious Wasp’s sharp attack

“Catch up with them, quick! You must not let them

Domineering War God’s voice resounded, as the shadows of players in the forest started scattering about. It was obvious that these people were drawn here by Lin Yi Xin. Domineering War God was carrying a heavy sword as he led the group of players in front, bellowing loudly, “Wind Fantasy is obviously trying to go against our God Destroyer Guild. Dammit, we must kill her today and guard her corpse for half a year!”

In the night, I looked down and saw the Fruit Goddess had already kept her dagger, grabbing onto my arms tightly instead in an attempt to get me involved. The purple irises in her eyes shone with a peculiar expression, deep like a purple gem.

“You really have no principles!” Lin Yi Xin glared at me, unsatisfied, “Hasn’t Crimson Mercenaries fallen out with the Domineering Clan? Why don’t you settle your dispute with them here?”

I glanced at her and exhaled slowly, “Dammit, don’t you see how many people are there? There’s at least 20 people. There are already 7-8 archers and mages alone. Every single long-ranged attack is enough to kill you!”

“Agh, then what do you say we do?”

.....

At this time, Domineering War God's figure was already extremely close. Leaves rustled as their killing intents burst out.

I hurriedly rolled Lin Yi Xin's body and mine's into the nearby shrubs. Lin Yi Xin cried out "wu wu" but did not dare to retort. This time our enemies were much stronger than us. One moment of carelessness would immediately result in death.

I searched my mind as the other players walked past us. There was indeed more than a dozen of players, there was even a tactician who was buffing the whole group with [War Dance] and [Iron Wall]. Domineering Clan's player's attack and defense had all increased by 5%. This was not a joke, especially for those archers. under the effects of the [War Dance], their killing potential was shocking!

"Wuwu...."

It was only when Lin Yi Xin struggled with all her might, that I realized that my whole body was pinning hers on the ground. The pitiful Fruit Knife Goddess could only struggle silently, as her exquisite breastplate was trampled miserably under me. Those snow-white mountain ranges were squashed even more, to the point that their shapes had distorted. The sight really shook my heart.

I looked down a little and was dumbstruck, as pink feelings blossomed.

Lin Yi Xin gritted her teeth as she struggled to sit up. She couldn't help but to send me a flying punch.

"Bang!"

"117 ! "

Damnit, I was bleeding. This violent beauty was really off-limits!

"You still dared to look?"

Lin Yi Xin glared at me, her purple eyes filled with embarrassment and fury as she raised her sharp sword and said, "I really want to kill you with one slash..."

I immediately put up my hands and said, "Dammit, I was trying to save you! Why are you so worked up!"

"Humph..."

Lin Yi Xin turned her head, afraid that I would see her blushing face. But she had also silently agreed to my reasoning, and stopped trying to retaliate, for fear that she and I would be shot into hedgehogs.

Seeing that there were a few Domineering Clan players up in front, Lin Yi Xin gritted her teeth and said, "Dammit. Must we just let these bastards go? They had actually...they had actually killed Qing Qing..."

I smiled slightly, "Of course we won't let them go! Don't forget, our Crimson Mercenaries principle is to stand up for what is right, rob the rich and give to the poor..."

"Alright then, we'll act together and mount a sneak attack. We'll defeat all those people!" Lin Yi Xin grasped her fists as she smiled at me, completely forgetting about the me mounting a sneak attack on her just now.

I shot a glance at her supreme beauty and suddenly laughed out, "Beauty Lin, you seemed to forget that I am one of the founder of Crimson Mercenaries. When we, the Crimson Mercenaries do our work, we never do it for free. I can help you to kill those Domineering Clan members, but I will need to receive some fees..."

"Receive fees?" Lin Yi Xin looked at me full of killing intent, thoroughly annoyed, "Bastard Lu Chen, Little Cheater, you still dared to be so shameless?"

"5 gold per person, deal?"

I gave her a price. 5 gold per head off the wanted list was definitely cheap, on the basis that these Domineering Clan Members were all high-levelled players. Even if I charged 20 gold per person, it wouldn't be too much. I had to face against the risk of offending the God Destroyer Guild after all.

Lin Yi Xin thought about it for a while before saying, "That's too expensive. how about 3 gold per head? You only need to kill 8 of them, I'll pay you 21 gold!"

I glared at her face for a while before I finally sighed, "Your maths is quite good..."

Lin Yi Xin nodded, "Thanks for the compliment, let's go!"

I carried my Weeping Fireblade and summoned my level 31 Mysterious Wasp. Then, I whispered to Lin Yi Xin, "Hey, summon your pet too. We'll ambush them from behind, and we would need to kill 5 of their archers and 4 mages in 5 seconds. Beauty Lin, do you have the confidence to do so?"

Lin Yi Xin spread all of her five fingers, and a red magic circle floated in front of her. In the next moment, a level 27 Fireblade appeared. She smiled lightly, "Leave the 3 archers and 2 mages to me, you kill of the other 4!"

"OK, are you ready?"

.....

With a blow of the biting cold wind, blades of grasses scattered about.

The two people's figures flashed like lightning through the night. Lin Yi Xin and I split in two directions, but we act synchronously as we kill into the bunch of Domineering Clan members from the back.

I didn't conceal myself as I shot straight towards the nearest archer. My Weeping Fireblade shot out as two slashes appeared at the back of that archer.

"451 ! "

"378 ! "

One [Death Blade] and one normal attack had instantly killed the archer. My attack was not only for show, after all. Other than archers who had increased 5 points on stamina every time he level up, no archers should be able to block against my attack.

"Shua shua!"

My Mysterious Wasp soundlessly flew towards another archer's back and unleashed its skill. When that archer realized that he had been attacked, his health had already went down to zero. He slowly collapsed onto the grassland.

My feet moved in a zigzag motion as my sharp sword slashed through a level 31 mage's neck. He wanted to cry out, but he couldn't. His throat could only tremble, no sound could came out of his throat.

Reversing my body, I shot straight towards another archer. He was shocked momentarily and had yet to react when my two combo attack slashed onto him!

"MISS ! "

"1279 ! "

My [Vindicate] and normal attack combo was also extremely sharp and incisive!

In 5 seconds, I managed to kill four opponents. I glanced towards Lin Yi Xin, whose dagger was cutting across the air sharply. She then changed her weapon to a sword in a flash. Dancing beautifully like a butterfly within the crowd, her simple sneak attack from behind had also killed three opponents like me. Her Fireblade floated in the air, thrusting furiously as a mage slowly fell under its attack. Tsk, this Fireblade pet's strength after leveling was indeed good.

.....

"Wind Fantasy, she...she's at the back!"

Finally, someone managed to yell out. Domineering Clan members had only realized they were being ambushed when 8 cold corpses had fallen to the ground

Domineering war God hurriedly turned around and returned, but realized that one of his group had all been bleakly decimated. A sharp sword that was ignited in a fiery light was shooting right towards his chest.

"Fallen Hero, you...how could it be you!" Domineering War God was unable to restrain his anger as he led a few magic knights and warriors, charging towards us altogether.

Lin Yi Xin chuckled lightly, "Mages and archers have all been settled, we

can attack at ease now!"

I couldn't help but smiled back. Working together with such a strong and beautiful partner like Lin Yi Xin was practically a kind of enjoyment in playing this game.

Raising my Weeping Fireblade, I did my job and charged in front, my long sword violently thrusting forward. My [Death Blade] and normal attack combo had completely broke a Domineering Clan member's defense, killing him swiftly without any problems!

Domineering War God was both furious and anxious. He unleashed his [Sudden Kill] skill right towards me.

However, right at this time, a Mysterious cyan green bee shot towards him, pricking his body twice. Domineering War God's healthy immediately plummeted by a whole chunk!

"450 ! "

"399 ! "

What a tough fellow, he had actually not died after getting attacked by the Mysterious Wasp two combo attacks?

I quickly flew forward. Domineering War God was drinking a bottle of health potion, his face a picture of fear and despair. It was obvious that he never thought that a pet's attack could be strong to that extent.

Domineering War God's speciality was his strong health and defense, but the fearsome attacks from the Mysterious Wasp had thoroughly broken his confidence.

I charged forward, raising my sharp sword. Fast like lightning, I slashed twice. The first attack was [Vindicate], which unleashed a natural MISS, and the second slash was a normal attack. However, these attacks actually made Domineering War God feel like crying. A damage that was more than 1200 points was more than enough to kill him instantly.

"Plop!"

Domineering War God collapsed, he had even dropped a green helmet

I immediately caught the green helmet and raised it up high, shouting, "Domineering War God's helmet is here. Who dares to resist us will be killed immediately!"

As a result, everyone resisted us to death.

As they say, 'Heroes couldn't beat numerous enemies, two fists couldn't beat four hands'. Although Lin Yi Xin and I had high-levelled equipments and skills, we still wouldn't be able to withstand a few warriors surrounded attack. At first we still could kill one or two of them, but afterwards a level 30 priest who had been promoted to his second job came. The battle became extremely hard to fought.

"Gulp!"

I quickly drank a level 3 health potion and recovered 600 health. I shouted loudly, "Yiyi, let's go!"

Lin Yi Xin's sword flashed as she retreated quickly, charging into the forest with me at her side. The two of us left our pets synchronously to block the opponents from chasing after us. The Mysterious Wasp's and Fireblade's defense and health were all not bad, the Domineering Clan wouldn't be able to kill them off in a moment.

Entering the forest, I immediately recalled the Mysterious Wasp. It only had a third of its health left, while Lin Yi Xin's Fireblade only had a thread of blood left. It would probably die if she recalled it one second later. Pets would drop 3 levels when they die, this rule had really left a lot of people dumbfounded. Hence most of us would try not to let our pets die.

.....

"Ahh...I'm dead tired..."

Lin Yi Xin leaned against a short tree, gasping for breath. Her beautiful hair was slightly dishevelled, as moonlight shone upon her bright eyes and white teeth. Her supreme beauty was revealed, as her mountain ridges bobbed up and down when she breathed. It was a magnificent sight for me to behold This beautiful girl was really an exceptional, extraordinary specimen of a perfect woman, a rare species.

I extended my hands and said, "I killed a total of 14 people, 42 gold. I'll just count it as 40 gold for you. Boss, thank you for your business!"

Lin Yi Xin shot me a glance and said, "This time, put it on my credit..."

"My little business doesn't take credits."

Lin Yi Xin's killing intent shot through the roof, "I insist to pay on credit!"

I nodded, "Alright, up to you."

"Actually, I don't have that much gold..." Lin Yi Xin smiled sweetly as she said, "How about this, since you have helped me to teach those Domineering Clan bastards a lesson, I can treat you to a meal."

I couldn't help but to smile lightly, "Alright then..."

Actually, I didn't have the intention to receive those 40 gold from her. Domineering Clan and the Crimson Mercenaries were already enemies from the beginning, I wasn't necessary for me to show my weakness. On the contrary, I managed to pull such a strong friend like Lin Yi Xin along. We still have a lot of things to do in Floating Ice City in the future.

Lin Yi Xin nodded, "Tomorrow 11.30 am, wait for me at the Hunan cuisine restaurant, Happy Curie, that's located beside the university. I'll bring Qing Qing along to treat you."

"Alright, can I bring someone with me?"

"No!"

"Why?"

"You are the one who helped us get our revenge, not other people. Why do you have to bring others along, you think we are having a blind date or something?"

"That... is quite true. Alright, see you tomorrow!"

"Yeah, bye~"

Lin Yi Xin turned around and entered into the forest, bringing Clear Water who had just revived to catch a level 1 Purple Butterfly.

Chapter 55 – Small Capital, Huge Profit

Returning to the Floating Ice City, I immediately created my Level 4 Food Items. Truthfully, I should have been the first player to create level 4 Food Items. If I said my cooking level out loud, I would probably shock a lot of people.

Arriving at the storehouse, I took out a huge amount of salt and chicken from my storage after talking with the NPC. I also had enough ginger in my inventory. Seemed like my profit-making chance has come.

Opening the cooking interface, I added the ingredients: Chicken x 20, Salt x 10 & Ginger x 15. I started the cooking and immediately, a ball of magic light floated in my hands–

“Ding~!”

System Announcement: You have made Cold Sliced Chicken x4. Your cooking skill gains +5 exp!

.....

Ha? I made 4 Lv-4 Food Items in one go?

I was overjoyed and immediately entered the second round of ingredients. Indeed, this time I got 3 portions of Cold Sliced Chicken. This Food Item was an extremely delicious chicken meat wrapped in leaves that could heal 400 mana in a moment. It was a high quality item that

any high-levelled mages must have at all times!

After almost half an hour, I made a total 120 portions of Lv.4 Food Item. It was divided into 12 slots, with 10 Cold Sliced Chicken in each slot. All these were equivalent to cash!

Setting up a stall in the plaza, I hid my player ID before I shouted loudly, "Selling Lv. 4 Food Items, it's an item that can heal 400 mana in one go! Don't miss it, it's on sale now! 80 silvers for each Lv. 4 Food Items! Anyone who needs it, please come and see!"

In this crazy times, 80 silvers is equivalent to 800 RMB. Normally, who would want to spend 80 RMB on one mana recovery item?

However, there were a lot of rich, extravagant people in front of me. They were all people who afford throwing hundreds of golds just for high-levelled Food Items!

Many high-levelled players started to gather together. Most of them were conservative and only bought 1 or 2 Lv 4 Food Items. At the most, there were some who bought 5 portions. It was as if they had bought it because they were going to kill some BOSS with their comrades. In reality, high-levelled magicians and priests, especially priests who consumed 30 mana for a Level 3 Holy Light, would need a lot of mana. If they didn't consume high-levelled Food Items, they would have consumed all their mana in 2 minutes. At that time, the chances of their team being completely decimated would be very high.

In the midst of the racket, suddenly a voice resounded, "The person who is selling the Food Item, I want to buy all of your goods. How many

do you still have?"

I froze. Turning around, I saw two high-levelled heavy-armoured players talking to me!

They were Red Iron Tablet and Rainy Clouds. These two people were not only one of the red-named players in the Floating Ice City Player Ranking Board, they were also the aces in Mad Dragon Guild, nicknamed the "Twin Stars". I would never have thought of meeting them here.

Although I hid my ID, my equipments were all too eye-catching. Furthermore, I always wore a cloak to hide my face. It was extremely easy for them to recognise me.

Red Iron Tablet's eyebrows shot up as he shouted, "It's you!"

I laughed, "Yeah it's me, what are you going to do about it? Do you still want to buy the Food Items?"

"Yes, of course we want to buy it!" Rainy Clouds gritted his teeth and said, "How many Level 4 Food Items do you have in total? Humph, don't tell me you are not going to sell it to us just because we PKed before?"

I smiled, "Revenge and business are two different things. Of course I'm not that close-minded!"

Saying that, I counted the remaining goods in my inventory and said, "I still have 95 portions. Since you guys want to buy everything, then I shall give you a special price. One Level 4 Food Items for 1 gold!"

"What?!" Red Iron Tablet shouted furiously, "Didn't you sell it for 80 silvers each to those other people?"

"You guys are different, you guys are special!" I said, indifferently.

Rainy Clouds held back Red Iron Tablet who were about to explode and replied, "Here's 95 gold. Let's trade, sell me those Level 4 Food Items!"

"OK!"

I happily opened the trade interface and placed 95 portions of Cold Sliced Chicken while Rainy Clouds placed 95 gold. With a "ding", the trade was completed!

Red Iron Tablet was a little unsatisfied. Lin Yi Xin and I had stolen the BOSS that they had fought so bitterly after all, yet they still had to pay me money right now.

"Rainy Clouds... how could you allow that brat to do this?" Red Iron Tablet shouted furiously.

Rainy Clouds smiled lightly, "Young Master had already issued his command, we must get 100 portions of Level 4 Food Items. We shouldn't say any more, in any case, Young Master had given us the funds to buy it."

"Humph!"

Red Iron Tablet stormed away angrily, while Rainy Clouds shot me a warning glance, smiling, "Business is business. Brat, you should be careful when you step out of the Floating Ice City!"

I didn't reply him. Instead, I sent a message to Du Shi San, "Come to Floating Ice City, quick. Be prepared to sell gold!"

.....

After a few minutes, Du Shi San arrived. He traded me and gave me 40 gold as he laughed, "We should already have a total of more than 100 gold, right?"

"How much would a 100 gold be worth?" I opened my hands and a bunch of gold appeared on my palms. A line of numbers that showed exactly how much gold I had appeared: 258.

"What the hell?" Shi San was thoroughly shocked before he started laughing out loud. He patted my shoulders, laughing like a maniac as he said, "We actually had that much money?! Isn't this the same as when we had those RMB20,000? Hahah, Lu Chen, Little Ghost and I were actually troubled about how we were going to pay for our rent next month~~"

I replied, "Don't be too happy, the value of gold will decrease with time. Quick and get a client to sell the gold to!"

"What do you mean client? We can just sell it on a platform in the forums!"

"Oh? There's that kind of system?"

"Go there quickly!"

.....

Hence, I immediately went to the forums from within the game. There was indeed a trading platform, with PBC acting as the intermediary. The exchange had a 1% transaction cost.

Sweeping my glance across, I saw a lot of players here to trade gold. There were thousands of pages of gold listings. Those who could afford to sell more gold put up around 50 gold for sale, while some only put up 3-5 gold, trying to make a small amount of money. After all, the price of 1 gold was currently at 95RMB-120RMB. However, this price would definitely fall steeply when most players had levelled up. No one knew how much it would drop.

I immediately put up a post. Selling 250 gold, 100 RMB for 1 gold. The price should be quite cheap, unlike those dishonest people who were selling 1 gold for 145 RMB. That was really too high!

Not even 5 minutes had passed after I posted my sale when a "ding" suddenly sounded. A message had come —

System Announcement: Respected customer, the 250 gold that you have put up on sale has been sold. With the 1% deduction as transaction fees, a total of RMB 24,750 has been transferred into your China Construction Bank account: 662700200873*****!

.....

Very good, I had money now. I had made close to RMB 25,000 in an instant!

Crimson Mercenaries was developing smoothly, at least our near crisis had been resolved. We could probably eat outside and drink some beer everyday, enjoying the view of beautiful girls passing by. What a bliss!

Enough, I shouldn't be satisfied with a small achievement like this.

I gave the helmet that Domineering War God had dropped to Du Shi San. It was a Lv.25 Black-tier equipment, a little better than Ghost Valley's helmet.

I hovered around the Floating Ice City Plaza for a while, looking at new trends. Seemed like the opportunities for business were not limited to what I had done these previous days.

Standing in the middle of the plaza, I started shouting loudly, "Buying Level 2 Food Ingredients! Buying glutinous rice 50 copper each and chicken meat 40 copper each. I'll buy whatever you have!"

Not long after I shouted that out, a lot of players who had Hunting Skills surrounded me, shouting the number of glutinous rice and chicken meat they had.

These two Food Ingredients were only Level 2, so those who had Level 2 Hunting Skills would already be able to harvest it. At this period of time, there were quite a few players who managed to level their Hunting Skills to level 2. Furthermore, all the single players who managed to gather Food Ingredients did not have an outlet to sell it too, they must have a friend who had trained their Cooking Skill. Hence, they could only sell it to the NPCs.

A portion of glutinous rice and chicken meat for 50 copper and 40 copper each, why shouldn't I buy this deal?

I didn't intend to make Level 4 Food Items anymore, gingers were simply too hard to get. On the other hand, I still had quite a lot of Green Peppers left from harvesting them at the Frozen Canyon. Hence, I decided to create Level 3 Food Items to increase my experience and level up my Cooking Skill to Level 5. The sooner I capture the food market, the better monopoly I would have.

Level 3 Food Items require 20 portions of glutinous rice and 10 portions of chicken meat. Based on the price that I had named to buy the glutinous rice and chicken meat, one Green Pepper Meatball would cost me around 14 silvers. However, I could sell those Green Pepper Meatballs for 50 silvers or more. That was quite a huge profit margin, it was around three times higher than the cost of goods. This was definitely a rewarding method, furthermore, I could also level my cooking skill.

Alright, today I won't level. I shall do business!

I bought glutinous rice and chicken meat relentlessly. There were even some people who was selling green peppers later on, and I bargained the price down to 50 silvers a portion. All of the Food Ingredients needed

were finally gathered. I kept buying the ingredients as I made the Food Items. I ask for 30 gold from Ghost Valley and spent it all as capital. Du Shi San was waiting at my side to receive all the manufactured goods and sell it to interested customers.

I kept busy until around 12pm at night. The three of us had 54 gold at first, but after manufacturing relentlessly, at dawn, we have received a total of 805 gold! This was the advantage of business, earning a huge profit margin with a low capital!

I gave Du Shi San and Ghost Valley 200 gold each, while I took 400 gold for myself. They obviously didn't have any problems with that. In reality, I was the only one producing all the goods. Being able to get such a huge portion of money made them very happy.

We converted some gold to RMB 30,000. With the addition of the RMB 20,000 income we earned in the afternoon, Crimson Mercenaries had now earned RMB 50,000 of profit. It was really an auspicious day!

Ghost Valley took the gold and spoke very resolutely, "Boss Broken Spear, this kind of business opportunity will not be able to last long. I think, at the most, two days later, or even one day later, we won't be able to earn so much!"

I nodded, "The other players with Cooking Skill might also have trained their Cooking Skill to Level 3 already. When they reached Level 3, not only would we not be able to earn much, the price for Green Pepper Meatball would definitely plummet down."

"Yeah!"

We predicted correctly. At 1 am, two players selling Level 3 Food Items had already appeared. One of them was the Cooking master from the Domineering Clan, whose player id was called the Domineering Food God. The other was a level 32 archer from the Mad Dragon guild, called Rice Dumplings. They were all high-levelled experts.

I went out to train until 3 am, when I finally reached Lv. 36. However, I found that I had already fallen through the ranks of the top 10 rankings in Floating Ice City —

1. Wind Fantasy Lv. 38 Occupation: Radiant Ranger
2. Domineering Heaven Blade Lv. 37 Occupation: Warrior
3. Domineering Mage God Lv.37 Occupation: Mage
4. Rainy Clouds Lv.37 Occupation: Magic Knight
5. Red Iron Tablet Lv.36 Occupation: Warrior
6. Domineering Knight God Lv.36 Occupation: Magic Knight
7. Fallen Hero Lv. 36 Occupation: Undead Swordsman
8. Domineering Warrior God Lv.35 Occupation: Warrior
9. Domineering Archer God Lv. 35 Occupation: Archer
10. Clearwater Lv. 34 Occupation: Archer

.....

Lin Yi Xin had continued to train relentlessly, leading by a whole margin at level 38. Domineering Heaven Blade had followed closely while Domineering Mage God occupied the third place. The Twin Stars of Mad Dragon Guild occupied the fourth and fifth rank. The Floating Ice City

level race had become more and more intense. Indeed, spending a whole day earning money had made my ranking dropped by a whole lot. Tomorrow I must level for the whole day.

After entering , I had always constrained my levelling speed in one way or another, but I shouldn't let my level be too far from the rest. It would be best if I could rank at the 11th-20th place, but although I wasn't within the top 10, I would have the strength of a top 10 player. Wouldn't that be interesting?

Chapter 56 – Little Rabbit

At 11.30 afternoon, I slowly woke up.

I walked into the common bathroom to wash my face and saw Ghost Valley and Du Shi San sitting on the sofa in the living room, drinking some water. The summer weather was very hot, you would have to drink a lot of water to replenish those that you lost. Hence, the two comrades had gulped down a huge bottle of water with an unbelievable speed, as if they had turned into camels.

"Later I won't eat lunch with you guys." I wore a light and cooling shirt and looked outside to the scorching sun as I spoke.

Ghost Valley nodded, "Then Brother B and I will eat some packed lunches from below."

Du Shi San asked, "Lu Chen, where are you going for lunch?"

"Oh, there's a meeting..."

"Who are you treating to lunch?"

"Lin Yi Xin is the one treating me."

"Ah?!"

Du Shi San immediately stood up, his face overjoyed, "We are sworn brothers who share both our burdens and happiness. You must bring me and Little Ghost along."

I asked helplessly, "Are you thinking of flirting with Lin Yi Xin?"

Du Shi San was a little shy, "I only wanted to eat good food once in awhile..."

I laughed out, "You can go if you want, but I could guarantee that Lin Yi Xin wouldn't treat you. You think about it yourself."

"Then I'll also go!"

"Up to you then..."

.....

Ten minutes later, the three of us were walking down the road under the scorching sun. The sun burnt my skin to the point that my body felt hot all over, like I was roasted. I clenched my fist as I punched into the empty air. I felt that the strength in my arms were full of power, as if my body had went through strengthening. It was just that the sensation of the sun burning me alive was really hard to endure.

Seeing that I was punching the air and drenched in sweat, Ghost Valley couldn't help but to praise me, "You've got skills..."

Du Shi San laughed out, "Seems like brother, you are a person who knows his goods. The move that Lu Chen had executed just now was the legendary 'Dog Paddle Technique' that was rumoured to be the secret arts from the world of martial arts..."

Ghost Valley laughed out loud before changing the topic and said, "Yesterday, Crimson Tablet and Rainy Clouds looked at me as if they wanted to eat me alive. Mad Dragon Guild will probably hate the Crimson Mercenaries to the core, but in the end, they both still bought the Level 4 Food Items from us. Why is that so?"

I laughed a little, "Very easy. Mad Dragon would do something big in the near future!"

"What thing?" Ghost Valley and Du Shi San asked at the same time.

I replied with a resounding voice, enunciating each syllables, "He-ro's Or-der!"

Ghost Valley's eyes immediately popped out, "They are getting the certificate to create a guild? The Hero's Order?"

"Yeah."

I nodded and said, "So far, until now, there's not yet a single guild established of yet. This was because the players' level was still too low. Another reason was that no one managed to get a Hero's Order yet!"

Shi San asked, "Hero's Order, how could you get those?"

Ghost Valley explained, "Hero's Order is a high quality item that only a Level 60 BOSS and above would drop. It is also dropped at an extremely low percentage. Right now, there aren't even Level 40 players around. It will be very difficult to fight a level 60 BOSS. Even if you raid the BOSS with a great number of players, the player's damage output might not even be as high as the BOSS' regeneration abilities!"

Du Shi San felt relieved as he laughed out, "Then, the Mad Dragon Guild must be a foolish bunch of people who wanted to fight against a Level 60 BOSS at this time!"

"That might not be the case." I shook my head and said, "It would definitely be difficult to set a new guild, but at least the Mad Dragon Guild had the people and the resources to use. With regards to this point, we are nothing compared to the Mad Dragon Guild. If Descent of the Dragon really managed to get the first Hero's Order, the Mad Dragon Guild will probably take over Floating Ice City."

Ghost Valley chuckled and said, "I heard a piece of information just now. Descent of the Dragon's real name is Lu Chao, he is the heir to some rich corporation in Shanghai. Cough, his father is called Lu Gang..."

Du Shi San and I looked at each other in dismay as we both shouted, "Dammit!"

.....

Not long afterwards, the three of us reached the opposite side of the University. The famous Hunan Cuisine Restaurant was not far from there.

Freedom Residence, that was quite a nice name. There was a variety of food in the Freedom Residence. I thought Lin Yi Xin would have reserved a seat, otherwise, we would have to wait until 2 pm to get our lunch.

Entering the Freedom Residence, I took out my phone and called Lin Yi Xin.

At this time, a phone ringtone resounded from behind me, "If you want to marry, marry Hui Tai Lang..."

(Shiro: Yes, it's the same Hui Tai Lang in LLS. It's a character from a well known children show in China, like China's version of Barney. This is the music <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zYRkMUB9d3o>)

Damn!

Turning around, I saw Lin Yi Xin and Clearwater walking inside together. The two of them wore cooling clothes. Sun Qing Qing (Clearwater) wore a yellow t-shirt and a light green skirt. She looked very lively and adorable. Sun Qing Qing immediately entered my list of protected species. This kind of girl must not be defiled by a guy like Shi San.

It was a pity that Sun Qing Qing had entered together with Lin Yi Xin. If two beauties were put together, the result will be disastrous. Sun Qing Qing was already a beauty, but when she walked together with Lin Yi Xin, she immediately looked like an ordinary girl.

My eyes lighted up as I saw Lin Yi Xin wearing a white short-sleeved blouse with a ribbon on her collar. Her chest area was bulging, only God knows how this little girl had developed so well. Her shirt buttons looked like they almost burst out of their seams. She wore a black skirt, revealing

a pair of long, white legs. Such a contrast between black and white might not look so special on other girl's body, but on Lin Yi Xin's body, they made others sigh in amazement.

Du Shi San looked at Lin Yi Xin, his jaws dropping to the ground like a dried up fish, unable to say any words.

Ghost Valley was somewhat unyielding, he only looked a few times before looking somewhere else.

"Did you arrive earlier?"

Lin Yi Xin smiled, revealing her dimples and said to the waitress on the other side, "Hi, we have reserved table 48."

"Oh, how many people?"

"Three."

"Please follow me!"

"Alright, thanks!"

Lin Yi Xin beckoned to me and I followed her upstairs. She and Sun Qing Qing stepped on the stairs, their heels making "Ta, ta, ta" sound as they stepped up. As for me, I only paid attention to her skirt and her pair of beautiful, white thighs. As a breeze flipped her skirt lightly, my heart also flipped along with it.

Du Shi San and Ghost Valley were completely forgotten in one corner, the two people immediately asked if they could be seated together near us. Heavens had mercy on them, there were indeed a few empty tables near us.

Lin Yi Xin's hadn't even glanced at Du Shi San and ghost Valley since she entered, as if they did not exist in her eyes.

At level 2, we found a seat near a window. I took the menu and smiled towards the waitress and said, "I want this... Roasted Duck that's RMB 75 per portion, and this... Snake in Special Sauce that costs RMB 112, and this and that... cheaper ones, this Special Peppered Sliced Fish..."

"Wa~"

Lin Yi Xin looked at me, her eyes wide opened. She glared at me furiously, feeling indignant for her wallet. Her expression was somewhat beautiful yet full of killing intent, as if she couldn't wait to prick me with thousands of arrows.

Sun Qing Qing chuckled, "Brother Lu Chen, seems like you haven't eaten for a few days..."

I nodded, "Yeah, I just ate something whenever I'm hungry. People whose profession are gamers didn't have much time to eat!"

Lin Yi Xin bit her lower, cherry red lips and glared at me, "Humph, next time it would be your turn to treat me to a meal. Just wait and see then!"

Bad Lu Chen, Little Cheater!"

I patted her shoulders as I laughed out. If Lin Yi Xin was not happy, then I would feel happy.

Sun Qing Qing looked at me then looked at Lin Yi Xin. It was as if she saw some kind of clue, she started clicking her tongue and said, "Lu Chen, don't tease Yi Yi anymore. Let me tell you, after being friends with Yi Yi for two years, I have never seen her treating any guy to a meal before. You are her first, you should feel very proud, you know!"

"What?" I shot Lin Yi Xin, who was glaring at me full of killing intention, a glance and said, "Waitress, can you add an additional jar of juice? Those kind that is RMB 68 per jar..."

"AGH..."

Lin Yi Xin almost crumbled, she said miserably to Sun Qing Qing, "Qing Qing, you still have a lot of instant noodles right?"

"Yeah!"

"Don't throw it away, next week I will only be eating instant noodles..."

"....."

Sun Qing Qing was speechless. She then quickly said to smooth the tension, "Let's talk about the situation in the game. Yi Yi is planning to

establish a new guild. Lu Chen, you have your Crimson Mercenaries, and since we both had already fallen out with the Domineering Clan, we should collaborate in the future. Otherwise, the Domineering Clan wouldn't let us live peacefully."

I nodded, "This matter requires time for consideration. We need to completely defeat the God Destroyer guild using an invulnerable plan!"

Lin Yi Xin raised her beautiful eyebrows and laughed out provocatively, "So you meant that you are so clever that you could think of an invulnerable plan?"

"Yeah, do you want me to teach you?" I drank a sip of tea as I declared confidently.

Lin Yi Xin laughed very sweetly, "Let me test you some very easy questions!"

"Shoot!"

"How many brothers does Aladdin has?"

"Uhh..."

I started sweating, "Aladdin is an Indian, how would I know...?"

"Idiot! Aladdin has three brothers, Ala-A, Ala-B, and Ala-C!"
(Shiro: Aladdin in Chinese could also mean Ala-D)

"What the heck? This question is too deceiving..."

Lin Yi Xin covered her mouth and laughed, "Let's try again. Second Question – What's Shen Nong's last words?"

(Shiro: Shen Nong is a Farmer God in Chinese beliefs.
<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shennong>)

Me: "..."

Lin Yi Xin laughed even more sweetly. Pinching her chopsticks, she pretended as if she had difficulty breathing as she said, "This grass... this grass, it's poisonous..."

(Shiro: Taken from wikipedia – Shen Nong eventually died as a result of his researches into the properties of plants by experimenting upon his own body, after, in one of his tests, he ate the yellow flower of a weed that caused his intestines to rupture before he had time to swallow his antidotal tea.)

Me: "Dammit!"

Lin Yi Xin continued on as she laughed, "Let's continue, third question – At the Battle of Chang Ban, Zhao Yun was killing left and right, brave beyond compare. Then, Li Dian said, "Minister, that general wearing white gown (Shiro: Zhao Yun always wear a white gown) had come to attack again!", Xiao Hou Dun said, "This is already the seventh time, isn't he tired of it?", while Cao Cao said, "This bastard, would he only give up after killing all my men?". May I ask, at this point, what did Zhao Yun say?"

(Shiro: Battle of Chang Ban is a famous battle between Liu Bei and Cao Cao. At that time, Liu Bei was trying to escape from Cao Cao. Zhao Yun and Zhang Fei are on Liu Bei's side, while Li Dian and Xia Hou Dun are on Cao Cao side. Zhao Yun stayed behind at Chang Ban to buy time while Zhang Fei helped Liu Bei to escape)

Me: “...”

Lin Yi Xin replied in high spirits, laughing out, “Zhao Yun said, “Zhang Fei that XXX, he made me stay behind to defend the rear, but he broke the Dang Yang bridge with his loud roar, how am I supposed to return back now?”

(Shiro: Cao Cao was frustrated because Zhao Yun had continued to attack his army relentlessly. However, it was actually because Zhao Yun couldn't go back as the bridge connecting Chang Ban to his camp had been broken down by Zhang Fei's roar)

I stared dumbstruck. Lin Yi Xin really knew all kinds of knowledge.

“How’s that, do you still think you are clever now?” Lin Yi Xin smiled as she looked at me.

Me: “...”

Sun Qing Qing laughed until her stomach ache, leaning over the table as her shoulders tremble. Only Lin Yi Xin and I were staring at each other, the air between us full of tension and killing intent.

Not long afterwards, the dishes came.

Du Shi San and Ghost Valley sat a table not far from there. Making use of this opportunity, Du Shi San poured out some alcohol and sat beside me. He was an expert in hitting on girls. Looking at the campus scenery outside the window, he smiled at me and said, "Lu CHen, remember those times we were still in campus? Those are really fun times!"

I nodded.

Shi San continued, "Remember on our senior year, we secretly bought a hotpot to school, but there wasn't any ingredients to add into our hotpot. Just as we were worrying about this, there was a little rabbit hopping on the school dormitory garden. Aih, that's what we call a delicious meat..."

Shi San licked his lips disgustingly.

Sun Qing Qing's expression suddenly changed, she turned to Lin Yi Xin and said, "Yi Yi, your little pet rabbit that went missing on our freshman year... Finally, we know what happened to it..."

Chapter 57 – Genius Protoss

Du Shi San closely observed Lin Yi Xin's expression, and when he realized that her expression started to change, he immediately bolted out of the door. Since young, I had never seen him move so fast before.

Sun Qing Qing smiled like a flower and said, "Lu Chen, I say, are you and your friend from the University of Science and Technology (USTC) too?"

"Yeah."

I nodded, "But we graduated half a year ago."

"Oh, I see."

I shot Lin Yi Xin a glance and found that she was looking at me. She was scowling and glaring at me with knives. I immediately turned around and talked with Sun Qing Qing, "Qing Qing, isn't today's weather beautiful..."

Sun Qing Qing: "..."

At this time, Ghost Valley hold a glass of beer and walked over, smiling, "The two of you, did you know? When my boss, Broken Spear, was still in USTC, he was not your ordinary student. Do you still remember the WCG event that was held in Shanghai three years ago? Chaos Illumination represented Korea and defeated the Three Great Overlords of Starcraft China. However, in the end, he was defeated by a student! Hahaha, that

student was actually Boss Broken Spear, who was nicknamed the Genius Protoss — Night_chen!"

(Shiro: WCG – World Cyber Games
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/World_Cyber_Games
Protoss: <http://starcraft.wikia.com/wiki/Protoss>)

Sun Qing Qing's jaws opened wide, utterly shocked.

Lin Yi Xin's expressions also changed. She slowly stood up, her beautiful pair of eyes looking straight at me, filled with complicated expression.

"You... You are that legendary Genius Protoss, USTC's School Team's leader, Night_chen?" Lin Yi Xin bit her cherry lips as she asked.

My heart was shaken a little. Should I confess? It must be known that when my name was resounding through the gaming world, Lin Yi Xin was still around 18. Yep, a powerful Starcraft Emperor like me must have been her idol. She might even throw herself into my embrace when she knew my identity. Maybe I could have a warm bed tonight...

My heart rate shot up at that instant.

"Yeah, but that's all in the past..." I shook my hands nonchalantly.

Lin Yi Xin's gaze seemed to blurred a little, but it suddenly lighten up again, filled with killing intent this time, as if she wanted to attack me with her [Moon Iris].

My heart immediately screamed, 'Not good!'

In the next moment, Lin Yi Xin suddenly stood up and pounced towards me, her soft and tender hands started to choke my neck as she gritted her teeth and said, "So Night_chen is you! Lu Chen, you bastard! I'm gonna kill youuuu!!!"

"Crash..."

The pitiful chair was overturned as I was pushed over near a beautifully carved window. Lin Yi Xin was all huddled in my embrace like a little Persian cat. Of course, she was an extremely aggressive and violent little cat.

I was completely innocent, "Yiyi, what the heck are you doing?!"

Lin Yi Xin bared her fangs, "You still dared to talk?!"

"I..."

I must as well stop speaking, anyway, I could enjoy her sweet scent and warm body a little more. It was summer, having Lin Yi Xin's curvaceous body in my embrace, having her softness crushed onto my chest, that kind of ecstasy definitely could make a person go insane. Especially when Lin Yi Xin moved her body slightly, I almost crumbled in ecstasy. But as an upright youth, I reached out towards Lin Yi Xin's butt and pulled her skirt down, preventing her to expose her panties to the world when her skirt flipped up.

Aih, I'm really too kindhearted.

Before three seconds passed, Lin Yi Xin suddenly realized. Wouldn't this punishment give him advantage instead?

Immediately, Lin Yi Xin's beautiful face turned red. After giving me another punch with a huff, she retreated and gracefully sat back down.

I sat back up as I tried to stifle a certain kind of impulse and frowned, "What happened actually? Why would Yi Yi be so violent?"

Sun Qing Qing sipped a cup of tea as she smiled, "Lu Chen, do you remember what happened after you defeated Chaos Illumination?"

I shook my head.

Sun Qing Qing immediately replied, "Who is Chaos illumination? He was the Korean Emperor of Starcraft! One month after you defeated him, Chaos Illumination had managed to find your address and brought an internationally winning team Fire Fox to Suzhou. At that time, you have already graduated and left the school team. Chaos Illumination only needed one day to completely decimate the USTC's Team, 'Night'. At that time, Yi Yi was the main force of the school team, so..."

I looked at Lin Yi Xin and suddenly felt a pang of compassion for her. Chaos Illumination came to Su Zhou, with Lin Yi Xin's jack of all trades' skill, she would definitely be completely annihilated.

Sun Qing Qing said, "Yi Yi didn't want to admit her lost at that time, as

a result, she was defeated ten times straight. She even made me lose 2 weeks worth of my breakfast money. Aih, I really don't want to remember those times anymore..."

"Ah, I see..."

I muttered irresolutely and laughed awkwardly, "It's really a case of 'I did not kill Bo Ren, but Bo Ren die because of me...'"

(Shiro: Basically it's a famous quote said by Wang Dao (WD), some kind of Chinese noble during 322 AD. WD had a cousin A, who wanted to overthrow the Emperor B. WD didn't want to get involved so he asked for Emperor B's mercy. Then there's this guy called Bo Ren who is WD's friend. WD asked for his help, but he tried to help WD in secret and pretended otherwise on the outside. WD didn't know BR was helping him so he thought BR had betrayed him. Later, cousin A really managed to overthrow Emperor B, and wanted to kill everyone related to him, including BR. Cousin A asked WD if he wanted to save BR but he didn't say anything, so cousin A killed BR. Afterwards, WD found out that BR had tried to help him before and lamented that quote.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wang_Dao)

Lin Yi Xin's eyes shot towards me as she shouted, "You still dare to speak! Leaving the team right after defeating Chaos Illumination, you really left us a lot of mess to deal with! I... I really want to burn you alive!"

I laughed out loud, "Haha, how about this, I'd treat you to this meal, take it as my apology to you!"

Lin Yi Xin considered a while before nodding, "Alright then,"

Rubbing my wallet, I secretly cursed myself for ordering so many food just now.

.....

On our way home.

"Lin Yi Xin wanted to burn Boss Broken Spear alive..." Ghost Valley muttered.

Du Shi San said, "Little Ghost, you are really slow. You shouldn't believe a girl's words. I, on the other hand, feel that Miss Lin has actually taken a liking to our Lu Chen. At least, she liked Lu Chen's in-game skills."

Saying that, Du Shi San was a little shaken as he patted my shoulders, smiling, "Lu Chen, if we can get closer to Miss Lin, our Crimson Mercenaries can join Lin Yi Xin's future guild. Wouldn't that be pretty good!"

I shook my head determinedly and replied him seriously, "Shi San, that's impossible."

"Wh-Why?" Du Shi San couldn't understand.

I look at him and emphasised each words, "Crimson Mercenaries is an independent guild. Even if we are to join a guild, there would only be one other guild that would be worthy for us to join — Ancient Sword Dreams!"

"Uhh..." Du Shi San stared at me foolishly.

Ghost Valley clenched his fist and said, "Lu Chen, I support you! I know what happened during . Gentlemen die for those who appreciate them. If one day you want to go back to Ancient Sword Dream, I will be willing to follow you and join Ancient Sword Dream!"

I laughed out and said, "Thanks!"

Du Shi San continued, "This, you should take time to consider it carefully. Right now, Ancient Sword Dreams have not even been established yet. It's still far in the future. Furthermore, Ancient Sword Dream's core team are only made up of Blazing Sun and Mu Rong Ming Yue. With their standards, they wouldn't be able to establish a guild in the Floating Ice City."

I didn't say anything. Du Shi San was right, but as long as i live, humph, I would definitely make the name Ancient Sword Dreams resound throughout the Floating Ice City.

Even if I couldn't meet He Yi face to face with my current body condition nor join Ancient Sword Dream, Crimson Mercenaries and I would continue to protect her regardless of anything. We would definitely help Ancient Sword Dreams to establish their footing in Floating Ice City.

.....

Returning to our studio, we went online!

"Swoosh!"

It was a little dark when I opened my eyes, that was because I was inside my grave.

I climbed out of my grave and breathed in the fresh air outside. I couldn't help but to laugh out and followed those kungfu masters in movies, shouting out towards the forest, "People of my past, don't be sad by my passing! If I'm still alive, you all will not be alive!"

After I shouted that, my heart felt really refreshed.

However, right at this moment, a familiar sounding voice resounded from within a tent that had been set up on the edge of the forest. A beautiful figure came out from the tent, her graceful amour enveloping her curvaceous body. She carried a sword and a small dagger on her waist. Her long black hair flowed down like a waterfall, as her purple-colored eyes looked at me, shocking me.

It was Lin Yi Xin indeed. Turned out that she had chosen Frozen Mound as a logging-out place. How dare she do that? She's really too arrogant and condescending!

I took out a card from my inventory and immediately threw it forward.

"Swoosh!"

The card flew in the air and became a beautiful Magic Circle that enveloped Lin Yi Xin's whole body. A Hexagon Magic Circle appeared and revolve around Lin Yi Xin's feet.

"Aih?"

Lin Yi Xin's mouth gasped in surprise as she looked at the Magic Circle underneath her feet, utterly bewildered. After a few seconds, she realized that this Magic Circle was the effect of using the Sealing Card!

Lin Yi Xin's face immediately became red, just like an overripe apple in autumn. She glared at me and shouted, "Lu Chen, you want to die? You had actually used a Sealing Card on me, did you think I'm a Level 1 pet?"

I burst into laughter as Lin Yi Xin managed to guess my intentions. Truthfully, I really wanted to seal her and bring her along everywhere, helping me to kill monsters. She would also make a beautiful pet that was pleasing to my eyes. If only I could do that, I would be so happy.

"Yiyi, you came to Frozen Mound to find me, right?" I asked.

"Yeah." Lin Yi Xin nodded but did not say anything.

"Why are you looking for me?"

Lin Yi Xin blinked her eyes and said, "Would you be interested in exploring a new map with me?"

I nodded, "Are the monsters in that map high-levelled?"

"Very high-levelled!"

"No problem. Anyway I also wanted to level. Also..." I hesitated a while and smiled, "Also, if we train together, we can build a deeper relationship between us, right?"

"Really?"

Lin Yi Xin smiled slightly, revealing two white fangs. Those were special traits of the Magic Race. Although they were fangs, they looked adorable. However, I still felt a slight chill. Although Lin Yi Xin was as beautiful as an angel, when she go berserk, she was no different from a little demon. I must act with caution or else I would risk being sold to slavery or cheated in money. If it were Du Shi San or Ghost Valley these probabilities would probably happen.

Du Shi San had zero defense on beautiful women while Ghost Valley's reaction speed was a little slow. In Du Shi San's words, Ghost Valley was a little bit "er". Ghost Valley was a genius in grinding, but there was a difference between a grinder and a genius. However, it was still beneficial

I asked, "Yiyi, what map is that? Can you share it?"

"Yeah."

Lin Yi Xin invited me to a party and then waved her hands lightly. Immediately a brown-coloured, ancient-looking map appeared in front of me. Lin Yi Xin tapped on the map quickly, causing blue ripples to appear. The area she pointed to was an area that was far away from Floating Ice City, called "Specter Valley". It was almost as if it was a place for undead-type monsters.

"Cough cough..." I paused, before I said, "Yiyi, I am an undead, I don't have an added attack bonus on undead-type monsters. What have you exactly taken fancy of me, to ask me to be in your party?"

Lin Yi Xin's mouth curved up as she looked at me disdainfully, smiling evilly as she said, "Stop being big-headed. It's not that I have taken a fancy of you, I have taken fancy of your Mysterious Wasp's combat power. With it there, we would definitely be able to sweep the whole of Specter Valley clean in 24 hours. Quick, go and repair your equipments, and buy some potions. Let's get ready to go."

I was rather speechless. So in Lin Yi Xin's eyes, I was beneath a Mysterious Wasp?

After I finished preparing myself for war, we set off together!

The twilight of sunset shone upon us as a little skeleton and a supreme beauty of a war goddess step forth together on a journey. What kind of challenges lay before us?

Who cares, we'll handle them when they come.

Chapter 58 – Marquis Zi Yi

Passing through the small path in the forest, the moonlight shone upon our path like sprinkles of snow, reflecting the shadows of the tree leaves. I carried my Weeping Fireblade and walked with assured steps. Lin Yi Xin walk by my side, her snow-white legs clad inside her boots, stepping on my shadows.

The mountain winds blew, faintly carrying the sounds of wolf howling and tigers roaring.

In a flash, Lin Yi Xin's Flame Blade immediately floated into the air. Its speed was not slow, this pet's attack power was actually really strong. It did not seem to be any weaker than my Mysterious Wasp.

"I think in near future, [Mad Dragon] would organize a large group of people to fight against a Level 60 BOSS." I muttered.

Lin Yi Xin chuckled softly, "Let them do whatever they want~"

"Do you really want to see Mad Dragon's influence becoming bigger in Floating Ice City?" I turned around and looked at her.

Lin Yi Xin also looked at me and smiled, "Is your IQ that low? Why don't you think about this. The one who doesn't want the Mad Dragon Guild's influence to grow bigger in Floating Ice City the most was actually not us, but the God's Destroyer Guild. Domineering Heaven Blade would definitely not just stand by and watch."

"Yeah, that makes sense." I nodded, changing the topic, "Yiyi, how many experts have you won over right now?"

"Uhh..."

Lin Yi Xin closed her eyes as she counted, then she opened her eyes and smiled, "Three. Qing Qing, Amethyst River and Life-stealing Sword. You?"

"Two. Shi San and Ghost Valley..."

"..." Lin Yi Xin tilted her head to look at me, as if she was seeing something very funny.

"What kind of look is that?" I had goosebumps from the way she looked at me.

Lin Yi Xin snorted a laugh, "For Crimson Mercenaries... I can rate you 9/10, Ghost Valley 4/10, and as for that Outstanding Expert... I think even 1/10 is too high for him..."

I nodded, "Your rating is quite accurate..."

"Hehe~"

.....

As we continued to walk, suddenly, we saw shadows of people in front. A five-man party appeared. There was a Level 33 Warrior called Marquis Zi Yi who was wearing a blue armour. It should be an elite-ranked equipment. It seemed like we shouldn't underestimate this person's abilities. There was also a Level 32 Magic Knight called Reversed Shadow, and a Level 30 Mage called Far-away Visitor. Furthermore, there was also a priest and a tactician, both levelled 29.

This five man party's abilities were strong and solid, at least that Marquis Zi Yi and Reversed Shadow were experts that were hard to come by!

My gaze froze as I softly said, "Careful, they might not come with good intentions!"

"Why?" Lin Yi Xin asked.

I smiled slightly, "Yiyi, you are quite skillful, but you don't have enough experience. Look at them. They have 1 warrior and 1 magic knight right at the front, a priest and a mage at the rear and a tactician right behind. This is obviously a battle formation. If they are only passing us by, would they adopt such a rigorous battle formation?"

Lin Yi Xin nodded, her beautiful purple irises flashed with a faint killing intent as the corner of her mouth curled up into a mesmerizing smile, "Then, no matter what the enemy plots against us, we must strike them back with equivalent force. You go first, and I'll wait for an opportunity to kill the mage and the priest. That mage is level 32, he would be very troublesome!"

"Yeah."

I walked forward with great strides as I raised my hands suddenly, my Weeping Fireblade igniting on fire. Enveloped in a red light, I imbued the [Undead Strength] onto my blade.

Reversed Shadow readied his spear and unleash a [Flame Strike] without a second word!

I swung my sword, and with a "Ding!", our spear and sword clashed. A shock jolted my whole body as I lost 100 health from a scrape of his spear. This magic knight's attack was really strong!

"[Death Blade]!"

Taking advantage of the situation, I swung my Weeping Fireblade down to Reversed Shadow's shoulders, inflicting 487 damage. It was a pity that Reversed Shadow's health was at least 800 and above. With half of his health left, he hurriedly retreated.

Right at this moment, a cold wind suddenly blew as Marquis Zi Yi charged over. He carried a sharp sword and was about to pierce through my abdomen. Although I could see his attack clearly, his attack was very quick, executed in less than 0.5 seconds. It completely gave me no chance of dodging the attack at all!

"Pu Chi!"

"312 ! "

What a strong attack!

And at the same time, Far-away Visitor suddenly chanted an incantation. A fire dragon flew up from the ground and shot towards me. It was Level 20 mage skill – [Fire Dragon's Roar]!

In an instant, I received the baptism of the fire dragon on my whole body. My health decreased drastically – 301!

So frightening! I had completely underestimated the opponent's strength!

Marquiz Zi Yi's attack was unexpectedly sharp, after his initial attack, he immediately moved in a zigzag direction and stabbed me on my other side. Flexible like a worm, he initiated the second attack!

With many years of PK experience, I had practiced this situation many times. My practices paid off as I judged his attack in advance. Before Marquis Zi Yi started to charge towards me, I had already started moving. When Marquis Zi Yi thrusted his sword, I had already moved back half a step and turned my body smoothly like flowing water as I swung my sword on Marquis Zi Yi's back.

"Ca!"

"389 ! "

Sparks of fire splashed out as Marquis Zi Yi's expressions changed with my attack. His health was around 650. As long as I could attack him one more time, he would immediately be killed!

My second attack had already shot out, this was all part of my plans. However, the thing that went out of my expectation was the holy light that descended from the sky onto Marquis Zi Yi's head.

"+224 ! "

Damn, in-between-attacks heal? This priest was really skillful!

The mage Far-away Visitor had already started his second [Flame Dragon's Roar] spell. My head felt numb at once, one-versus-five was really hard. I was about to die within 5 seconds!

The tactician was activating [War Dance] and [Iron Wall], this was also the deciding factor of victory or defeat. In the early stage of this game, under the situation where most people's equipments were still horrible, an additional 5% attack and defense would still be important.

At this time, a silver light streaked across the horizon, shooting twice!

"Ca ca!"

Two sounds resounded and the mage Far-away Visitor slowly collapsed as his [Magic Shield] was broken. That priest had also collapsed with a face filled with shock. Before his eyes closed, he caught a sight of a beautiful face.

Lin Yi Xin had finally moved!

As the two mage-type players slowly collapsed, the tactician started to panic. He turned around and hurriedly retreated, but a Mysterious Wasp shot towards him suddenly. As it attacked him twice with its needle, that tactician watched with a shocked and frightened expression as two high damage numbers flew out —

"456 ! "

"512 ! "

Just any one of this attacks was enough to kill him instantly. A Level 30 Mysterious Wasp was indeed too powerful, its attack power was even above mine.

I grabbed a Level 3 health potion and down it in one go. Immediately, I gained 600 health and completely recovered. I quickly charged towards the magic knight Reversed Shadow. Reversed Shadow immediately summoned his pet, and it was surprisingly a Level 27 Green Praying Mantis. This pet's attack and defense was extremely strong, but its speed was low. The time lapse between its first and second attack was around 3 seconds!

"Ca!"

The Green Praying Mantis' blades brushed across my chest. There was only a buzzing sound when my black-coloured armour suddenly shone in

a bright light. There was a ghost's howling sound as I activated my [Ghost Armour] skill. As a result, that Green Praying Mantis' attack only amounted to 100 damage. My original defense was already very high, and with the addition of Level 3 [Ghost Armour] additional defense, that Green Praying Mantis couldn't break through my defense at all.

I raised my sword and swung it down, striking Reversed Shadow twice. The first attack was my trump card — [Vindicate], while the second attack was the strongest attack of all my current skills — [Death Blade]!

"MISS ! "

"1503 ! "

Reversed Shadow's eyes bulged open as he couldn't believe that I could actually cause more than 1000 damage on another person. At the current stage in , this damage was indeed rarely seen.

"Pu Tong!"

Reversed Shadow died, leaving Marquis Zi Yi alone.

Facing against Lin Yi Xin's and my pincer attack, Marquis Zi Yi was extremely calm. He calmly looked at the surrounding and laughed out, "The number one player Wind Fantasy from the Player Ranking Board and the seventh ranked Fallen Hero had actually joined hands together. Seems like my brothers and I had not died unjustifiedly facing against you both!"

I humphed, "Marquis Zi Yi, we haven't met before, right? Why did you guys launched an attack on us?"

Marquis Zi Yi laughed coldly, "Why do you need to ask so much? Today, my teammates and I did not have sufficient skills compared to our enemies. Humph, if it weren't for your abnormally strong pets, we would have clinched the victory!"

Lin Yi Xin couldn't help but to burst into laughter, "Really, do you want me to give you a fair chance? Would you dare going on one-on-one match against me?"

Marquis Zi Yi clenched his teeth, "Wind Fantasy, we don't have any grudge against you at all. We only wanted to kill Fallen Hero. Why do you have to be such a busybody?"

"Oh?"

Lin Yi Xin raised her eyebrows and looked at me, saying, "What grudges do you have between each other?"

"He killed my friend, Shadow Chanel!"

"Shadow Chanel is your friend?" I furrowed my brows as I asked.

"That's right, so we are mortal enemies from today onwards!" Maquis Zi Yi looked at me furiously, swinging the sword in his hands as he roared, "Fallen Hero, you are the all-mighty player ranked in the Player Ranking Board. Do you dare to have a one-on-one duel with me?"

This Marquis Zi Yi was really cunning. He knew that Lin Yi Xin's level was high and she was also very skillful. He had thought I was a pushover and picked me instead...

"Alright, I won't summon my pet."

I nodded, lifting my Weeping Fireblade as I laughed out, "Come, Marquis Zi Yi, let me see what you are worth. Could you take revenge on me for your fallen friends and the Shadow Clan?"

"Humph, let's fight!"

Marquis Zi Yi suddenly charged forward, his whole body straight like an arrow. However, at a distance of 5 yards away from me, he suddenly changed his trajectory and in the next moment, he attacked me from the right, his body enveloped in a red light. It was a Level 30 warrior's skill — [Sudden Kill]!

I couldn't help but smiled. This person was indeed skillful!

"Sha! Sha!"

My feet stepped twice on the ground as my body floated a few meters away. My body became as light as leaves blown by the wind, fluttering and flowing, as I drew an S-mark on the ground, dodging away from my opponent's attack. Just as we brushed across each other, I immediately swung the sword in my hands, inflicting [Vindicate] on Marquis Zi Yi. A large MISS appeared from his head!

Immediately, Marquis Zi Yi froze. He had read the information that my next attack would ignore 60% of his defense and increase my attack by 45%. Just now when I used it on the magic knight Reversed Shadow, he had died in one move. Reversed Shadow was a high-defense magic knight while Marquis Zi Yi was only a warrior. If Reversed Shadow couldn't survive that attack, he would also not be able to survive it.

Seeing Marquis Zi Yi's panicked face, I took back my sword that was about to unleash [Death Blade]. I turned my body and said to Lin Yi Xin, "Yiyi, let's go and train. Let's not waste anymore time here."

Lin Yi Xin's mouth was opened wide, it was obvious that she was stunned by my skillful footwork. She gave me a glance, the expression in her eyes a little bit strange as she said, "Are you really Fallen Dust from ?"

I nodded, "Yeah, let's go!"

"Oh..."

Lin Yi Xin followed behind me and entered the forest obediently, leaving Marquis Zi Yi standing on the ground staring blankly. In the end, he sighed, "Chanel, what kind of enemy have you made?"

.....

Chapter 59 – Wind Slaying

"Aren't you quite the charmer~"

On the side of a peaceful river, Lin Yi Xin placed her hands on her back as she jokingly teased me.

The moonlight shone a silver light upon Lin Yi Xin's snow-white face. Her white cape fluttered in the wind, setting a contrast on her skin, highlighting her outstanding beauty even more.

I was intoxicated in her sight. To her comment, I replied, "Why do you say that?"

Lin Yi Xin pursed her lips and smiled, "Domineering Heaven Blade wanted to kill you, Descent of the Dragon wanted to kill you, Shadow Chanel wanted to kill you, even that Marquis Zi Yi whom you just met also wanted to kill you. Aren't all these enough to prove your charm?"

I calmly smiled, "Not really. In this world of martial arts, everyone is my enemy. Hahaha...."

Lin Yi Xin shot me a glance before covering her mouth and laughed, "Let's just go. We should quickly reach Spirit Valley and train ourselves to level 60. After going through job promotion to silver-ranked swordsman, we'll be able to get a life-saving skill. That will help you to live a few days more."

"Yeah."

.....

When we reached the Spirit Valley, it was already morning in-game. A ray of sunlight peeked through the horizons, scattering drops of gold onto the forest.

"There, it's right in front!"

Lin Yi Xin pointed in front. There was indeed a canyon over there, it was just that it was filled with darkness and deathly aura. No wonder, it was called a Spirit Valley after all. There would definitely be something evil in there.

I pinched my fingers together as I frowned.

"What's wrong?" Lin Yi Xin asked.

I replied, "There's a repulsion of Yin and Yang in this place. The Yin held great importance, while the Yang has been driven out. Hundreds of ghosts roam around this place, it is indeed a terrible place!"

Lin Yi Xin nervously looked around the surroundings, before looking in front at the end. She heaved a sigh of relief as she calmly replied, "So what, psychic, go and enter the valley. What can you do outside of the valley!"

We continued to walk forward. Indeed, a dilapidated camp appeared at the valley entrance. The camp was simple and crude, it was only a few pieces of bamboos put together to form a small shed. Two sentinels surrounded a bonfire that almost died out inside the shed. The shed was filled with smoke, and there was a leftover porcupine's meat on the table next to them.

Lin Yi Xin walked forward and stood right in front of the NPC soldier, smiling sweetly, "Mister, may I ask how we can be of any assistance?"

One of the soldiers stood up and measured Lin Yi Xin up and down. He also looked at me, but he didn't realize that I was an Undead. With my Cyan Fire Cloak covering my body, it wasn't weird that he could not recognize me.

The soldier then sighed and said, "Young adventurer, three to four months before you two came here, we have suffered a few dozens attacks here. Those evil undeads had killed all of our companions. It's really good that you guys came now. I know that the Silvermoon Alliance would never abandon their warriors even though they are far away!"

As he said that, the soldier continued, "Young swordsmen, please go forth to the Spirit Valley and kill 200 Zombies and 200 Chinese Vampires. When you come back to find me after you have finished this task, I will give you your rightful, generous reward!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Would you accept the quest [Cleaning Spirit Valley]? (Quest Level: D+)

Lin Yi Xin and I chose 'accept' harmoniously. With mission at hand, we set forth on our quest!

Carrying my sword, I walked in front as I summoned the Mysterious Wasp. When Lin Yi Xin saw the Mysterious Wasp's name, she couldn't help but to mumble in annoyance, "Lu Chen, change your Mysterious Wasp's name. You are not allowed to name it Wind Fantasy..."

"Why?" I replied with a smile.

Lin Yi Xin puffed up her chest and said, "Because I'm the only Wind Fantasy in the world..."

"....."

This reason was not a reason at all, but I still changed the Mysterious Wasp name in the end. I changed it to 'F-22'. This name was actually very eye-catching, it drew Lin Yi Xin's bell-like laugh.

As we enter into the canyon, a stinky smell wiffed up our noses.

"Wooo..."

Lin Yi Xin frowned, "What's that smell? Why is it so smelly?"

I said, "It's the smell of rotten corpses."

I was familiar with this kind of scent, I had smelled it when I first became an Undead Swordsman. However, after absorbing huge amount of Undead Flame, I had reached the Bone Spirit Realm, hence the rotting smell from my body had since disappeared. Otherwise, Lin Yi Xin wouldn't be so willing to travel with me.

In front of us, a low, deafening howl resounded as a shabbily-dressed figure in the valley walked towards us.

"It's humans~"

Lin Yi Xin was extremely happy. Unfortunately, in the next moment, her pretty face had turned into an expression of horror.

The figure that was walking towards us wasn't a human, it was a half-rotting corpse. It was one of the lowest levelled of undead monsters. Its face was full of holes, where worms crawled in and out. It was really an appalling scene to behold.

[Zombie]

Level: 42

I could see its level. It was 6 levels higher than me and 4 levels higher than Lin Yi Xin. It seemed to be comparatively easy to handle.

"Hey? Go and attack it..."

I shot Lin Yi Xin a glance to signal to her it's time for her to display her skill. She, who had the holy spirit power would definitely be better in killing undead monsters.

Lin Yi Xin pouted her lips as she lifted her sword and flew past, her sword flashing with a faint silver light. When she reach close to the monster, a milky white wind immediately surrounded her blade!

"Pa pa!"

"412 ! "

"427 ! "

Two normal attacks had actually caused such a strong damage?!

I kneaded my eyes, immediately opening the battle messages to find–

Battle Announcement: Player Wind Fantasy has executed [Wind Slaying Sword Skill]!

[Wind Slaying Sword Skill]?

I asked in surprise, "Yiyi, is [Wind Slaying] your skill?"

"Yeah."

Lin Yi Xin retreated 2 meters back and space out the distance between the monster and herself. She brandished her sword once again, controlling the rhythm of the battle perfectly.

She seemed to know what I was thinking off, smiling as she said, "When I was still a noob, I managed to kill a strong BOSS. It dropped the [Wind Slaying Sword Skill] skill book. This skill added extra damage to normal attacks, and can greatly increase the efficiency of killing monsters. Level 3 [Wind Slaying] can increase my damage by 15%."

I nodded, "No wonder your levelling speed is so fast."

"Stop spouting nonsense, come here and help me. This is a level 42 monster, if we fight it together, we can sustain zero damage!"

"Alright!"

I carried my sword and brought along Mysterious Wasp. With [Vindicate] and a normal attack, I shaved off 1000 hp from the monster. As the Mysterious Wasp pricked the monster with its needle twice and Lin Yi Xin's Flame Blade also helped to attack, we have indeed managed to kill a Level 42 Zombie with almost no damage at all. Although the experience was divided into two of us, we could still see a significant increase in our experience bar. This Level 42 monster's experience was actually quite significant.

"Hua la!"

Good start, the first Zombie we killed had actually dropped a lustrous,

shiny looking large magic stone. I picked it up, observed it and said, "91 Quality, how do we split this? Do you want to ROLL it?"

Lin Yi Xin didn't even look at it and said, "Why do we even need to ROLL? This piece of stone is yours, and the next one will be mine. If we continue this cycle, none of us will be at a disadvantage."

"Yeah, alright!"

Lin Yi Xin's arrangement was indeed good. If we ROLL it, one of us might have a very bad luck and lose out in getting the magic stones. That way, we wouldn't feel that it's fair.

We continued to walk forward. More Zombies started to appear the deeper we walked into the valley. At first, they come in groups of three or four. In the end, they come in a large group, making killing them extremely difficult.

.....

"Pa Cha!"

As her sharp sword cut through a Level 44 Zombie, Lin Yi Xin's face was a little red as her chest heaved up and down. She said, "I can't anymore. It's really difficult to kill them. A Level 44 Zombie caused too much damage to me, let's make our pets lure a few monsters to us. We can't continue tanking the damage like this."

"I've already said it before, but you just looked down upon my

Mysterious Wasp's defense..."

"Humph, do it quick!"

I ordered the Mysterious Wasp to fly forward and lure a monster. The monsters were extremely aggressive, 5 Level 44 Zombies had been lured in an instant. It was really difficult!

"Get them, quick!"

I carried my sword and flew forward. I first ordered the Mysterious Wasp to tank three of the Zombies, then killed one with my Weeping Fireblade. Lin Yi Xin also ordered Flame Blade to tank one. It was really a fierce battle, our health decreased rapidly. It had not been half a minute, but my Mysterious Wasp's health had already decreased by half. These Zombies' damage was really very high!

"Drink potions, don't be stingy!" Lin Yi Xin shouted when she saw my health bar.

I quickly downed a Level 3 Health Potion. Heck, I was using a 50 silvers a bottle at this kind of situation!

Unleashing [Vindicate] and [Death Blade], I killed two Zombies. In the end, Mysterious Wasp and I both killed the third one. We finally passed through the dangerous part. As for Lin Yi Xin, she was waving her sword, displaying her [Wind Slaying Sword Skill] sword dance. Her battle form was simply breathtaking.

In a blink of an eye, one hour had passed. There had already been countless of corpses who fell under my sword. We had collected a total of 11 large magic stones, it seemed like higher-levelled monsters were more generous than lower-levelled monsters. I had levelled up to level 37 while Lin Yi Xin had levelled up to level 39, still maintaining the 2 levels gap between us.

I sat under a tree to adjust my status for a while as I waited for Mysterious Wasp to recover its full health. At the same time, we were taking a short break.

"Here, take some potions..."

I turned around and discovered Lin Yi Xin beautifully standing beside me, a level 3 Health Potion in her hands.

"This, what does this mean?" I was a little apprehensive.

"Aren't you about to run out of food?" Lin Yi Xin said, "Take it, you don't have to pay me money. Since we are levelling in a party, we don't have to be so calculative with each other."

I was extremely touched as I received it. There was a total of 17 bottles, if it was sold at the current market price, it would fetch at least a few thousands RMB. I couldn't help but to look at Lin Yi Xin again, and discovered that this beautiful girl had actually had a good personality.

Patting my butt, I stood up and walked towards the corpse of one of the Zombies, absorbing its Undead Flame.

Lin Yi Xin frowned slightly and asked, "Eh? What have you been doing? What use would that have?"

I extended my arms and took off my wrist guard. A skin filled with flesh and blood had appeared. A few parts of my body had also grew out some skin. Seemed like I was close to the Bone Spirit Leader's Realm now. God knows how much Undead Flame I had to absorb to evolve to this state.

"Eh? You have grown some skin?" Lin Yi Xin opened her mouths wide, extremely surprised.

I nodded and laughed, "Yeah. When I have absorbed enough Undead Flames, I would be able to transform into Asura, then I could recover my identity as a human. How's that? Don't you want to see my handsome human appearance?"

Lin Yi Xin shot me a glance, her beautiful eyes filled with ridicule as she chuckled, "Even if you recover your human appearance, what has the word handsome got to do with you?"

"....."

My god, this girl's words were really painful!

.....

At this moment, Lin Yi Xin suddenly received a message. Her beautiful face were immediately shrouded with ice.

"What's wrong?"

"I... need to log off for a while."

Lin Yi Xin set up a tent before turning around and said to me, "Could you wait for me for around ten minutes?"

"Sure, what's up? Why are you in such a rush?"

"Don't ask..."

"Okay, come back quick!"

"Alright~"

Lin Yi Xin logged out, only leaving a simple tent behind. I sat down beside the tent and waited for her to log back in. It would be too difficult for me to solo a group of Level 44 monsters. I would probably die in a moment of carelessness. At this time, I really need Lin Yi Xin, the strong lady swordsman by my side.

Chapter 60 – Demon Trapping Stone

After waiting for a long while, finally, a 'di' sound resounded —

System Announcement: Your friend Wind Fantasy has logged online!

The tent beside me shook as Lin Yi Xin came out from within, anger all written all over her face.

"Hey, what's wrong?" I asked.

When Lin Yi Xin looked at me, it seemed as if her mood became better immediately. She smiled, "Lu Chen, how about we skip dinner and play until 9? Afterwards I can treat you to supper. Deal?"

"Huh?"

I squinted at her, "Is this a trap?"

"How could that be?" Lin Yi Xin smiled even wider, "I'm just treating you like a normal person. Don't you treat your friends sometimes?"

"I do..." I chuckled, "I often treated Du Shi San to meals last time, but nowadays I treat him to meals every single day, as if I am his parents providing for him..."

"What, don't you feel disgusted? I didn't know that you have such

preferences!" Lin Yi Xin shot me a glance.

I spread my hands and said, "Let's go and continue to level!"

"Yeah."

.....

Entering deep into the Spirit Valley, the number of zombies gradually decreased. However, another terrifying undead has replaced those zombies — Chinese Vampires! Of course, the Chinese Vampires in the Spirit Valley were not the kind that wore Qing Dynasty's official clothings and jumped all around. Rather, it was an Undead who wore ragged clothes and walked stiffly. They did not evolve into skeleton, all of their flesh were still intact. However, their flesh were all rotten, their bodies looked exactly like cotton wadding. They were wailing miserably.

[Chinese Vampire]

Level:45

Just as I thought, its level was extremely high!

"Shua!"

Lin Yi Xin had already turned into a silver flash and charged forward, her beautiful eyes revealing a silver colour. It was [Moon Iris]!

"Pa!"

Her dagger accurately stabbed into the Chinese Vampire's throat. Lin Yi Xin forcefully slashed her dagger and dragged it across the Chinese Vampire's throat, causing another fatal injury. Then, she changed into her long sword as her [Wind Slaying Sword Skill] whizzed. Looking at these rain of attacks, this level 45 Chinese Vampire would probably be able to attack twice before it fell to its death.

"Pa da!"

A large magic stone dropped. Lin Yi Xin picked it up and asked, "Why didn't you fight?"

I said, "Do you have grudges against Chinese Vampires? How could you play with its life so brutally?"

"Humph, I'm in a bad mood!"

"Oh..."

We continued to advance. The highest level for the Chinese Vampire was 46, so we could still handle it as Lin Yi Xin and I both had expert capabilities. As one can well imagine, the efficiency of training our pets here were also very high. With two people in the party, the experience from the monster become 140% higher than normal, hence it was actually faster than training alone.

Five hours later, I have levelled up to level 38 while Lin Yi Xin to Level 40. We had also completed the number of monster that we were

supposed to kill.

As I was about to absorb a Chinese Vampire's Undead Flame, Lin Yi Xin suddenly patted my shoulders, "Let's go and submit our guests!"

"Okay!"

The two of us walked side by side across the valley. The Mysterious Wasp fluttered about near my shoulders while the Flame Blade followed Lin Yi Xin behind her battle gown. The Flame Blade had already risen to Level 34, hence both of its attack and defense were extremely high. Its health was also beyond reasonable. As one could have expected of Lin Yi Xin's pet.

On the other hand, my Mysterious Wasp had also risen to level 36, its attributes had increased to the point that it was completely out of the world—

Level: 36

Attack: 405

Defense: 282

Health: 1204

Agility: 585

It could be said that the Mysterious Wasp's current defense had gone beyond mine. This fact made me suspect that Lin Yi Xin was actually fancying the Mysterious Wasp instead of me. When I asked her, her answer really hurt my heart. She had indeed chosen me because of the Mysterious Wasp alone.

When we reached the entrance of the valley and initiated conversation with the NPC, they immediately treated us with respect. He gravely and sternly said, "You have proved your capabilities. Young yet courageous adventurers, please accept our little rewards!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have completed the quest [Cleaning Spirit Valley]. You received 8500 experience and 150 fame. Your reward is: Dream Magic Stone x1!

.....

My experience bar increased, but I didn't level up. I was already level 38, hence my levelling speed wasn't as quick as before. It had already become slow.

Opening my inventory, a Dream Magic Stone that was glowing in soft light appeared. It was really the legendary Dream Magic Stone with a quality of 100. I immediately took out the Dream Magic Stone and chuckled, "This is 1 gold, ya know!"

Lin Yi Xin replied with a "huhuhu" cry, "I didn't get anything..."

"You are really unlucky..."

"Come on! Your luck is also not that good."

As we were talking, the NPC Guard suddenly said again with a grave expression, "Our dear respected, strong, young adventure from far away land, I have to tell you one extremely frightening thing. The depths of the Spirit Valley had already been infested with terrifying Undeads. They continued to attack us relentlessly, they must have wanted to charge out of the Spirit Valley to attack the human villages down the mountain. For those innocent civilians, I plead you to accept our request."

Lin Yi Xin nodded, "Just say it~"

The guard replied, "Please enter the Spirit Valley immediately and kill 500 Blood Skeletons and 500 Green Skeletons. However, do exercise caution in this quest. These two strong Undeads would definitely not let living humans go easily. They are completely ruthless and brutal, you must be carefull!"

"Ding~!"

System Announcement: Would you like to accept the quest [Blood in the Air]? (Quest Level: C-)

Lin Yi Xin and I smiled towards each other. It was actually a C level quest! Fantastic, such a high levelled quest would definitely give us ample rewards. We might get iron-tier, or even rune-tier equipment! The equipment market in the Floating Ice City was booming right now, an iron-tier equipment would probably fetch 100 gold. If we managed to sell a level 40 rune-tier equipment, we would probably get 500 gold at the very least. That would be equivalent to RMB 50,000!

We accepted at the same time, receiving the C level quest!

Lin Yi Xin nudged my arm with her sword hilt and smiled, "I have a premonition that we are about to get filthy rich. Really, I think we would at least get a rune-tier equipment. We might even get a silver-tier equipment!"

"Rune-tier equipment?" I shot her a glance, "Or silver-tier equipment? Yiyi, are you still dreaming? We are only level 40 something, if we dared to use a silver-tiered equipment and say our greetings in Floating Ice City, I guarantee a whole bunch of strong people would be waiting for you to go out of the city and drop the equipment! Humph, I think it would already be very good if we get an iron-tier equipment..."

Lin Yi Xin looked at me as the corners of her mouth curled up, "You really don't have any ambition do you?"

.....

The two of us returned back into the Spirit Valley, leaving a trail of Zombies and Chinese Vampires corpses behind us. I quickly left and avoided the new monsters that were spawned. Under the condition that we had a quest to complete, I did not want to waste our time to kill these mobs.

Lin Yi Xin also approved my idea, following by my side without saying anything.

Before long, we had reached the depth of the Spirit Valley. Darkness

engulfed all around us, there were also blood smeared all over the ground. They produced squishing sounds when our boots stepped on the ground, as if they were made of flesh. This made us feel really uncomfortable. Of course, Lin Yi Xin was the one who was feeling more uncomfortable. I was more or less accustomed to the eerie atmosphere of the Undead.

"Wait a minute, Yiyi..." I suddenly stood still.

"Hmm?"

"There's a situation. A monster appeared!"

"Where?"

"At your right!"

Lin Yi Xin swept a glance and immediately cried out in alarm, "It could still disguise itself? Come out and show yourself!"

Slashing her sword angrily, the whole ground shook as a Skeleton whose whole body was covered in blood appeared. It didn't wear anything, only holding a bronze sword on its hands. Its two eyes glinted with bloodthirst as it let out a mournful wail and charged towards Lin Yi Xin.

[Blood Skeleton]

Level: 47

Tsk tsk, what a high level. It was a level 47 monster, 9 levels higher than me. If I were to fight it alone, it would have been extremely difficult to win.

I glared at the Blood Skeleton and said, "Yiyi, this skeleton is looking at you with perverted eyes, you know~"

Lin Yi Xin laughed dryly, "That's okay, he was looking at you first..."

"Heck! It even dared to look at me! Receive your death!"

I charged forward, unleashing [Vindicate]. The Mysterious Wasp and Flame Blade also charged forward. After a slash and a prick from them, the Blood Skeleton's health decreased very quickly. The Mysterious Wasp's damage was the highest, especially when its [Combo] attack had already reached Level 3. Sometimes it would attack three times consecutively, and that will inflict at least 1000 damage. Such a high damage really made Lin Yi Xin green with envy. She swore to buy a [Combo] skill book for her Flame Blade when we returned back to Floating Ice City.

As we killed our first Blood Skeleton, our experience bar increased greatly!

It couldn't be denied that this Blood Skeleton's health was indeed very high. A Level 47 monster could actually have more than 5000 health. It was simply too powerful. If we could catch it and make it a pet, with its health and defense, it would definitely make a good meat shield.

We continued forward, killing Blood Skeleton one by one. This kind of levelling was definitely pleasant. I liked two kinds of feelings the most, one is looking at my experience bar filling up quickly, and the second was to ogle at Lin Yi Xin's boobs as they wobble up and down when she was fighting. These feelings were definitely the best.

.....

Half an hour later.

Lin Yi Xin wiped the sweat on her forehead and said, "Lu Chen, how much gold do you have now?"

"51 gold, why?"

"I'll sell you something good for 10 gold, do you want it?"

Looking at her smiling face, I felt like I was about to fall into a trap. However, I still suppressed my emotions and asked, "What good thing?"

"Here!"

Lin Yi Xin opened her palm, revealing a purple crystal stone on her snow-white hands. The item's attributes quickly flew up to my view as gold-coloured letters appeared —

[Demon Sealing Stone]: Can be used to seal a level 1 monster, will disappear upon use.

I was unable to take my eyes off the item, "What, what is this?"

Lin Yi Xin laughed, "Stupid~~ Isn't the use of this item very obvious? This Demon Sealing Stone gave you one chance to seal a level 1 pet. It would be great if you could seal it, then you can sell the Demon Sealing Stone. That way, even though you are not a beastmaster, you could still earn your keep like a beastmaster!"

I immediately agreed without the slightest hesitation, "Sell me one, 10 gold!"

"OK!"

After completing our trade, "Yiyi, where did you find this precious item?"

"Oh, it's a Radiant Knight's special privilege. I can exchange 100 fame from my instructor every week for two Demon Sealing Stones. I am kind of short of money nowadays, otherwise I would definitely not sell it to you."

"Oh okay!"

.....

We continued to kill. After the Blood Skeleton, we met another new species of Undead. It was a rock skeleton whose body was covered in

green light. Green Skeleton!

The Green Skeleton and Blood Skeleton both occupied the depths of Spirit Valley. They were the guardians of this place. The Green Skeleton was Level 48, its defense was high beyond comprehension. However, its attack and agility was very normal.

Just as we were killing our way, Lin Yi Xin suddenly froze on the spot. Her beautiful eyes flashed with astonishment as she slowly raised her fingers and pointed at a nearby place, her mouth mumbling, "Lu Chen, look... That, what is that?"

I swept a glance and immediately froze on the spot too. It was a Green Skeleton that had just spawned. This in itself was not strange, but there was a line of words floating above its head —

[Green Skeleton]

Level: 1

Chapter 61 – Fruit of Pregnancy

"It's Level 1, Level 1!"

Lin Yi Xin couldn't help but be excited, her beautiful shoulders trembling as her eyes shone with delight and expectation.

I quickly took out a sealing card and smiled, "Yiyi, it's time for us to see whose luck is better! Let's compete and see who could seal this Green Skeleton first!"

"Okay!"

Lin Yi Xin held the Demon Sealing Stone in one hand and a Sealing Card on the other. Seems like she was quite prepared. Furthermore, since she had just sold me one Demon Sealing Stone, I had acquired the right to seal another pet.

Setting the Demon Sealing Stone as my pet's medium, I released my Sealing Card with a whoosh. The Sealing Card spun in the sky mysteriously, turning into a hexagon magic circle around the Green Skeleton's head.

Lin Yi Xin's Sealing Card had also flew out, overlapping against my own. It was indeed a luck battle!

The hexagonal magic circle spun quickly as that level 1 Green Skeleton's body turned smaller, bigger, smaller and bigger again. It was

obvious that it was about to be sealed but it struggled out of the sealing, repeating this cycle over and over.

Suddenly, my heart jumped. Did I succeed?

That Level 1 Green Skeleton had disappeared. Did I really succeed in one try?!

However, when I looked at my Demon Sealing Stone, it was actually empty!

I turned around and saw Lin Yi Xin's dainty mouth splitting open in surprise, looking at the Demon Sealing Stone in her hands, dumbstruck. Inside the transparent crystal stone, I could see the Green Skeleton that had turned much smaller, looking at its surrounding from within!

"Damn!"

I gritted my teeth. Forget about the amazing specs that heavens had given this girl, they had actually given her plenty of luck. What am I even living for now?

"Quick, let me see the Green Skeleton's status!" I urged.

Only then did Lin Yi Xin woke up from her delight. She nodded and waved her hands. Immediately, the pet within the Demon Sealing Stone appeared —

[Green Skeleton]

Level: 1

Attack: 7

Defense: 10

Health: 10

Agility: 9

Growth

Attack: ★★★

Defense: ★★★★★

Health: ★★★★☆

Agility: ★☆

.....

My God, it actually had 5 stars defense. No wonder it was so difficult to kill him. Its health growth was also 4.5 stars. Wasn't this Green Skeleton too durable?

"It has BN 36, it is a high quality pet!" Lin Yi Xin chuckled.

I nodded, "Then are you planning to train this Green Skeleton? But you'll have to release the Flame Blade first."

Lin Yi Xin's beautiful eyes flashed with wisdom and spirit as she smiled lightly, "THere's no need to. You see, this Green Skeleton's defense and health is indeed very strong. However, its attack is only 3 stars, which is not even comparable to Green Praying Mantis and Wildfire Greedy Wolf. Furthermore, its agility is 1.5 stars, that's really very low. We would have to thank the heavens and the earth if it could attack once in every 3 seconds. In the early stage of the game, those who uses this kind of pet must be either an idiot or have too much money in their hands."

Her analysis was extremely accurate. I nodded and smiled, "Then let's go back and try to sell it. Let's slaughter a rich customer!"

"Yep!"

Lin Yi Xin looked down at my empty Demon Sealing Stone and smiled, "Lu Chen, if our luck is high enough and we meet another level 1 monster, I will give it up and let you seal it alone."

"Okay, thanks!"

"Heehee, no problem~"

.....

We continued to kill monsters. The valley was filled with poisonous plants, and it became Lin Yi Xin's garden of eden. She had learnt to pick herbs, and currently, her [Herbs] skill had already reached level 4. This Spirit Valley contained a lot of precious herbs, which was all plucked clean and placed into her inventory.

"Lu Chen, protect me. I want to pick this Seven Stars Flower..."

"Oh."

"Lu Chen, come help me pick these Four Leaves Lotus..."

"Dammit, I can't!"

"What, why are you so useless..."

"Damn you..."

After a few minutes, Lin Yi Xin brought me to a place filled with lush greeneries and said, "There, this is the legendary Level 4 Herb, Ember Woods!"

"Ember Woods? What's is this thing?" I was kind of amazed.

Lin Yi Xin smiled and picked the herbs as she explained, "Ember Woods is recorded under the books of Magical Scriptures. In the south, there is Flaming Mountain, and one of the plants in this mountain is called the Ember Woods, whose fire will not be extinguished even with strong winds blowing at it. This is that plant. There wouldn't be any ashes once it was ignited in fire. Strange, isn't it?"

I nodded, "Burn one for me to see!"

"You have fire?" She smiled as she looked at me.

I glanced at her as she was picking those herbs. Her snowy peaks that were bound by her armour was an extremely beautiful sight to behold.

Yeah, he did have the fire of desire, but he didn't have real fire.

Seeing that I was staring at her, Lin Yi Xin blushed as she shouted annoyedly, "I'm hungry, get me something to eat!"

I stared blankly for a moment, "Food? I didn't buy any. There are some bread from the Floating Ice City that could replenish hunger. Didn't you bring any?"

"I never bring one with me before, I always got them from PK-ing other players..."

"What the heck!"

I looked at my own hunger. There was still 35 points, I would probably be given a warning at most three hours later. I have to quickly find something to eat. Lin Yi Xin was also in the same state as me.

Lin Yi Xin finished picking her herbs and looked at the forest in front of her. She smiled, "There are some fruits in the mountains. They say there is a fruit in the mountain that is sweeter and tastier than any other fruits around, perfect for quenching thirst..."

I added to her sentence, "And it is called fruit of pregnancy, one will get pregnant after eating it."

"Go and die!"

Lin Yi Xin punched me annoyed as she said, "Let's go, we'll kill the skeletons as we go towards the forest to find something to eat. It'll be so embarrassing if two of the top three players in the Player Ranking Board died out of hunger here..."

.....

We entered into the forest and dealt with a Level 47 Blood Skeleton. It dropped two items, 1 Large Magic Stone and a piece of card!

"Eh? A card..."

I was beyond delighted as I picked up the card. I shared the object description with Lin Yi Xin as we read it together...

[Blood Skeleton Card]: Increase the user's health by 15% and heal 15 points of the user's' health every second. Duration of effect: 30 minutes.

.....

Lin Yi Xin clucked her tongue and smiled, "What an amazing item! This can be used when beating BOSS or PK-ing others!"

I nodded and threw the Blood Skeleton Card into my inventory. It happened that I also had the [Undead Regeneration] skill, a healing skill for myself. With the addition of healing from this Blood Skeleton card, my vitality would increase to a whole new level!

We continued to move forward. Lin Yi Xin took out a dagger and carved at an old tree. She then offer the tree sap that dripped on her dagger to me, smiling, "Last time, I learnt that there are some people who drink tree saps in order to survive in the wild. Come, Lu Chen, I'll treat you to this..."

I felt sick in the stomach, "I don't have appetite, help yourself..."

Lin Yi Xin giggled and threw the tree sap away. She would definitely not eat all those stuff.

I raised my head to look around. The forest was filled with lush trees and there were sparrows chirping from the treetops. Hence, I said, "Why don't we kill some birds and barbecue it?"

Lin Yi Xin glanced at me, "What are you going to kill it with? You have firearms or arrows?"

I shook my head, "Nope."

"Humph, then we can't do it..."

"But we can create arrows!"

I waved my sword and cut a section of the tree, making a Y-shaped frame and laughed, "We only need a rubber band to make a super accurate slingshot!"

"Rubber?" Lin Yi Xin was a little at a loss, "Where the heck can we find rubber here?"

I look straight at her shoulders and chest area. My meaning was very clear. There is rubber in a girl's bra strap, it can be used if she cut it out.

How could the clever Lin Yi Xin not understand my meaning? She immediately stomped her foot in anger, "Don't even think about it. I'm not wearing it!"

"You are really not wearing it?"

Lin Yi Xin blushed a little, "Just die. If you dared to ask me again I'll definitely destroy you."

Right at this time, there was suddenly a rustling sound from the forest. The next moment, a bloodthirsty porcupine rushed out suddenly. This was a level 45 beast, its body was filled with thorns all over. Its flesh was also very hard. It seemed like only this kind of beast could survive in this undead-infested Spirit Valley.

"Dinner is here..."

I quickly rushed over and pulled my sword. [Vindicate] and [Death Blade] fell onto the Bloodthirsty Porcupine's head. my mysterious wasp had also flew over to help. "Whoosh whoosh whoosh", it attacked three times. My three times combo attack was indeed powerful!

"Aoo..."

The Bloodthirsty Porcupine fell onto the ground. I spread my palm and chanted, [Undead Pillage]!"

"Whoosh!"

A porcupine leather filled with needles appeared in my hands. What was left on our the porcupine was lean meat all over. It was much more healthier than pork meat which had been acquired from pigs that were kept indoors.

I started to get busy as I cut a branch and skewer the porcupine meat on. Then, i gathered some branches and prepared to make fire.

Make fire, fire...

I suddenly froze. Dammit, there's no fire. How are we going to cook it!

At this moment, Lin Yi Xin suddenly said, "Move away, see how good i am!"

As she said that, she moved forward and spread her palms open. A hot flame suddenly appeared as she chanted, "[Fireball]!"

"whoosh!"

The branches caught fire. I was very curious, "Yiyi, how do learn [Fireball]?"

"You are really dumb..." Lin Yi Xin shot me a glance and smiled, "There is a place to learn normal [Fireball] in Floating Ice City. It is a public skill and not strictly limited to mages only. Priests, warrior and players with other jobs all can learn it, but you can only train to up to level 2."

"Oh, I see. I should learn it when I get back..."

"Hmm!"

As I started to roast the meat, although there was no salt, green onion or cumin, the delicious wild porcupine's smell filled the air a short moment later.

I used my Weeping Fireblade to stir the burning woods as Lin Yi Xin sat beside me. She smiled faintly as she watched the crackling fire, her beautiful eyes filled with hope.

Finally, the meat was cooked. Lin Yi Xin cut a piece of meat with her dagger, tasted it and laughed, "It's burnt..."

"Yeah, it'll be more crispy when it's burnt. Eat more!"

"....."

I tore a big piece of meat, threw it into my mouth and chewed it furiously. Of course, I am more of a reserved person, so I covered my mouth with my hands as I chewed, just like Lin Dai Yu. However, it was not because I was bashful, it was because my appearance as an Undead Commander was really inappropriate. Who would be able to imagine a skeleton eating a piece of meat? I didn't want to scare Lin Yi Xin away. It was difficult to find such a strong and beautiful partner. If I scared her away, it would be difficult to keep up with my current levelling speed.

My hunger slowly filled up. I stood up and said, "Yiyi, don't you think we are super cool? We ate a whole hog to ourselves!"

"..."

Lin Yi Xin looked at me in silence, "Let's continue to train. We should return and complete our quest after killing a few more Blood Skeletons."

"Yeah."

We entered the training grounds once again. A Blood Skeleton welcomed us immediately, howling at us.

"Ah!"

"Ah!"

Immediately, Lin Yi Xin and I were petrified. Is today our lucky day?

That little skeleton walked past us, the line of words shown on its head

[Blood Skeleton]

Level: 1

